

B. lib. N. J. Eng. 1661. 1

THE NEW
TESTAMENT
OF OUR
LORD and SAVIOUR
JESUS CHRIST,

Newly translated out of the original
Greek, and with the former Transla-
tions diligently compared and
revised.



C A M B R I D G E,
Printed by JOHN FIELD, Printer
to the University. 1661.



The Gospel according to S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Joseph. 18 He was conceived by the holy Ghost, and born of the virgin Mary, when she was espoused to Joseph. 19 The angel satisfieth the misdeeming thoughts of Joseph, and interpreteth the names of Christ.



He book of the ^a generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

² Abraham begat Isaac, and ^c I-

saac begat Jacob, and ^d Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

³ And ^e Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and ^f Phares begat Elrom, and Elrom begat Aram.

⁴ And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

⁵ And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

⁶ And ^g Jesse begat David the king, and ^h David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias.

⁷ And ⁱ Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

⁸ And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

⁹ And Ozias begat Joathan, and Joathan begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

¹⁰ And ^k Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

¹¹ And ^l Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

¹² And after they were brought to Babylon, ^m Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

¹³ And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

¹⁴ And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

¹⁵ And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

¹⁶ And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

¹⁷ So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations: and from David untill the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

¹⁸ ¶ Now the ⁿ birth of Jesus ^m Luke Christ was on this wise: When as ^{1. 27.} his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

¹⁹ Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

²⁰ But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

²¹ ⁿ And she shall bring forth a ⁿ Luke son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins.

²² (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

²³ ^o Behold, a virgin shall be ^o Isa. 7. with childe, and shall bring forth a ^{14.} son, and ^l they shall call his name ^l Or, Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us) ^{his name shall be called.}

²⁴ Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

²⁵ And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name Jesus,

CHAP. II.

1 The wise-men out of the east, are directed to Christ by a star. 11 They worship him, and offer their presents. 14 Joseph fleeth into Egypt, with Jesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children: 20 Himself dyeth. 23 Christ is brought back again into Galilee to Nazareth.

^a Luke
2.6,7.

NOW when ^a Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise-men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet;

^b Mich.
5.2.
John
7.42.
|| Or,
seed.

6 ^b And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour that shall || rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise-men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently for the young childe, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young childe was.

10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell down and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they || presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

|| Or,
offered.

12 And being warned of God in

a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there untill I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young childe to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young childe & his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there untill the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, ^c Out of Egypt have I called my son. ^c Hof. 11.1.

16 ¶ Then Herod when he saw that he was mocked of the wise-men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise-men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by ^d Jeremy the prophet, saying, ^d Jer. 31.15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childe's life.

21 And he arose, & took the young childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the pro-

prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 John preacheth : his office, life, and baptisme. 7 He reprehendeth the Pharisees, 13 and baptizeth Christ in Jordan.

IN those days came ^a John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

² And saying, Repent ye : for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.

³ For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying,

^b The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

⁴ And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loyns; and his meat was locusts and wilde honey.

⁵ Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

⁶ And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

⁷ ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said unto them, ^c O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

⁸ Bring forth therefore fruits ^{||} meet for repentance.

⁹ And think not to say within your selves, ^d We have Abraham to our father : for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

¹⁰ And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees : ^e therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

¹¹ ¶ I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear : he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and ^f with fire.

¹² Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner : but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

¹³ ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

¹⁴ But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

¹⁵ And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now : for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

¹⁶ And Jesus when he was baptized, went up straight way out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

¹⁷ And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IV.

1 Christ fasteth, and is tempted. 11 The angels minister unto him. 13 He dwelleth in Capernaum, 17 beginneth to preach, 18 calleth Peter and Andrew, 21 James and John, 23 and healeth all the diseased.

THEN was ^a Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil.

² And when he had fasted fourty days and fourty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

³ And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

⁴ But he answered and said, It is written, ^b Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

⁵ Then the devil taketh him up into the holy citie, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

⁶ And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down: for it is written, ^c He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, least at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

⁷ Jesus said unto him, It is written again, ^d Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

⁸ Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them:

⁹ And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

¹⁰ Then

3

^a Mark 1.12. Luke 4.1.

^b Deut. 8.3.

^c Psal. 91.11.

^d Deut. 6.16.

Mark 4. Luke 2.2.

^a Isa. 40. 3. Mark 1.3.

^c Chap. 12.34.

^d Or, answerable to amendment of life.

^e John 8.39. ^f Chap. 7.19.

^a Mark 1.8. Luke 3.16.

^b John 1.26.

^c Mark 1.9. Luke 3.21.

4 10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, ^e Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.

^e Deut. 6.13. and 10. 20. 11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

^f Mark 1.14. Luke 4. 14. 12 ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

John 4.43. 13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim:

¶ Or, delivered up. 14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

^g Isa. 9.1. 15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sat in darkness, saw great light: and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

^h Mark 1.14. 17 ¶ From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

ⁱ Mark 1.16. 18 ¶ And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)

19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, & healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with de-

vils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie: and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ beginneth his sermon in the mount: 3 declaring who are blessed, 13 who are the salt of the earth, 14 the light of the world, the city on an hill: 15 the candle: 17 that he came to fulfill the law. 21 what it is to kill, 27 to commit adultery, 33 to swear: 38 exhorteth to suffer wrong, 44 to love even our enemies, 48 and to labour after perfectness.

And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. ^a Luke 6.20.

4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. ^b Psal. 37.11.

6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. ^c Isa.

7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. ^d 65.13.

8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. ^d Psal. 24.4.

9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. ^e 1 Pet. 3.14.

11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely for my sake. ^f 1 Pet. 4.14.

12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be troden under foot of men. ^g Mark 9.50. Luke 14.34.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.

Mark 21. Luke 8. 6. and 1.33. The word in the original signifieth a measure containing about a pint less than a peck. 1 Pet. 2.12. Luke 16.17. James 2.10.

15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorifie your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

19 ¶ Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

¶ Or, to them. Exod. 20.13. Deut. 5. 17.

21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: & whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgement.

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire.

23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, & there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

¶ Luke 12.58.

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 ¶ Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till

thou hast paid the uttermost farthing. 5

27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery. Exod. 20.14.

28 But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

29 ¶ And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. Chap. 18.8. Mark 9.47. Or, do cause

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. offend.

31 It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement. Deut. 24.1.

32 But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery. Luke 16.18. 1 Cor. 7.10.

33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but thou shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths. Exod. 20.7. Levit. 19.12.

34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne: 11.

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

37 ¶ But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of evil. James 5.12.

38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. Exod. 21.24. Levit. 24.20.

39 But I say unto you, resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. Deut. 19.21. Luke 6.29.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also. Rom. 12.17.

41 And whosoever shall compell thee to go a mile, go with him twain. 1 Cor. 6.7.

42 Give

6 42 Give to him that asketh thee,
 7 Deut. and from him that would borrow
 15.8. of thee, turn not thou away.

2 Levit. 43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath
 19.18. been said, 2 Thou shalt love thy
 neighbour, and hate thine enemy:

3 Luke 44 But I say unto you, 3 Love
 6.27. your enemies, bless them that curse
 you, do good to them that hate you,
 and pray 4 for them which despite-
 fully use you, and persecute you:

4 Luke 45 That ye may be the children
 23.34. of your Father which is in heaven,
 Ads 7. for he maketh his sun to rise on the
 60. evil and on the good, and sendeth
 rain on the just and on the unjust.

5 Luke 46 5 For if ye love them which
 6.32. love you, what reward have ye? do
 not even the publicanes the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren
 onely, what do you more *then others*?
 do not even the publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even
 as your Father which is in heaven is
 perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Christ continueth his sermon in the
 mount, speaking of alms, 5 prayer,
 14 forgiving our brethren, 16 fast-
 ing, 19 where our treasure is to be
 laid up, 24 of serving God and
 mammon: 25 exhorteth, not to be
 carefull for worldly things; 33 but
 to seek Gods kingdom.*

TAKE heed that ye do not your
 alms before men, to be seen of
 them: otherwise ye have no reward
 of your Father which is in heaven.

2 Therefore, 3 when thou doest
 thine alms, 4 do not sound a trumpet
 before thee, as the hypocrites do, in
 the synagogues, and in the streets,
 that they may have glory of men.
 Verily, I say unto you, they have
 their reward.

3 But when thou doest alms, let
 not thy left hand know what thy
 right hand doeth:

4 That thine alms may be in se-
 cret: and thy Father which seeth in
 secret, himself shall reward thee
 openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou
 shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for
 they love to pray standing in the
 synagogues, and in the corners of
 the streets, that they may be seen
 of men. Verily, I say unto you,

they have their reward.

6 But thou, when thou prayest,
 enter into thy closet, and when thou
 hast shut thy door, pray to thy Fa-
 ther which is in secret, and thy Fa-
 ther which seeth in secret, shall re-
 ward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain
 repetitions, as the heathen do: for 6 Ecclus
 they think that they shall be heard 7.14.
 for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto
 them: for your Father knoweth what
 things ye have need of, before ye ask
 him.

9 After this manner therefore pray
 ye: 6 Our Father which art in hea- 6 Luke
 ven, Hallowed be thy name. 11.2.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will
 be done in earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily
 bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as
 we forgive our debtors.

13 And lead us not into tempta-
 tion, but deliver us from evil: For
 thine is the kingdom, and the pow-
 er, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 4 For, if ye forgive men their 4 Mark
 trespasses, your heavenly Father will 11.25.
 also forgive you.

15 But if ye forgive not men their
 trespasses, neither will your Father
 forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be
 not as the hypocrites, of a sad coun-
 tenance: for they disfigure their fa-
 ces, that they may appear unto men
 to fast. Verily, I say unto you, they
 have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest,
 anoint thine head, and wash thy
 face:

18 That thou appear not unto
 men to fast, but unto thy Father
 which is in secret: and thy Father
 which seeth in secret, shall reward
 thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for your selves
 treasures upon earth, where moth
 and rust doth corrupt, and where
 thieves break through and steal.

20 6 But lay up for your selves 6 Luke
 treasures in heaven, where neither 12.33.
 moth nor rust doth corrupt, and 1 Tim.
 where thieves do not break through 6.19.
 nor steal.

21 For where your treasure is,
 there

¶ Or,
 with.
 Rom.
 12.8.
 ¶ Or,
 cause
 not a
 trumpet
 to be
 sounded.

there will your heart be also.

¹ Luke 11. 34. ²² The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

²³ But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

⁸ Luke 16. 13. ²⁴ ¶ No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

¹⁰ Psal. 55. 22. ²⁵ Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body what ye shall put on: Is not the life more than meat, and the body then raiment?

¹ Pet. 5. 7. ²⁶ Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

²⁷ Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

²⁸ And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin.

²⁹ And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

³⁰ Wherefore if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

³¹ Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

³² (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

³³ But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.

³⁴ Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself: sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

¹ Christ ending his sermon in the mount, reproveth rash judgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs, 7 exhorteth to prayer, 13 to enter in at the strait gate, 15 to beware of false prophets, 21 not to be hearers, but doers of the word: 24 like houses builded on a rock, 26 and not on the sand.

^a Judge not, that ye be not judged. ¹ Luke 6. 37. ² For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged: ^b and Rom. with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. ^b Mark

³ ^c And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? ^c Luke

⁴ Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye? ⁶ Luke 6. 41.

⁵ Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

⁶ ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

⁷ ¶ Ask, & it shall be given you: ^d Chap. seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shall be opened unto you. ^{21. 22.} Mark

⁸ For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. ^{11. 24.} Luke ^{11. 9.} John

⁹ Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? ^{16. 24.} James ^{1. 6.}

¹⁰ Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

¹¹ If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

¹² Therefore all things what-soever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. ^c Luke 6. 31.

¹³ ¶ Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: ^f Luke 13. 24.

CHAP. VIII.

8
|| Or,
how.

14 || Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that finde it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

8 Luke 6. 43. 16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: 8 Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

8 Chap. 3. 10. 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

8 Rom. 2. 13. James 1. 22. 21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heaven: but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderfull works?

8 Luke 13. 27. 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me ye that work iniquitie.

8 Psal. 6. 8. 8 Luke 6. 47. 24 ¶ Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock:

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

8 Mark 1. 22. 28 And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine.

8 Luke 4. 32. 29 For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

2 Christ cleanseth the leper, 5 healeth the centurions servant, 14 Peters mother in law, 16 and many other diseased, 18 sheweth how he is to be followed: 23 stilleth the tempest on the sea, 28 driveth the devils out of two men possessed, 31 and suffereth them to go into the swine.

When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, there came a Mark leper and worshipped him, saying, 1. 40. Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 12.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 8 Lev. 14. 4.

5 ¶ And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, 7. 1.

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word onely, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having souldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdome of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleevd, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self-same hour.

^d Mark
1. 29.
Luke
4. 38.

14 ¶ ^d And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives mother laid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministred unto them.

^e Mark
1. 32.
Luke
4. 40.

16 ¶ ^e When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* word, and healed all that were sick:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, ^f Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses.

^f Isa.
53. 4.
1 Pet. 2.
24.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

^g Luke
9. 57.

19 ^g And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

^h Mark
4. 37.
Luke 8.
23.

24 ^h And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearfull, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

ⁱ Mark
5. 1.
Luke 8.
26.

28 ¶ ⁱ And when he was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two

possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine, feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 *Christ curing one sick of the palsie, 9 calleth Matthew from the receipt of custome, 10 eateth with publicanes and sinners, 14 defendeth his disciples for not fasting, 20 cureth the bloody issue, 23 raiseth from death Fairus daughter, 27 giveth sight to two blinde men, 32 healeth a dumb man possessed of a devil, 36 and hath compassion of the multitude.*

And he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own citie.

2 ^a And behold, they brought to ^a Mark him a man sick of the palsie, lying 2. 3. on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, Luke 5. said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, 18. be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the

10 Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palse) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custome: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicanes and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicanes and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came

a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behinde him, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And ¶ the same hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercie on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? they said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, He casteth out the devils through the prince of the devils.

35 And

¶ Or, this same

¶ Chap. 12. 24. Mark 3. 22.

¶ Luke 11. 15.

Mark 2. 14. Luke 5. 27.

Hof. 6. Chap. 2. 7. 1 Tim. 15. Mark 18. Luke 5. 3.

Or, law, r, unprought cloth.

Mark 22. Luke 8.

¹ Mark
6. 6.
Luke
13. 22.

35 ¹ And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdome, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

^{*} Mark
6. 34.
|| Or,
were tired and
lay down.

36 ¶ ^{*} But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they || fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

¹ Num.
27. 17.
^m Luke
10. 2.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, ^m The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

CHAP. X.

¹ Christ sendeth out his twelve apostles, enabling them with power to do miracles, 5 giveth them their charge, teacheth them, 16 comforteth them against persecutions, 40 and promiseth a blessing to those that receive them.

¹ Mark
3. 14.
Luke
9. 1.
|| Or,
over.

And ¹ when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power || against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother,

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the publicane, James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus,

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

¹ Acts
13. 46.

6 ^b But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

¹ Luke
10. 9.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, ^c The kingdome of heaven is at hand.

^d Mark
6. 8.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

Luke
9. 3. and

9 ^d || Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse in your purses:

22. 35.
|| Or, get.

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor

yet staves: (^c for the workman is ¹¹ worthy of his meat) ^c Luke

11 ¹ And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence. ¹ Tim. 5. 18. ^f Luke

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it. ¹⁰ 8.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 ² And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: ² Mark 6. 11. when ye depart out of that house, or city, ^b shake off the dust of your feet. ^b Acts

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha, in the day of judgement, then for that city. ¹³ 51.

16 ¶ ¹ Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and || harmless as doves. ¹ Luke 10. 3. ^{||} Or,

17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues. ¹ Luke

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 ² But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. ² Mark 13. 11. ¹ Luke 12. 11.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 ¹ And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. ¹ Luke 21. 16.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: ^m but he that ^m endureth to the end, shall be saved. ^m Mark 13. 13.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, ye shall not || have gone over the cities of Israel till the Son of man be come. ^{||} Or, ^{end} ^{or, fin. sb}

24 ⁿ The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. ⁿ Luke 6. 40. ^{John}

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant

13 want as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

° Mark 4. 22. Luke 8. 17. and 12. 2. 26 Fear them not therefore: ° for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the house-tops.

° Luke 12. 4. 28 ° And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

|| It is in value half-penny farthing, in the original, as being the twentieth part of the Roman penny. ° 2 Sam. 14. 11. Acts 27. 34. ° Luke 12. 8. ° Mark 8. 38. Luke 9. 26. 2° Tim. 2. 12. ° Luke 12. 51. ° Micah 7. 6. ° Luke 14. 26. ° Chap. 16. 24. Luke 9. 23. Mark 8. 34. ° John 12. 25. ° Luke 10. 16. John 13. 20.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a || farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 ° But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

32 ° Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 ° But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 ° Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance ° against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his own household.

37 ° He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 ° And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 ° He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

40 ° He that receiveth you, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall re-

ceive a prophets reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 ° And whosoever shall give to ° Mark 9. 41. cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 John sendeth his disciples to Christ.

7 Christs testimony concerning John.

18 The opinion of the people, both concerning John & Christ.

20 Christ upbraideth the unthankfulness and unrepentance of Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum: 25 and praising his Fathers wisdom in revealing the gospel to the simple, 28 he calleth to him all such as feel the burden of their sins.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 ° Now when John had heard in ° Luke 7. 18. the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

5 ° The blinde receive their sight, ° Isa. 35. 6. and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and ° the poor have the gospel preached to them. ° Isa. 61. 1.

6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, ° Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. ° Mal. 3. 1.

11 Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdome of heaven, is greater then he.

^e Luke 16. 16.
|| Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men.

12 ^e And from the days of John the Baptist, untill now, the kingdome of heaven || suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets, and the law prophesied untill John.

14 And if ye will receive it, this is ^f Elias which was for to come.

^f Mal. 4. 5.
^g Luke 7. 31.

15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

16 ^g But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners: but wisdom is justified of her children.

^h Luke 10. 13.

20 ^h Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sack-cloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And Thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained untill this day.

24 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgement, then for thee.

25 ⁱ At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, ¹ Luke Lord of heaven and earth, because 10. 21. thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 ^k All things are delivered unto ^k John to me of my Father: and no man 3. 35. knoweth the Son but the Father: ^l neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whom- 6. 46. soever the Son will reveal him.

28 ^m Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: ⁿ and ye shall finde rest. ^m Jer. 6. 16.

30 ⁿ For my yoke is easie, and my ⁿ 1 John burden is light. 5. 3.

CHAP. XII.

¹ Christ reproveth the blindness of the Pharisees concerning the breach of the sabbath, 3 by scriptures, 9 by reason, 13 and by a miracle. 22 He healeth the man possessed that was blinde & dumb. 31 Blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall never be forgiven. 36 Account shall be made of idle words. 38 He rebuketh the unfaithfull who seek after a signe, 49 and sheweth who is his brother, sister, and mother.

AT that time ¹ Jesus went on the ² Deut. sabbath-day through the corn, 23. 25. and his disciples were an hungred, Mark and began to pluck the ears of corn, 2. 23. and to eat. Luke

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, 6. 1. they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do upon the sabbath-day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read ^b what David did when he ^b 1 Sam. was an hungred, and they that were 21. 6. with him,

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, ^c Exod. which was not lawfull for him to eat, 29. 32, neither for them which were with 33. him, ^c but onely for the priests? Levit. 8

5 Or have ye not read in the ^d law, 31. and how that on the sabbath-days the 24. 9. priests in the temple profane the ^d Num. sabbath, and are blameless? 28. 9.

14

6 But I say unto you, that in this place is *one* greater then the temple.

* Hof.
6. 6.
Chap.
9. 13.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercie and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

* Mark.
3. 1.
Luke
6. 6.

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue.

10 And behold, there was a man which had *his* hand withered: and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath-days? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheep? wherefore it is lawfull to do well on the sabbath-days.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

|| Or,
100k
counsel.

14 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a counsel against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

* Isa.
42. 1.

18 Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor crie, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

Luke
11. 14.

22 Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blinde and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumb both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?

24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdome divided against it self, is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against it self, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the spirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come unto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first binde the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemie against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

* Mark
3. 28.
Luke
12. 10.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

* Luke
6. 45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they

they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Chap. 6.1. Luke 1.29. Cor. 1.22. 38 ¶ Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

39 But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.

Jonah 1.17. 40 ¶ For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

Jonah 3.5. 41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

1 Kings 10.1. 42 ¶ The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

Luke 11.24. 43 ¶ When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

Hebr. 6.4. and 10.26. 2 Pet. 2.20. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

Mark 3.31. Luke 8.20. 46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said

unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

3 The parable of the sower & the seed: 18 the exposition of it. 24 The parable of the tares, 31 of the mustard-seed, 33 of the leaven, 44 of the hidden treasure, 45 of the pearl, 47 of the draw-net cast into the sea: 53 and how Christ is condemned of his own country-men.

THE same day went Jesus out of the house, & sat by the sea-side. Mark 4.1.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow. Luke 8.5.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the ways side, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched, and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thorns sprung up & choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred-fold, some sixty-fold, some thirty-fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 ¶ For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath. Chap. 25.29.

13 There-

16

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the ⁴ Isa. 6. 9. prophesie of Esaias, which saith, ⁴ By Mark 4. hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive.

8. 10.

John 12.

40.

Acts 28.

26.

Rom.

11. 8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear.

* Luke

10. 24.

17 For verily I say unto you, ^{*} that many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, & have not seen *them*: and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart: this is he which received seed by the way-side.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that received seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred-fold, some sixtie, some thirtie.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The king-

dome of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the holder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together untill the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, ^{*} The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field. ^{Mark 4. 30. Luke 13. 19.}

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ ^{*} Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three [†] measures of [†] The meal, till the whole was leavened. ^{word in the Gr.}

34 ^h All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and is, a without a parable spake he not unto them: ^{measure contain-}

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, ^{a peck & a half,} I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of ^{little more then} the world. ^{a pint.}

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and ^h Mar. his disciples came unto him, saying, ^{4. 33.} Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. ^{1 Psal. 78. 2.}

37 He answered and said unto them,

them, 'He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man :

38 The field is the world : the good seed are the children of the kingdome : but the tares are the children of the wicked one :

Joel. 3. 13. Rev. 14. 13. 39 The enemy that sowed them, is the devil : the harvest is the end of the world : and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire ; so shall it be in the end of this world.

Or, 41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend, and them which do iniquity ;

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire : there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Dan. 12. 3. 43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdome of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field : the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a merchant-man, seeking goodly pearls :

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kinde.

48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world : the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just ;

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire : there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things ? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdome of heaven, is like

17 unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 And when he was come into Mark his own countrey, he taught them in 6. 1. their synagogue, insomuch that they Luke 4. were astonished, and said, Whence 16. hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works ?

55 Is not this the carpenters son ? John is not his mother called Mary ? and 6. 42. his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas ?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us ? whence then hath this man all these things ?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, Mark phet is not without honour, save in 6. 4. his own countrey, and in his own Luke 4. house. 24.

58 And he did not many mighty John 4. works there, because of their unbe- 44. lief.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Herods opinion of Christ. 3 Wherefore John Baptist was beheaded.

13 Jesus departeth into a desert place : 15 where he feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes. 22 He walketh on the sea to his disciples : 34 and landing at Genesaret, healeth the sick by the touch of the hem of his garment.

At that time Herod the tetrarch Mark heard of the fame of Jesus, 6. 14.

2 And said unto his servants, This Luke is John the Baptist, he is risen from 9. 7. the dead, and therefore mightie Or, works do shew forth themselves in are wrought by him.

3 ¶ For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in Luke 3. prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife. 19, 20. 'Levit.

4 For John said unto him, 'It is 18. 16. not lawfull for thee to have her. and 20.

5 And when he would have put 21. him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as d Chap. a prophet. 21. 26.

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

18

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oaths sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

^e Mark
6. 32.
Luke
9. 10.

13 ¶ ^e When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place, apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

^f Mark
6. 35.
John
6. 5.

15 ¶ ^f And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 ^s And when he had sent the ^s Multitudes away, he went up into a ^{6. 45.} mountain apart to pray: ^h and when ^h John the evening was come, he was there ^{6. 16.} alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the winde was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde ^{||} boistrous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, ^{||} Or, strong. Lord save me.

31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ ⁱ And when they were gone ⁱ Mark over, they came into the land of ^{6. 53.} Genesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Christ reproveth the scribes and Pharisees, for transgressing Gods commandments through their own traditions; 11 teacheth how that which goeth into the mouth, doth not defile a man. 21 He healeth the daughter of

of the woman of Canaan, 30 and other great multitudes: 32 and with seven loaves, and a few little fishes, feedeth four thousand men, besides women and children.

Mark 1. Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

Exod. 18, 12. 4 For God commanded, saying, ^b Honour thy father and mother: and, ^c He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

6. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, ^d It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me,

Exod. 17. 6 And honour not his father or his mother, ^e he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

Levit. 10, 9. 7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,

Isa. 29. 8 ^e This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

Mark 7, 14. 10 ¶ ^f And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

John 2. 13 But he answered & said, ^g Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

Luke 39. 14 Let them alone: ^h they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

Mark 7. 15 ¶ Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 ^k For out of the heart proceed ^k Gen. 6. evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, ^l 5. and fornications, thefts, false witness, ^m 8, 21. blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ ⁿ Then Jesus went thence, ⁿ Mark and departed into the coasts of Tyre ^o 7, 24. and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

24 But he answered and said, ^p I ^p Chap. am not sent, but unto the lost sheep ^q 10, 6. of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29 ^r And Jesus departed from ^r Mark thence, and came nigh unto the sea ^s 7, 31. of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

30 ^t And great multitudes came ^t Isa. 35. unto him, having with them those ^u 5, 6. that were lame, blinde, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, & he healed them:

31 Inasmuch that the multitude wondred when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde

20

to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

^a Mark
8. 1.

32 ¶ Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The Pharisees require a signe. 5 Jesus warneth his disciples of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 The peoples opinion of Christ, 16 and Peters confession of him.

21 Jesus foresheweth his death, 23 reproving Peter for dissuading him from it. 24 And admonisheth those that will follow him, to bear the cross.

^a Mark
8. 11.

^a Luke 12. 54. **T**He Pharisees also with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, but can ye not discern the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous gene-

ration seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, & of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread?

9^b Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ^b Chap 14. 17.

10^c Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ^c Chap 15. 34.

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say, that I, the Son of man, am? ^d Mark 8. 27.

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets. ^e Luke 9. 18.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art Christ the Son of the living God. ^f John 6. 69.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

18 And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. ^g John 1. 42.

19^h And I will give unto thee the ^h John 20. 23.

the keys of the kingdome of heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord : this shall not be unto thee.

23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me : for thou favourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

24 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it : and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul ? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul ?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels ; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

28 Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdome.

CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He bealeth the lunatick, 22 foretelleth his own passion, 24 and payeth tribute.

And^a after six days, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared

unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here : if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles ; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them : and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased ; hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came & touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus onely.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, untill the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come ?

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things :

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed : likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord, have mercie on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed : for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithles and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you ? how long shall I suffer you ? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him : and the childe was cured from that very hour.

19 Then

22

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

^e Luke
17.6.

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, ^e If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

^f Chap.
20.17.
Mark
9.31.
Luke
9.44.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

¶ Called
in the o-
riginal,
didrach-
ma, be-
ing in
value
fifteen
pence.
¶ Or, ^a
is half
an ounce
of silver,
in value
two shil-
lings six
pence,
after five
shillings
the
ounce.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received [¶] tribute-money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde [¶] a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

ⁱ Christ warneth his disciples to be humble and harmles, ⁷ to avoid offences, and not to despise the little ones: ¹⁵ teacheth how we are to deal with our brethren, when they offend us, ²¹ and how oft to forgive them; ²³ which he setteth forth by a parable of the king, that took account of his servants, ³² and punished him who shewed no mercy to his fellow.

^a Mark
9.33.
Luke
9.46.

AT the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, ^b Except ye be converted, ^b Chap. 19.14. and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heaven. ¹ Cor. 14.20.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdome of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little childe in my name, receiveth me;

6 ^c But whoso shall offend one of ^c Mark these little ones which beleeve in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. ^{9.42.} ^{17.1,2.}

7 ¶ Wo unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 ^d Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. ⁴ Chap. 5.30. ^{Mark} 9.45.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 ^e For the Son of man is come ^e Luke to save that which was lost. ^{19.10.}

12 ^f How think ye? if a man ^f Luke have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? ^{15.4.}

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

¶ 15 More.

Levit. 15 ¶ Moreover, ^s if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

Deut. 19. 15. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in ^h the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

John 8. 17. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an ⁱ heathen man and a publicane.

1 Cor. 5. 9. Verily I say unto you, ^k Whatsoever ye shall binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

John 20. 23. Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

1 Cor. 5. 4. 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Luke 17. 4. 21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? ⁱ till seven times?

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Untill seven times: but, untill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which ought him ten thousand ^{||} talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and ^{||} worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred

|| pence: and he laid hands on him, ²³ and took him by the throat, saying, || The Pay me that thou owest. ^{Romane}

29 And his fellow-servant fell peny down at his feet, and besought him, ^{is the} saying, Have patience with me, and eighth I will pay thee all. ^{part}

30 And he would not: but went of an and cast him into prison, till he ounce, should pay the debt. ^{which}

31 So when his fellow-servants after saw what was done, they were very five shil- forry, and came and told unto their lings the lord all that was done. ^{ounce, is}

32 Then his lord, after that he seven had called him, said unto him, O thou pence wicked servant, I forgave thee all half- that debt, because thou desiredst me: peny.

33 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-ser- vant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentours, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sick; 3 answereth the Pharisees concerning divorce- ment: 10 sheweth when marriage is necessary: 13 receiveth little chil- dren: 16 instructeth the young man how to attain eternal life, 20 and how to be perfect: 23 telleth his disciples how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God: 27 and promiseth reward to those that forsake any thing, to fol- low him.

And it came to pass, ^a that when ^a Mark Jesus had finished these sayings, ^{10. 1.} he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan:

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came un- to him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ^b Gen.

4 And he answered and said unto ^{1. 27.} them, Have ye not read, ^b that he ^c Gen. which made them at the beginning, ^{2. 24.} made them male and female? ^{Ephes. 5.}

5 And said, ^c For this cause shall ^{31.}

24 a man leave father and mother, and
 1 Cor. shall cleave to his wife: and ¹ they
 6. 16. twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more
 twain, but one flesh. What there-
 fore God hath joyned together, let
 not man put asunder.

^e Deut. 7 They say unto him, ^e Why did
 24. 1. Moses then command to give a writ-
 ing of divorcement, and to put her
 away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses,
 because of the hardness of your
 hearts, suffered you to put away
 your wives: but from the beginning
 it was not so.

^f Chap. 9 ^f And I say unto you, Whosoever
 5. 32. shall put away his wife, except
 Mark it be for fornication, and shall marry
 10. 11. another, committeth adultery: and
 Luke whoso marrieth her which is put
 16. 18. away, doth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him,
 1 Cor. If the case of the man be so with
 7. 11. his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All
 men cannot receive this saying, save
 they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs,
 which were so born from *their* mo-
 thers womb: and there are some eu-
 nuchs, which were made eunuchs of
 men: and there be eunuchs, which
 have made themselves eunuchs for
 the kingdome of heavens sake. He
 that is able to receive it, let him re-
 ceive it.

^g Mark 13 ¶ ^g Then were there brought
 10. 13. unto him little children, that he
 Luke should put *his* hands on them, and
 18. 15. pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little
 children, and forbid them not to
 come unto me: for of such is the
 kingdome of heaven.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them,
 and departed thence.

^h Mark 16 ¶ ^h And behold, one came and
 10. 17. said unto him, Good master, what
 Luke good thing shall I do that I may
 18. 18. have eternal life?

17 And he said unto him, Why
 callest thou me good? *there is none*
 good but one, *that is* God: but if thou
 wilt enter into life, keep the com-
 mandments.

ⁱ Exod. 18 He saith unto him, Which?
 20. 13. Jesus said, ⁱ Thou shalt do no mur-

der, Thou shalt not commit adulte-
 ry, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt
 not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy father and *thy* mo-
 ther: and, Thou shalt love thy neigh-
 bour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him,
 All these things have I kept from
 my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou
 wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou
 hast, and give to the poor, and thou
 shalt have treasure in heaven: and
 come *and* follow me.

22 But when the young man heard
 that saying, he went away sorrow-
 full: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his di-
 sciples, Verily I say unto you, that a
 rich man shall hardly enter into the
 kingdome of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is
 easier for a camel to go through the
 eye of a needle, then for a rich
 man to enter into the kingdome of
 God.

25 When his disciples heard it,
 they were exceedingly amazed, say-
 ing, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and
 said unto them, With men this is un-
 possible, but with God all things are
 possible.

27 ¶ ^k Then answered Peter, and ^k Mark
 said unto him, Behold, we have for- 10. 28.
 saken all, and followed thee; what Luke
 shall we have therefore? 18. 28.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Ve-
 rily I say unto you, that ye which
 have followed me in the regenerati-
 on, when the Son of man shall sit
 in the throne of his glory, ^l ye also ^l Luke
 shall sit upon twelve thrones, judg- 22. 30.
 ing the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath for-
 saken houses, or brethren, or sisters,
 or father, or mother, or wife, or
 children, or lands for my names sake,
 shall receive an hundred-fold, and
 shall inherit everlasting life.

30 ^m But many *that are* first, shall ^m Chap.
 be last; and the last *shall be* first. 20. 16.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ by the similitude of the labour- 10. 31.
 ers in the vineyard, sheweth that Luke
 God is debter unto no man; 17 fore- 13. 30.
 telleth his passion; 20 by answering
 the mother of Zebedees children,
 teach:

teacheth his disciples to be lowly;
30 and giveth two blinde men their
fight.

FOR the kingdome of heaven is
like unto a man that is an hous-
holder, which went out early in the
morning to hire labourers into his
vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with
the labourers for a || peny a day, he
sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third
hour, and saw others standing idle
in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also
into the vineyard, and whatsoever is
right, I will give you. And they
went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth
and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he
went out, and found others standing
idle, and saith unto them, Why stand
ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no
man hath hired us. He saith unto
them, Go ye also into the vineyard,
and whatsoever is right, that shall
ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the
lord of the vineyard saith unto his
steward, Call the labourers, and give
them their hire, beginning from the
last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were
hired about the eleventh hour, they
received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they
supposed that they should have re-
ceived more, and they likewise re-
ceived every man a peny.

11 And when they had received
it, they murmured against the good-
man of the house,

12 Saying, These last || have
wrought but one hour, and thou hast
made them equal unto us, which
have borne the burden and heat of the
day.

13 But he answered one of them,
and said, Friend I do thee no wrong:
didst not thou agree with me for a
peny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy
way: I will give unto this last, even
as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do
what I will with mine own? is thine

eye evil because I am good? 25

16 So the last shall be first, and Chap.
the first last: for many be called, but 19. 30.
few chosen.

17 ¶ And Jesus going up to Mark
Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples 10. 32.
apart in the way, and said unto them, Luke

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusa- 18. 31.
lem, and the Son of man shall be be-
trayed unto the chief priests, and
unto the scribes, and they shall con-
demn him to death,

19 And shall deliver him to the John
Gentiles to mock and to scourge 18. 32.
and to crucifie him: and the third day
he shall rise again.

20 ¶ Then came to him the Mark
mother of Zebedees children, with 10. 35.
her sons, worshipping him, and desi-
ring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What
wilt thou? She saith unto him,
Grant that these my two sons may
sit, the one on thy right hand, and the
other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Jesus answered and said,
Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye
able to drink of the cup that I shall
drink of, and to be baptized with the
baptisme that I am baptized with?
They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye
shall drink indeed of my cup, and be
baptized with the baptisme that I am
baptized with: but to sit on my right
hand, and on my left, is not mine to
give, but it shall be given to them for
whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it,
they were moved with indignation
against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto
him, and said, Ye know that the Luke
princes of the Gentiles exercise do- 22. 25.
minion over them, and they that are
great, exercise authority upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among
you: but whosoever will be great a-
mong you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief
among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the Phil.
Son of man came 2. 7.
not to be ministred unto, but to mi-
nister, and to give his life a ran- Mark
some for many. 10. 46.

29 And as they departed from Luke
Jericho, a great multitude followed 18. 35.
him.

H The
Romane
peny
is the
eighth
part
of an
ounce,
which
after five
shillings
the
ounce, is
seven
pence
half-pe-
ny.

Or,
have con-
tinued
one hour
only.

ap.
6.
K
1.
30.

24 a man leave father and mother, and
 1 Cor. shall cleave to his wife : and ^a they
 6. 16. twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more
 twain, but one flesh. What there-
 fore God hath joyned together, let
 not man put asunder.

^e Deut. 7 They say unto him, ^e Why did
 24. 1. Moses then command to give a writ-
 ing of divorcement, and to put her
 away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses,
 because of the hardness of your
 hearts, suffered you to put away
 your wives: but from the beginning
 it was not so.

^f Chap. 9 ^f And I say unto you, Whoso-
 5. 32. ever shall put away his wife, except
 Mark it be for fornication, and shall marry
 10. 11. another, committeth adultery: and
 Luke whoso marrieth her which is put
 16. 18. away, doth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him,
 1 Cor. If the case of the man be so with
 7. 11. his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All
 men cannot receive this saying, save
 they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs,
 which were so born from *their* mo-
 thers womb: and there are some eu-
 nuchs, which were made eunuchs of
 men: and there be eunuchs, which
 have made themselves eunuchs for
 the kingdome of heavens sake. He
 that is able to receive it, let him re-
 ceive it.

^g Mark 13 ¶ ^g Then were there brought
 10. 13. unto him little children, that he
 Luke should put *his* hands on them, and
 18. 15. pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little
 children, and forbid them not to
 come unto me: for of such is the
 kingdome of heaven.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them,
 and departed thence.

^h Mark 16 ¶ ^h And behold, one came and
 10. 17. said unto him, Good master, what
 Luke good thing shall I do that I may
 18. 18. have eternal life?

17 And he said unto him, Why
 callest thou me good? *there is none*
 good but one, *that is* God: but if thou
 wilt enter into life, keep the com-
 mandments.

ⁱ Exod. 18 He saith unto him, Which?
 20. 13. Jesus said, ⁱ Thou shalt do no mur-

der, Thou shalt not commit adulte-
 ry, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt
 not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy father and *thy* mo-
 ther: and, Thou shalt love thy neigh-
 bour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him,
 All these things have I kept from
 my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou
 wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou
 hast, and give to the poor, and thou
 shalt have treasure in heaven: and
 come *and* follow me.

22 But when the young man heard
 that saying, he went away sorrow-
 full: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his di-
 sciples, Verily I say unto you, that a
 rich man shall hardly enter into the
 kingdome of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is
 easier for a camel to go through the
 eye of a needle, then for a rich
 man to enter into the kingdome of
 God.

25 When his disciples heard it,
 they were exceedingly amazed, say-
 ing, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and
 said unto them, With men this is un-
 possible, but with God all things are
 possible.

27 ¶ ^k Then answered Peter, and ^k Mark
 said unto him, Behold, we have for- ^{10. 28.}
 saken all, and followed thee; what ^{Luke}
 shall we have therefore? ^{18. 28.}

28 And Jesus said unto them, Ve-
 rily I say unto you, that ye which
 have followed me in the regenerati-
 on, when the Son of man shall sit
 in the throne of his glory, ¹ ye also ¹ Luke
 shall sit upon twelve thrones, judg- ^{22. 30.}
 ing the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath for-
 saken houses, or brethren, or sisters,
 or father, or mother, or wife, or
 children, or lands for my names sake,
 shall receive an hundred-fold, and
 shall inherit everlasting life.

30 ^m But many *that are* first, shall ^m Chap.
 be last; and the last *shall* be first. ^{20. 16.}

CHAP. XX.

ⁿ Christ by the similitude of the labour- ^{10. 31.}
 ers in the vineyard, sheweth that ^{Luke}
 God is debtor unto no man; ^{17 fore-} ^{13. 30.}
 telleth his passion; ²⁰ by answering
 the mother of Zebedees children,
 teacheth

teacheth his disciples to be lowly;

30 and giveth two blinde men their sight.

FOR the kingdome of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a || peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, and they likewise received every man a peny.

11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the good-man of the house,

12 Saying, These last || have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take *that* thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine

eye evil because I am good?

16 ^a So the last shall be first, and ^a Chap. the first last: for many be called, but few chosen. 19. 30.

17 ¶ ^b And Jesus going up to ^b Mark Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples 10. 32. apart in the way, and said unto them, Luke

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusa- 18. 31. lem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

19 ^c And shall deliver him to the ^c John Gentiles to mock and to scourge 18. 32. and to crucifie him: and the third day he shall rise again.

20 ¶ ^d Then came to him the ^d Mark mother of Zebedees children, with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. 10. 35.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, ^e Ye know that the ^e Luke princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them. 22. 25.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the ^f Son of man came ^f Phil. not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. 2. 7. ^g Mark 10. 46.

29 ^h And as they departed from Luke Jericho, a great multitude followed him. 18. 35.

H The Romane peny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce, is seven pence half-penny.

Or, have continued the hour only.

chap. 16. k 31. e 30.

26

30 ¶ And behold two blinde men sitting by the way-side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Jerusalem upon an ass, 12 driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple, 17 curseth the fig-tree, 23 putteth to silence the priests and elders, 28 and rebuketh them by the similitude of the two sons, 33 and the husbandmen, who slew such as were sent unto them.

Mark
11. 1.
Luke
19. 29.

And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, & straightway ye shall finde an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

Isa. 62.
11.

Zech.
9. 9.

John
12. 15.

Mark
11. 1.

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foale of an ass.

6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went

before, and that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

13 And said unto them, It is written; My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of theeves.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.

19 And when he saw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves onely, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee hence-forward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith and doubt not, ye shall not onely do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.

22 And

22 And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

Mark
11. 27.
Luke
20. 1.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

Chap.
14. 5.

26 But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what think you? A certain man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go sir; and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

Chap.
3. 8.

32 For¹ John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicanes and the harlots believed him. And ye when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

33 ¶ Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, ^m which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.

34 And when the time of the fruit

drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants, more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, ⁿ come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. ⁿ Chap. 26. 3. John 11. 53.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, & slew him.

40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, ^o Did ^o Psal. ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? ^{118. 22. Acts 4. 11.}

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shall fall on ^p this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder. ^p Isa. 8. 14. 15. Rom. 9. 33.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. ^{1 Pet. 2. 7.}

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The parable of the marriage of the kings son. 9 The vocation of the Gentiles. 12 The punishment of him that wanted the wedding-garment. 15 Tribute ought to be paid to Cesar. 23 Christ confuteth the Sadducees for the resurrection, 34 answereth the lawyer, which is the first and great

28

commandment, ⁴¹ and poseth the Pharisees about the Messias.

^a Luke
14. 16.
Revel.
19. 9.

And Jesus answered & spake unto them again by parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is readie, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the high-ways, and as many as ye shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the high-ways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man w^{ch} had not on a wedding-garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

^b Chap.
20. 16.

14 ^b For many are called, but few are chosen.

^c Mar.

12. 13.

Luke 20.

20.

15 ¶ ^c Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might intangle him in his talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of

God in truth; neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute-money.

And they brought unto him a || peny, || In va-

20 And he saith unto them, Whose lue seven
is this image and || superscription? pence

21 They say unto him, Cessars. half-pe-
ny;

Then saith he unto them, ^d Render therefore unto Cesar, the things w^{ch} Chap.
are Cessars: and unto God, the things 20. 2.
that are Gods. || Or,

22 When they had heard these inscri-
ptions, they marvelled, and left him, ption.
and went their way. ^d Rom.

23 ¶ ^e The same day came to him 13. 7.
the Sadducees, ^f which say that there ^e Mar.
is no resurrection, and asked him, 12. 18.

24 Saying, Master, ^g Moses said, Luke 20.
If a man die, having no children, 27.
his brother shall marry his wife, and ^h Acts
raise up seed unto his brother. 23. 8.

25 Now there were with us seven ⁱ Deut.
brethren, and the first when he had 25. 5.
married a wife, deceased, and ha-
ving no issue, left his wife unto his
brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32 ^h I am the God of Abraham, ^h Exod.
and the God of Isaac, and the God 3. 6.
of Jacob? God is not the God of the
dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

¹ Mark
12. 28.

34 ¶ ¹ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them *which was* a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

^{*} Deut.
6. 5.
Luke
10. 27.

37 Jesus said unto him, ^{*} Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

¹ Levit.
19. 18.

39 And the second is like unto it, ¹ Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

² Mark
12. 35.
Luke
20. 41.

41 ¶ ² While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.*

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

³ Psal.
110. 1.

44 ³ The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any more questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

¹ Christ admonisheth the people to follow the good doctrine, not the evil examples of the scribes and Pharisees.

5 His disciples must beware of their ambition. 13 He denounceth eight woes against their hypocrisie and blindness: 34 and prophesieth of the destruction of Jerusalem.

Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

³ Luke
11. 46.

4 ³ For they binde heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay them on mens shoulders,

but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. 29

5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: ^b they make ^b Num. broad their phylacteries, and 15. 38. enlarge the borders of their garments, Deut. 22. 12.

6 ^c And love the uppermost rooms ^c Mark at feasts, and the chief seats in the 12. 38, synagogues, 39.

7 And greetings in the markets, Luke and to be called of men, Rabbi, 11. 43. Rabbi.

8 ^d But be not ye called Rabbi: ^d James for one is your matter, *even* Christ, 3. 1. and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no man your father upon the earth: ^e for one is your father ^e Mal. which is in heaven. 1. 6.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, *even* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.

12 ^f And whosoever shall exalt ^f Luke himself, shall be abased; and he 14. 11. & that shall humble himself, shall be 18. 14. exalted.

13 ¶ But ^g wo unto you scribes ^g Luke and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye 11. 52. shut up the kingdome of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

14 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; ^h for ye devour ^h Mark widows houses, and for a pretence 12. 40. make long prayer; therefore ye Luke shall receive the greater damnation. 20. 47.

15 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the childe of hell then your selves.

16 Wo unto you, ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor.

17 Ye fools, and blinde: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is ^{||} guilty. ^{||} Or, debtor, or, bound.

30

19 Ye fools, and blinde : for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

¹ Luke
11. 42.

23 Wo unto you scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites; ¹ for ye pay tithe of mint and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercie, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 Ye blinde guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

¹ Luke
11. 39.

25 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; ² for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that *which* is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanness.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquity.

29 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send

unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, ¹ from the blood of righteous ¹ Gen. Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, 4. 8. son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation.

37 ^m O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, ^m Luke thou that killest the prophets, ⁿ and 13. 34. stonest them which are sent unto ⁿ 2 Chr. thee, how often would ^o I have gathered thy children together even ^o 2 Esdr. as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple: 3 what and how great calamities shall be before it. 29 The signes of his coming to judgement. 36 And because that day and hour is unknown, 42 we ought to watch like good servants, expecting every moment our masters coming.

And ^a Jesus went out, and departed ^a Mark from the temple; and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. 13. 1. Luke 21. 5.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, ^b There shall not be left ^b Luke here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. 19. 44.

3 ¶ And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars : see that ye be not troubled : for all *these things* must come to pass , but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome : and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

9 ^c Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 ^d When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by ^e Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)

16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let him which is on the housetop, not come down to take any thing out of his house :

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those days.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath-day :

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved : but for the elects sake those days shall be shortened.

23 ^f Then if any man shall say un-

to you, Lo, here is Christ, or there: 31
believe it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders, inso-much that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth : behold, *he is* in the secret chambers, believe it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west : so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

28 ^g For wheresoever the carcase ^h Luke is, there will the eagles be gathered 17. 37.
together.

29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those days, ⁱ shall the ^j Isa. sun be darkened, and the moon shall 13. 10.
not give her light, and the stars Ezek. shall fall from heaven, and the 32. 7.
powers of the heavens shall be sha- Joel
ken. 2. 31.

30 And then shall appear the signe Mark of the Son of man in heaven : and 13. 24.
then shall all the tribes of the earth Luke
mourn, ^k and they shall see the Son 21. 25.
of man coming in the clouds of ^l Revel. heaven, with power and great 1. 7.
glory.

31 ^m And he shall send his angels ⁿ 1 Cor. 15. 52.
with a great sound of a trumpet, and 1 Thess.
they shall gather together his elect 4. 16.
from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the *with a* fig-tree : When his branch is yet *trumpet,*
tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye *and a*
know that summer is nigh : great

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall *voice.*
see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 ^o Heaven and earth shall pass ^p Mark away, but my words shall not pass a- 13. 31.
way.

36 ¶ But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father onely.

37 But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

Chap.
10. 17.
Luke
21. 12.
John
16. 2.

Mark
13. 14.
Dan. 9.
27.

Mark
13. 21.
Luke
17. 23.

32 ^m Gen. 7. Luke 17. 26. 38 ^m For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the ark,

39 And knew not untill the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

ⁿ Luke 17. 36. 40 ⁿ Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

^o Mark 13. 35. 42 ¶ Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

^p Luke 12. 39. 1 Thess. 5. 2. Revel. 16. 15. 43 ^p But know this, that if the good-man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

^q Luke 12. 42. 45 ^q Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?

46 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not ware of;

¶ Or, cut him off. 51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins, 14 and of the talents. 31 Also the description of the last judgement.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and

went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oyl with them.

4 But the wise took oyl in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are gone out.

¶ Or, going on. 9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour, wherein the Son of man cometh. ¶ Chap. 24. 42. Mark.

14 ¶ For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods: 13. 33. Luke 19. 12.

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man according to his several ability, and straightway took his journey. ¶ A talent is 187 pound ten shillings, chap. 18. 24.

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five

five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents : behold, I have gained besides them five talents mo.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull servant; thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents : behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithfull servant; thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed :

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth : lo, there thou hast *that is* thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothfull servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed :

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, & then at my coming I should have received mine own with usurie.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 ^c For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance : but from him that hath not shall be taken away, even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations ; and he shall separate them one from another, as a

shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats : 33

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 ^d For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat : I was thirstie, and ye gave me drink : I was a stranger, and ye took me in : ^d Isa. 58. 7. Ezek. 18. 7.

36 Naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee ? or thirstie, and gave thee drink ?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in ? or naked, and clothed thee ?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee ?

40 And the King shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, ^e Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. ^e Psal. 6. 8. Chap. 7. 23.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat : I was thirstie, and ye gave me no drink :

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in : naked, and ye clothed me not : sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee ?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

46 And ^f these shall go away into everlasting punishment : but the righteous into life eternal. ^f Dan. 12. 2. John 5. 29.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ.

6 The woman anointeth his feet.

14 Judas

34

14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the pass-over: 26 instituteth his holy supper: 36 prayeth in the garden: 47 and being betrayed with a kiss, 57 is carried to Caiaphas, 69 and denied of Peter.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

* Mark

14. 1.

Luke

22. 1.

John

13. 1.

* John

11. 47.

2 * Ye know that after two days is the feast of the pass-over, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 ^b Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

* Mark

14. 3.

John

11. 1.

6 ¶ ^c Now when Jesus was in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster-box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

* Deut.

15. 11.

11 ^d For ye have the poor always with you, but me ye have not always.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

* Mark

14. 10.

Luke

22. 3.

14 ¶ ^e Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests,

15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought

opportunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ ^f Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto Luke him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the pass-over?

18 And he said, Go into the citie to such a man, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the pass-over at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the pass-over.

20 ^g Now when the even was ^h Mark come, he sat down with the twelve. 14. 18.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Luke Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. * John

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered and said, ⁱ He ^j Psal. that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. 41. 9.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man, if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, ^k Jesus took bread, and ^l blessed it, ^m 1 Cor. and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. 11. 23, 24. ⁿ Many

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it: have,

28 For this is my blood of the new testament which is shed for many for the remission of sins. ^o gave thanks.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, untill that day when I drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.

30 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. ^p Or, psalm.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them, ^q Mark All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, ^r I John will smite the shepherd, & the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad ^s Zech. 13. 7.

32 But after I am risen again, ^t I

Mark 14. 28. I will go before you into Galilee.
33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

John 13. 38. 34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

Mark 14. 32. Luke 22. 39. 36 ¶ Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, & very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull, even unto death: tarry ye here and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came & found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

Mark 14. 43. Luke 22. 47. John 18. 3. 47 ¶ And while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

35 48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a signe, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail master; and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword. 9. 6.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more then twelve legions of angels? Rev. 13. 10.

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? Isa. 53. 10.

55 In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. 4. 20.

57 ¶ And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes & the elders were assembled. Mark 14. 53. Luke 22. 54.

58 But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end. John 18. 13.

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

61 And said, This fellow said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. John 2. 19.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing?

36 thing? what is it which these witnesses
against thee?

63 But Jesus held his peace. And
the high priest answered and said un-
to him, I adjure thee by the living
God, that thou tell us, whether thou
be the Christ the Son of God?

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou
hast said: nevertheless I say unto
you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son
of man sitting on the right hand of
power, and coming in the clouds of
heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his
clothes, saying, He hath spoken blas-
phemie; what further need have we
of witnesses? behold, now ye have
heard his blasphemie.

66 What think ye? They answered
and said, He is guilty of death.

67 Then did they spit in his
face, and buffeted him, and others
smote him with the palms of their
hands,

68 Saying, Prophecie unto us, thou
Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 Now Peter sat without in
the palace: and a damsel came unto
him, saying, Thou also wast with
Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all,
saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out in-
to the porch, another maid saw him,
and said unto them that were there,
This fellow was also with Jesus of
Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an
oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto
him they that stood by, and said to
Peter, Surely thou also art one of
them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to
swear, saying, I know not the man.
And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembered the
words of Jesus, which said unto him,
Before the cock crow, thou shalt de-
nie me thrice. And he went out, and
wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ is delivered bound to Pilate.

3 Judas hangeth himself. 19 Pi-
late admonished of his wife, 24 wash-
eth his hands, 26 and looseth Ba-
rabbas. 29 Christ is crowned with
thorns, 34 crucified, 40 reviled,

50 dieth, and is buried. 66 His se-
pulchre is sealed and watched.

When the morning was come, all the chief priests and el-
ders of the people, took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 Then Judas which had be-
trayed him, when he saw that he was
condemned, repented himself, and
brought again the thirty pieces of
silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I
have betrayed the innocent blood.
And they said, What is that to us?
see thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of
silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the
silver pieces, and said, It is not law-
full for to put them into the treasury,
because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counsel, and
bought with them the potters field,
to burie strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called,
The field of blood unto this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which
was spoken by Jeremie the prophet,
saying, And they took the thirty
pieces of silver, the price of him
that was valued, whom they of the
children of Israel did value:

10 And gave them for the potters
field, as the Lord appointed me.)

11 And Jesus stood before the go-
vernour; & the governour asked him,
saying, Art thou the king of the Jews?
And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest

12 And when he was accused of
the chief priests and elders, he an-
swered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him,
Hearest thou not how many things
they witness against thee?

14 And he answered him to never
a word, in so much that the governour
 marvelled greatly.

15 Now at that feast the gover-
nour was wont to release unto the
people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable
prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were ga-
thered together, Pilate said unto
them,

* Chap.
16. 27.
Rom.
14. 10.
1 Thess.
4. 16.

* Isa.
50. 6.
|| Or,
rods.

* Mark
14. 66.
Luke
22. 55.
John
18. 25.

Acts
1. 18.

Acts
1. 19.

* Zech.
11. 13.

|| Or,
whom

they
bought

of the
children

of Israel.

* Luke
23. 17.

them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envie they had delivered him.

19 ¶ When he was set down on the judgement-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

John 40. As 3. 20 ¶ But the chief priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governour answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

John 9.1. Or, 27 ¶ Then the souldiers of the governour took Jesus into the || common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of souldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail King of the Jews.

30 And they spit upon him, & took the reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on

him, & led him away to crucifie him. 37

32 ¶ And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his Luke 23. 26. cross.

33 ¶ And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a scull, 19. 17.

34 ¶ They gave him vineger to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, ¶ They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots. 22. 18.

36 And sitting down, they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head, his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEVS.

38 Then were there two theeves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thy self: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others, himself he cannot save: if he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will beleve him.

43 ¶ He trusted in God; let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. Psal. 22. 8. Wilsd. 2. 9.

44 The theeves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth. 16, 17, 18.

45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, ¶ My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Psal. 22. 1.

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And

38
* Psal.
69. 21.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, ⁿ and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.

49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

50 ¶ Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared unto many.

54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding afar off) which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

* Mark
15. 42.
Luke
23. 50.
John
19. 38.

57 ° When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus disciple:

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered.

59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet

alive, After three days I will rise again.

64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure untill the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse then the first.

65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way, make it as sure as you can.

66 So they went and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Christ's resurrection is declared by an angel to the women. 9 He himself appeareth unto them. 11 The high priests give the souldiers money to say that he was stolen out of his sepulchre. 16 Christ appeareth to his disciples, 19 and sendeth them to baptize and teach all nations.

IN the ^a end of the sabbath, as it ^a Mark began to dawn towards the first 16. 1. day of the week, came Mary Magda- John lene, and the other Mary, to see the 20. 1. sepulchre.

2 And behold, there || was a great || Or, earthquake; for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. had been

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and

and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governours ears, we will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and

did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews untill this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 ¶ ^b Go ye therefore and teach ^b Mark all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost: 16. 15.

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway even unto the end of the world. Amen.

The Gospel according to S. M A R K.

CHAP. I.

1 The office of John the Baptist. 9 Jesus is baptized, 12 tempted: 14 he preacheth: 16 calleth Peter, Andrew, James and John: 23 healeth one that had a devil, 29 Peters mother in law, 32 many diseased persons: 41 and cleanseth the leper.



HE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets,

^a Behold, I send

my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 ^b The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 ^c John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptisme of repentance, || for the remission of sins.

5 ^d And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was ^e clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loyns: and he did eat locusts and wilde honey:

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoup down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 ^f And it came to pass in those ^f Matth. days, that Jesus came from Nazareth ^{3. 13.} of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens || opened, and the Spirit like a dove || Or, descending upon him. ^{cloven,}

11 And there came a voice from ^{or, rent.} heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 ^g And immediately the spirit ^g Matth. driveth him into the wilderness. ^{4. 1.}

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the angels ministred unto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison, ^h Jesus came into Galilee, ^h Matth. preaching the gospel of the king- ^{4. 12.} dome of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye and beleeve the gospel.

16 ⁱ Now as he walked by the ⁱ Matth. ^{4. 18.} sea

40 sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

* Matth.
4. 13.

21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.

1 Matth.
7. 28.

22 1 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

m Luke
4. 33.

23 m And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

n Matth.
9. 14.

29 n And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simons wives mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by

the hand, and lift her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, & cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him. || Or,

35 And in the morning rising up to say a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. *that they knew him.*

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

40 o And there came a leper o Matth. 8. 2. to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a testimony unto them.

45 p But he went out, and began to p Luke 5. 15. publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter

CHAP. II.

1 Christ healeth one sick of the palsy,
14 calleth Matthew from the receipt of custome,

customs, 15 eateth with publicanes and sinners, 18 excuseth his disciples for not fasting, 23 and for plucking the ears of corn on the sabbath-day.

Math.
9. 1.

And again ^a he entred into Capernaum, after some days, and it was noised that he was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsie, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for preass, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

Job

14. 4.

Isa. 43.

25.

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? ^b who can forgive sins but God onely?

8 And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsie, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsie)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

Math.

9. 9.

Or, at

the place

where the

custome

was re-

ceived.

13 And he went forth again by the sea-side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 ^c And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting ^d at

the receipt of custome, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

15 And it came to pass, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicanes and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicanes and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicanes & sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

18 ^d And the disciples of John, ^d Math. and of the Pharisees used to fast; and 9. 14. they come, and say unto him, Why Luke do the disciples of John, and of the 5. 33. Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.

20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

21 No man also seweth a piece of ^e new cloth on an old garment: else ^e Or, raw, the new piece that filled it up, taketh or un- away from the old, and the rent is wrought. made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 ^e And it came to pass, that he ^e Math. went through the corn-fields on the 12. 1. sabbath-day, and his disciples began as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath-day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

42

26 How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ healeth the withered hand, 10 and many other infirmities: 11 rebuketh the unclean spirits: 13 chooseth his twelve apostles: 22 convinceth the blasphemy of casting out devils by Beelzebub: 31 and sheweth who are his brother, sister, and mother.

• Matth.
12. 9.

AND he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawfull to do good on the sabbath-days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

|| Or,
blindness.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, in-

somuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.

13 And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him. ^{• Matth. 10. 1.}

14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house. ^{|| Or, home.}

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.

21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself. ^{|| Or, of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.}

22 And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils. ^{• Matth. 9. 34.}

23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome be divided against it self, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against it self, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first binde the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

Matth.
12. 31.

28 ^a Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

Matth.
12. 46.

31 ¶ There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IV.

1 The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 21 We must communicate the light of our knowledge to others. 26 The parable of the seed growing secretly, 30 and of the mustard-seed. 35 Christ stilleth the tempest on the sea.

Matth.
13. 1.

And ^a he began again to teach by the sea-side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns,

and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruit. 43

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth somethirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath ear to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 ^b That seeing they may see, ^c Matth. and not perceive, and hearing they ^d 13. 14. may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise ^e which are sown on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word,

19 And the cares of this world, ^f and the deceitfulness of riches, and ^g 1 Tim. the lusts of other things entring in, ^h 6. 17. choke the word, and it becometh un- ⁱ Matth. fruitfull. ^j 5. 15.

20 And these are they which are ^k sown on good ground, such as hear ^l the word, and receive it, and bring ^m the forth fruit, some thirty-fold, some ⁿ original sixty, and some an hundred. ^o gnifieth

21 ¶ ^p And he said unto them, Is ^q a less candle brought to be put under a ^r measure, ^s || bulhel, or under a bed? and not to ^t as Matt. be set on a candlestick? ^u 5. 15.

44 22 * For there is nothing hid
 * Matth. which shall not be manifested: nei-
 10. 26. ther was anything kept secret, but
 that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have ears to hear,
 let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take
 * Matth. heed what you hear: * with what
 7. 2. measure ye mete, it shall be measu-
 red to you: and unto you that hear
 shall more be given.

* Matth. 25 * For he that hath, to him
 13. 12. shall be given: and he that hath not,
 from him shall be taken even that
 which he hath.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the king-
 dome of God, as if a man should
 cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleep, & rise night
 and day, and the seed should spring
 and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth
 fruit of her self, first the blade,
 then the ear, after that the full corn
 in the ear.

|| Or, 29 But when the fruit is || brought
 ripe. forth, immediately he putterh in the
 fickle, because the harvest is come.

* Matth. 30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto
 13. 31. shall we liken the kingdome of
 God? or with what comparison
 shall we compare it?

31 It is like a grain of mustard-
 seed, which when it is sown in the
 earth, is less then all the seeds that be
 in the earth.

32 But when it is sown it groweth
 up, and becometh greater then all
 herbs, and shooteth out great bran-
 ches, so that the fowls of the air
 may lodge under the shadow of it.

* Matth. 33 * And with many such para-
 13. 34. bles spake he the word unto them as
 they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parable spake
 he not unto them: and when they
 were alone, he expounded all things
 to his disciples.

* Matth. 35 * And the same day when
 8. 23. the even was come, he saith unto
 them, Let us pass over unto the o-
 ther side.

36 And when they had sent a-
 way the multitude, they took him
 even as he was in the ship, and
 there were also with him other lit-
 tle ships.

37 And there arose a great storm

of winde, and the waves beat into
 the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part
 of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and
 they awake him, and say unto him,
 Master, carest thou not that we
 perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked
 the winde, and said unto the sea,
 Peace, be still: and the winde ceased,
 and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why
 are ye so fearfull? how is it that you
 have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly,
 and said one to another, What man-
 ner of man is this, that even the
 winde and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 Christ delivering the possessed of the
 legion of devils, 13 they enter into
 the swine: 25 He healeth the wo-
 man of the bloody issue, 35 and rai-
 seth from death Jairus his daughter.

And * they came over unto the * Matth.
 other side of the sea, into the 8. 28.
 countrey of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of
 the ship, immediately there met him
 out of the tombs, a man with an un-
 clean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among
 the tombs, and no man could binde
 him, no nor with chains:

4 Because that he had been often
 bound with fetters and chains, and
 the chains had been plucked asun-
 der by him, and the fetters broken
 in pieces: neither could any man
 tame him.

5 And always night and day, he
 was in the mountains, and in the
 tombs, crying, and cutting himself
 with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afar off,
 he ran and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice,
 and said, What have I to do with
 thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most
 high God? I adjure thee by God,
 that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out
 of the man, thou unclean spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy
 name? And he answered, saying,
 My name is Legion: for we are
 many.

10 And he besought him much,
 that

that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swinefeeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the citie, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 ^b And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her that she may be healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him, and

much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of blood twelve years,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the preas behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediately knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preas, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogues house, certain which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleve.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother

46

of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entred in where the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi, which is being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countrymen. 7 He giveth the twelve power over unclean spirits. 14 Divers opinions of Christ. 18 John Baptist is beheaded, 29 and buried. 30 The apostles return from preaching. 34 The miracle of five loaves and two fishes. 48 Christ walketh on the sea: 53 and healeth all that touch him.

* Matt. 13. 54.

And he went out from thence, and came into his own country, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

* John 4. 44.

4 But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

* Matt. 9. 35.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching.

* Matt. 10. 1.

7 And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth

by two and two, & gave them power over unclean spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff onely: no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:

9 But be shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimonie against them. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgement, then for that citie.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oyl many that were sick, and healed them.

14 And king Herod heard of him, (for his name was spread abroad) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mightie works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife; for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawfull for thee to have thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee:

|| The word signifieth a piece of brass money, in value

some-what less then a far-thing, Matt. 10.

9. but here it is taken in general for money.

* Matth. 10. 14.

* Acts 13. 5.

* James 5. 14.

* Matth. 14. 1.

* Luke 3. 19.

* Levit. 18. 16.

|| Or, an inward grudge.

|| Or, kept him, or, saved him.

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorrie, yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

Or, one of his guard.
27 And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

1 Luke 9. 10.

30 And the Apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

m Matt. 14. 13.

32 And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

m Matt. 9. 36.

34 And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began

to teach them many things. 47

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed:

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? Go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toying in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking

|| The Romane penny is seven pence half-penny, as Matt. 18. 28.

|| Or, over against Bethsaida.

m Matt. 14. 23.

48 ing upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Fe of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were fore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

* Matt.
14. 34.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched || him, were made whole.

|| Or, it.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples, foreating with unwashen hands

8 They break the commandment of God by the traditions of men. 14 Meat defileth not the man. 24 He healeth the Syrophenician womans daughter of an unclean spirit, 31 and one that was deaf and stammered in his speech.

* Matt.
15. 1.

Then * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

|| Or, common.

|| Or, diligently in the original,

with the fist:

Theophylact, up to the elbow.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with || defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands || oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there

be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and || pots, brasen vessels, and of || tables.

|| Sextarius is a pint and an half. || Or, beds.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This * Isa. people honoureth me with *their* lips, 29. 13. but their heart is far from me. Matt.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. 15. 8.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye || reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own || Or, tradition. frustrate.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, *It is* * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free. * Matt. 15. 5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ * And when he had called * Matt. all the people unto him, he said 15. 10. unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye

ye so without understanding also? Doye not perceiue, that whatsoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

Gen. 21. 5. and Matt. 19. 21. 21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciuiousness, an evil eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishness:

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

Matt. 21. 24 ¶ And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

Or, Gentile. 26 (The woman was a ¶ Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said unto him, Yes Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crumbs.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying gothy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously: 10 refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees: 14 admonisheth his disciples to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod: 22 giveth a blinde man his sight: 27 acknowledgeth that he is the Christ, who should suffer and rise again: 34 and exhorteth to patience in persecution for the profession of the gospel.

IN those days a the multitude being a Matt. 15. 32. very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, & gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

50

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand; and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

^b Matt.
16. 1.

11 ^b And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a signe? verily I say unto you, There shall no signe be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship again, departed to the other side.

^c Matt.
16. 5.

14 ¶ ^c Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

^d Matt.
16. 7.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is ^d because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida, & they bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ ^e And Jesus went out, and ^e Matt.
his disciples, into the towns of Cesa- 16. 13.
rea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias; and others, One of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them, ^f Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ^f Matt.
10. 38.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 ^g Whosoever therefore shall ^g Matt.
be ashamed of me, and of my words, 10. 33.
in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when he cometh in the

the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

CHAP. IX.

2 *Jesus is transfigured.* 11 He instructeth his disciples concerning the coming of Elias: 14 casteth forth a dumb and deaf spirit: 30 foretelleth his death and resurrection: 33 exhorteth his disciples to humility: 38 bidding them not to prohibit such as be not against them, nor to give offence to any of the faithfull.

Matt.
6. 28.

And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdome of God come with power.

Matt.
17. 1.

2 ¶ And after six days, Jesus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were fore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus onely with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered and told

them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them? Or,

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he someth and gnatheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not. Or, dasheth him.

19 He answered him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst beleeve, all things are possible to him that beleeveeth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I beleeve; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, Come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And

52

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him fore, and came out of him; and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

^e Matt.
17. 22.

30 ¶ ^e And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

^f Matt.
18. 1.

33 ¶ ^f And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves, by the way?

34 But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.

35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and said unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

^g Luke
9. 49.

38 ¶ ^g And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us; and we forbade him, because he followeth not us.

^h 1 Cor.
12. 3.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speake evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

ⁱ Matt.
10. 42.

41 ¶ ⁱ For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my

name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 ^k And whosoever shall offend ^k Matt. one of these little ones that beleieve 18. 6. in me, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 ^l And if thy hand || offend thee, ^l Matt. cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two 5. 29. hands, to go into hell, into the fire || Or, that never shall be quenched: ^{cause}

44 ^m Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. ^{thee to offend.}

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: ^m Isa. 66. 24.

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye || offend thee, || Or, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the Kingdome of God with ^{cause} one eye, then having two eyes to be ^{thee to offend.} cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, ⁿ and every sacrifice shall ⁿ Levit. be salted with salt. 2. 13.

50 ^o Salt is good: but if the salt ^o Matt. have lost his saltness, wherewith will 5. 13. you season it? Have salt in your selves, and have peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

2 Christ disputeth with the Pharisees touching divorcement: 13 blesseth the children that are brought unto him: 17 resolveth a rich man how he may inherit life everlasting: 23 telleth his disciples of the danger of riches: 28 promiseth rewards to them that forsake any thing for the gospel: 32 foretelleth his death and resurrection: 35 biddeth the two ambitious suiters to think rather of suffering with him: 46 and restoreth to Bartimeus his sight.

And ^a he arose from thence, and ^a Matt. cometh into the coasts of Judea 19. 1. by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for

a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

8 And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let no man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

Matt. 19. 9. 11 And he saith unto them, Who-soever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

Matt. 19. 13. 13 ¶ And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them; and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

Matt. 19. 16. 17 ¶ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good, but one, that is God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do

not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words, But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life.

31 ¶ But many that are first, shall be last: and the last, first.

32 ¶ And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them; and they were amazed,

54

amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

33 *Saying,* Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes: and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles;

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

^h Matt.
20. 20.

35 ¶ And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

¹ Luke
22. 25.
|| Or,
think
good.

42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which || are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the high-way-side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercie on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercie on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath || made thee || Or, whole. And immediately he received *saved* his sight, & followed Jesus in the way. *thee.*

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem: 12 curseth the fruitlesse fig tree: 15 purgeth the temple: 20 exhorteth his disciples to steadfastness of faith, and to forgive their enemies: 27 and defendeth the lawfulness of his actions, by the witness of John, who was a man sent of God.

And ^a when they came nigh to ¹ Matt. Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and ^{21. 1.} Bethanie, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you; and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the even-tide was come, he went out unto Bethanie with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie, he was hungry.

13 ^b And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ ^c And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves;

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the scribes & chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him,

because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 ¶ ^d And in the morning, as ^d Matth. they passed by, they saw the fig-tree ^{21. 19.} dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, ¶ Have faith in God.

¶ Or, Have the faith of God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleve that those things which he saith shall come to pass, he shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, ^e What things soever ye desire when ^e Matth. ye pray, beleve that ye receive ^{7. 7.} them, and ye shall have them.

25 And when ye stand, praying, ^f forgive, if ye have ought against ^f Matth. any: that your Father also which ^{6. 14.} is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

26 But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven, forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem: ^g and as he was walking ^g Matth. in the temple, there come to him ^{21. 23.} the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,

28 And say unto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and whogave thee this authoritie to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one ¶ question, and answer me, and ¶ Or, I will tell you by what authority I ^{thing.} do these things.

30 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not beleve him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said
T t t unto

¶ Matth.
21. 19.

¶ Matth.
21. 12.

att.
1.

56 unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 In a parable of the vineyard let out 10 unthankfull husbandmen, Christ foretelleth the reprobation of the Jews, and the calling of the Gentiles. 13 He avoideth the snare of the Pharisees and Herodians about paying tribute to Cesar: 18 convinceth the error of the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection: 28 resolveth the scribe, who questioned of the first commandment: 35 refuteth the opinion that the scribes held of Christ: 38 bidding the people to beware of their ambition and hypocrisie: 41 and commendeth the poor widow for her two mites, above all.

• Matth.
21. 33.

AND he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine-fat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he sent another; and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one son, his welbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 And have ye not read this scripture? • The stone which the ^b Psal. builders rejected is become the head 118. 22. of the corner.

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ And they send unto him ^c Matth. certain of the Pharisees, and of the 22. 15. Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawfull to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a ^d penie, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it: and he saith unto them, Whose is this image seven and superscription? And they said pence unto him, Cesars. ^e Valuing of our money

17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar the things Match. that are Cesars, and to God the 18. 28. things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

18 ¶ Then come unto him the ^d Matth. Sadducees, which say there is no re- 22. 23. surrection; & they asked him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and leave his wife behinde him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said un-
to

to them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marrie, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.

Matth. 22. 35. 28 ¶ And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, The Lord our God is one Lord;

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandment greater then these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more then all whole-burnt-offerings & sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

Matth. 22. 41. 35 ¶ And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

Psal. 110. 1. 36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he then his son? And the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places,

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, & the uppermost rooms at feasts:

40 Which devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

41 And Jesus sat over against the treasure, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasure: and many that were rich cast in much.

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor one widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasure.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple: 9 the persecutions for the gospel: 10 that the gospel must be preached to all nations: 14 that great calamities shall happen to the Jews: 24 and the manner of his coming to judgement. 32 The hour whereof being known to none, every man is to watch and pray, that we be not found unprovided, when he cometh to each one particularly by death.

And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter,

58. ter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,

^b Matth. 24. 3. 4 ^b Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*: and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars, be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needs be; but the end *shall not be yet*.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall be earthquakes in *divers* places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of *||* sorrows.

|| The word in the original importeth the pains of a woman in travail.

^c Matth. 10. 19.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to counsels; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers & kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them.

10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 ^c But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

^d Matth. 24. 15.

14 ¶ ^d But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the house-top not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field,

not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those days.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days.

21 ^e And then, if any man shall ^e Matth. say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, ^e Matth. 24. 23. he is there: beleeve him not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

24 ¶ ^f But in those days, after ^f Matth. that tribulation, the sun shall be ^f Matth. 24. 29. darkened, and the moon shall not give her light:

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glorie.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near:

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, *even* at the doors.

30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

¹ Matth. 24. 42. 33 ² Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 *For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authoritie to his servants, and to every man his work, & commanded the porter to watch.*

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Left coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIV.

¹ *A conspiracy against Christ. 3 Precious ointment is poured on his head by a woman. 10 Judas selleth his Master for money. 12 Christ himself foretelleth how he shall be betrayed of one of his disciples: 22 after the pass-over prepared, and eaten, instituteth his supper: 26 declareth aforehand the flight of all his disciples, and Peters denial. 43 Judas betrayeth him with a kiss. 46 He is apprehended in the garden, 55 falsely accused, and impiously condemned of the Jews counsell. 65 shamefully abused by them, 66 and thrice denied of Peter.*

² Matth. 26. 2. **A**fter ² two days, was the feast of the pass-over, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

³ Matth. 26. 6. 3 ¹ And being in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster-box of ointment of ¹ spikenard, very precious; and she brake the box, and poured it on his head.

¹ Or, pure nard, or liquid nard.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

⁵ For it might have been sold for more then three hundred ¹ pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone,

why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my bodie to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, *this* also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 ¹ And Judas Iscariot, one ¹ of the twelve, went unto the chief ² priests, to betray him unto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¹ And the first day of unleavened bread, when they ¹ killed the ² pass-over his disciples said unto him, ¹ Or, Where wilt thou that we go and sacrifice, that thou mayest eat the ² pass-over?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the citie, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good-man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the pass-over with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make readie for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the citie, and found as he had said unto them: and they made readie the pass-over.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 ¹ And as they sat, and did eat, ² Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, one ² of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but wo to that

60 that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been born.

¹ Matth. 26. 26. 22 ¶ And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, untill that day that I drink it new in the kingdome of God.

¶ Or, ^{psalm.} 26. 31. 26 ¶ And when they had sung an || hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

¹ Matth. 26. 31. 27 ¶ And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

¹ Matth. 26. 33. 29 ¶ But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this day, even in this night before the cock crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

¹ Matth. 26. 36. 32 ¶ And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavie,

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the hour might pass from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, All things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one hour?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again; (for their eyes were heavie) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ ¹ Matth. 26. 47. And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, master; and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and with staves, to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body; and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ And

¹ Matth. 26. 57. 53 ¶ And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

² Matth. 26. 59. 55 ¶ And the chief priests, and all the council sought for witnesses against Jesus to put him to death; and found none.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

57 And there arose certain, & bare false witness against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witness agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the mids, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

³ Matth. 24. 30. 62 And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

⁴ Matth. 26. 69. 66 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into

the porch; and the cock crew.

69 And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 ¶ And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to minde the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Jesus brought bound, and accused before Pilate. 15 Upon the clamour of the common people, the murderer Barabbas is loosed, and Jesus delivered up to be crucified. 17 He is crowned with thorns, 19 spit on, and mocked: 21 fainteth in bearing his cross: 27 hangeth between two thieves: 29 suffereth the triumphing reproaches of the Jews: 39 but confessed by the centurion to be the Son of God: 43 and is honourably buried by Joseph.

And ⁵ straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

4 ¶ And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothings; so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

62

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire *him to do as he had ever done unto them.*

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envie)

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do *unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews?*

13 And they cried out again, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged *him*, to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his *head*,

18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews?

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing *their knees*, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

¶ Matth.
27. 32.

21 ¶ And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scull.

23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received *it not.*

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucifie two theeves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, ^d And he was numbred ^d Isa. 53. 12. with the transgressours.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,

30 Save thy self, and come down from the cross.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and beleve. And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land, untill the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, ^e E-^e Matth. 27. 46. loi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on afar off: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joseph, and Salome;

41 Who also when he was in Galilee,

Luke 8. 3. lilee, followed him, and ministred unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

Matth. 27. 57. 42 ¶ And now when the even was come, (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the door of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 An angel declareth the resurrection of Christ to three women. 9 Christ himself appeareth to Mary Magdalene: 12 to two going into the country: 14 then to the apostles, 15 whom he sendeth forth to preach the gospel: 19 he ascendeth into heaven

And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

Luke 24. 1. **John** 20. 1. 2 And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

John 20. 11. 5 And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Naza-

reth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

Matth. 26. 32. 8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed: neither said they any thing to any man; for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

Luke 8. 2. 10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, beleeveth not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, & went into the country.

13 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither beleeveth they them.

14 ¶ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they beleeveth not them which had seen him after he was risen.

15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that beleeveth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that beleeveth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signes shall follow them that beleve; In my name they shall cast out devils, they shall speak with new tongues,

18 They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, & preached every where, the Lord working with them, & confirming the word with signes following. Amen.

The Gospel according to S. LUKE.

CHAP. I.

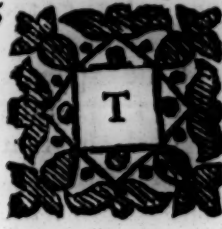
1 The preface of Luke to his whole gospel. **5** The conception of John the Baptist, **26** and of Christ. **39** The prophesie of Elisabeth, and of Mary concerning Christ. **57** The nativitie and circumcision of John. **67** The prophesie of Zacharie both of Christ, **76** and of John.

FOrasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleevved among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5  Here was in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years.

8 And it came to pass, that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custome of the priests office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his mothers womb.

16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, untill the day that these things shall be performed, because thou beleevest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckened unto them, and remained speechless.

23 And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministrations were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me

• Exod.
30. 7.
Levit.
16. 17.

me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth, the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

Or, graciously
accepted,
or, much
graced:
See vers.
30.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

Isa. 7.
14.
Matt.
1. 21.

31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.

Dan.
7. 14.
Mic. 4. 7.

33 And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the hand-maid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-country with haste, into a citie of Juda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

65
41 And it came to pass, that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

45 And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord. Or, which believed that there

46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord,

47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his hand-maiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy is his name.

50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to generation.

51 He hath shewed strength with his arm, he hath scattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts. Isa. 51. 9. Psal. 33. 10.

52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. 1 Sam. 2. 6.

53 He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away. Psal. 34. 10.

54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy, Jer. 31. 3, 20.

55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed for ever. Gen. 17. 19.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her own house. Psal. 132. 11.

57 Now Elisabeths fulltime came, that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.

58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And

66

59 And it came to pass that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the childe; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered and said, Nor so; but he shall be called John.

61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, how he would have him called.

63 And he asked for a writing-table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-countrey of Judea.

66 And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of childe shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

¹ Psal. 132. 17. 69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David;

^m Jer. 23. 6. and 30. 10. 70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began.

71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.

72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant:

^a Gen. 22. 16. 73 The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear,

75 In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of

the Lord, to prepare his ways; || Or, ^{for}

77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, || by the remission of their sins, || Or, ^{bowels of the}

78 Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, || Or, ^{sun-ri-}

79 To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace. || Or, ^{sing, or, branch.}

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel. Num. 24. 17. Isa. 11. 1. Zech. 3. 8. Mal. 4. 2.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane empire. 6 The nativity of Christ. 8 One angel relateth it to the shepherds.

13 Many sing praises to God for it.

21 Christ is circumcised. 22 Mary purified.

28 Simeon and Anna prophesie of Christ: 40 who increaseth in wisdom, 46 questioneth in the temple with the doctours, 51 and is obedient to his parents.

And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria) || Or, ^{enrolled,}

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own citie.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the citie of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the citie of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David) ^a John 7. 42.

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.

7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. || Or, ^{the night-watches.}

9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them;

|| Or, things.

them; and they were sore afraid.

10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.

11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe unto you; Ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will to-wards men.

15 And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this childe.

18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

21 ^b And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called ^c Jesus, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord,

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, ^d Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord)

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to ^e that which is said in the law

of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.

27 And he came by the spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the childe Jesus, to do for him after the custome of the law,

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29 Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation:

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people:

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this childe is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a signe which shall be spoken against:

35 (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginie:

37 And she was a widow of about fourscore and four years: which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the

^b Gen. 17. 12.

^c Match. 1. 21.

^d Exod.

13. 2.

Num.

18. 15.

^e Levit.

12. 2, 6.

^f Isa. 8. 14.
Rom. 9. 32.

Or, Israel.

68 the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

Deut.
16. 1.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the pass-over.

42 And when he was twelve year old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custome of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the childe Jesus tarried behinde in Jerusalem; and Joseph & his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to have been in the companie, went a days journey; and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Fathers business?

50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisdom, and stature, and in favour with God and man.

CHAP. III.

1 The preaching and baptisme of John:

15 His testimony of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth John. 21 Christ baptized, receiveth testimonie from heaven. 23 The age and genealogie of Christ from Joseph upwards.

Now in the fiftenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius

Pilate being governour of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of I-turea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lyfani as the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sins; ^{Matth. 3. 1.}

4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. ^{Isa. 40. 3.}

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? ^{Matth. 3. 7.}

8 Bring forth therefore fruits || worthy of repentance, and begin || Or, not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. ^{meet for.}

9 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise. ^{James 2. 15. John 3. 17.}

12 Then came also publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Except no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall

|| Or,
age.

Or, *Put no man in fear.* *Or,* *allow-
ance.* *Or,* *a sus-
pense.* *Or,* *reasoned,
or, de-
bated.* *Matth.*
3. 11.

shall we do? And he said unto them,
|| Do violence to no man, neither ac-
cuse any falsely, and be content with
your || wages.

15 And as the people were || in
expectation, and all men || mused in
their hearts of John, whether he
were the Christ or not;

16 John answered, saying unto
them all, *Matth.* *3. 11.* I indeed baptize you
with water; but one mightier then I
cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I
am not worthy to unloose: he shall
baptize you with the holy Ghost, and
with fire.

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and
he will thoroughly purge his floor,
and will gather the wheat into his
garner; but the chaff he will burn
with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his
exhortation preached he unto the
people.

19 *Matth.* *14. 3.* But Herod the tetrarch, be-
ing reprov'd by him for Herodias
his brother Philips wife, and for all
the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that
he shut up John in prison.

21 Now when all the people were
baptized, *Matth.* *3. 13.* it came to pass that Je-
sus also being baptized, and pray-
ing, the heaven was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended
in a bodily shape like a dove upon
him, and a voice came from heaven,
which said, Thou art my beloved
Son, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to
be about thirtie years of age, being
(as was supposed) the son of Jo-
seph, which was the son of Heli,

24 Which was the son of Matthat,
which was the son of Levi, which
was the son of Melchi, which was
the son of Janna, which was the son
of Joseph,

25 Which was the son of Matta-
thias, which was the son of Amos,
which was the son of Naum, which
was the son of Esli, which was the
son of Nagge,

26 Which was the son of Maath,
which was the son of Mattathias,
which was the son of Semei, which
was the son of Joseph, which was
the son of Juda,

27 Which was the son of Jeanna,

which was the son of Rhesa, which
was the son of Zorobabel, which
was the son of Salathiel, which was
the son of Neri,

28 Which was the son of Melchi,
which was the son of Addi, which
was the son of Cosam, which was the
son of Elnodam, which was the son
of Er,

29 Which was the son of Jose,
which was the son of Eliezer, which
was the son of Jorim, which was the
son of Matthat, which was the son
of Levi,

30 Which was the son of Simeon,
which was the son of Juda, which
was the son of Joseph, which was the
son of Jonan, which was the son of
Eliakim,

31 Which was the son of Melea,
which was the son of Menan, which
was the son of Mattatha, which was
the son of Nathan, which was the
son of David,

32 Which was the son of Jesse,
which was the son of Obed, which
was the son of Booz, which was the
son of Salmon, which was the son of
Naasson,

33 Which was the son of Amina-
dab, which was the son of Aram,
which was the son of Esrom, which
was the son of Phares, which was the
son of Juda,

34 Which was the son of Jacob,
which was the son of Isaac, which
was the son of Abraham, which was
the son of Thara, which was the son
of Nachor,

35 Which was the son of Saruch,
which was the son of Ragau, which
was the son of Phalec, which was
the son of Heber, which was the son
of Sala,

36 Which was the son of Cainan,
which was the son of Arphaxad,
which was the son of Sem, which was
the son of Noe, which was the son of
Lamech,

37 Which was the son of Mathu-
sala, which was the son of Enoch,
which was the son of Jared, which
was the son of Maleleel, which was
the son of Cainan,

38 Which was the son of Enos,
which was the son of Seth, which
was the son of Adam, which was the
son of God.

CHAP. IV.

1 The temptation and fasting of Christ.
 13 He overcometh the devil: 14 be-
 ginneth to preach. 16 The people of
 Nazareth admire his gracious words.
 33 He cureth one possessed of a de-
 vil, 38 Peters mother in law, 40 and
 divers other sick persons. 41 The
 devils acknowledge Christ, and are
 reprov'd for it. 43 He preacheth
 through the cities.

• Matth.
 4. 1.

And ^a Jesus being full of the holy
 Ghost, returned from Jordan, and
 was led by the spirit into the wil-
 derness,

2 Being fourtie days tempted of
 the devil; and in those days he did
 eat nothing: and when they were
 ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil said unto him, If
 thou be the Son of God, command
 this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, say-
 ing, It is written, That man shall
 not live by bread alone, but by eve-
 ry word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up
 into an high mountain, shewed unto
 him all the kingdoms of the world
 in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him, All
 this power will I give thee, and the
 glory of them; for that is delivered
 unto me, and to whomsoever I will,
 I give it.

|| Or,
 fall down
 before
 me.

7 If thou therefore wilt || wor-
 ship me, all shall be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said
 unto him, Get thee behinde me, Sa-
 tan: for it is written, Thou shalt
 worship the Lord thy God, and him
 onely shalt thou serve.

9 And he brought him to Jerusa-
 lem, and set him on a pinnacle of the
 temple, and said unto him, If thou
 be the Son of God, cast thy self down
 from hence.

10 For it is written, He shall
 give his angels charge over thee, to
 keep thee.

11 And in their hands they shall
 bear thee up, lest at any time thou
 dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering, said un-
 to him, It is said, Thou shalt not
 tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had end-
 ed all the temptation, he depart-

ed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Jesus returned in the
 power of the spirit into Galilee: and
 there went out a fame of him through
 all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their syna-
 gogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And he came to ^b Naza- ^b Matth.
 reth, where he had been brought up: 13. 54.
 and, as his custome was, he went in-
 to the synagogue on the sabbath-
 day, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto
 him the book of the prophet Esaias;
 and when he had opened the book, he
 found the place where it was written,

18 ^c The spirit of the Lord is up- ^c Isa.
 on me, because he hath anointed me 61. 1.
 to preach the gospel to the poor, he
 hath sent me to heal the broken-
 hearted, to preach deliverance to
 the captives, and recovering of sight
 to the blinde, to set at libertie them
 that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable year
 of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he
 gave it again to the minister, and sat
 down: and the eyes of all them that
 were in the synagogue were fastened
 on him.

21 And he began to say unto
 them, This day is this scripture ful-
 filled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witness, and
 wondred at the gracious words
 which proceeded out of his mouth.
 And they said, Is not this Josephs
 son?

23 And he said unto them, Ye will
 surely say unto me this proverb,
 Physician, heal thy self: whatsoever
 we have heard done in Capernaum,
 do also here in thy countrey.

24 And he said, Verily I say unto
 you, No ^d prophet is accepted in his
 own countrey. ^d Matth.
 13. 57.

25 But I tell you of a truth, ^e ma-
 ny widows were in Israel in the days
 of Elias, when the heaven was shut
 up three years and six moneths, when
 great famine was throughout all the
 land: ^e 1 King.
 17. 9.

26 But unto none of them was
 Elias sent, save unto Sarepta a citie
 of Sidon, unto a woman that was a
 widow. ^f 2 Kings
 5. 14.

27 ^f And many lepers were in Is-
 rael

Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the || brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him down headlong.

30 But he passing through the mids of them went his way:

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath-days.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: ^{Matth. 7. 29.} for his word was with power.

^{Mark 1. 23.} 33 ¶ And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,

34 Saying, || Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the holy one of God.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the mids, he came out of him and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the countrey round about.

^{Matth. 8. 14.} 38 ¶ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever; and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

40 ¶ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

^{Mark 1. 34.} 41 ¶ And devils also came out of

many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not || to speak: for they knew that he was Christ. ⁷¹ Or, 10 say that they knew him to be Christ.

42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth the people out of Peters ship; 4 in a miraculous taking of fishes, sheweth how he will make him and his partners fishers of men; 12 cleanseth the leper; 16 prayeth in the wilderness; 18 healeth one sick of the palsie; 27 calleth Matthew the publicane; 29 eateth with sinners, as being the physician of souls; 34 foretelleth the fastings and afflictions of the apostles after his ascension; 36 and likeneth faint-hearted and weak disciples to old bottles and worn garments.

And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesareth,

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ships which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sat down and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their net brake.

7 And they beckened unto their partners, which were in the other ship,

72 ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken :

10 And so was also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all and followed him.

^b Matth.
8. 2.

12 ¶ And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leprosie : who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him : and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctours of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

^a Matth.
9. 2.

18 ¶ And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, and let him

down through the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsie) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

27 ¶ And after these things he ^a Matth. went forth, and saw a publicane ^{9. 9.} named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custome : and he said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great companie of publicanes, and of others that sat down with them.

30 But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and sinners?

31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said unto him, ^c Matth. Why do the disciples of John fast ^{9. 14.} often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink?

34 And he said unto them; Can ye

ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ reproveth the Pharisees blindness about the observation of the Sabbath, by scripture, reason, and miracle: 13 chooseth twelve apostles: 17 healeth the diseased: 20 preacheth to his disciples before the people of blessings and curses; 27 how we must love our enemies; 46 and joyn the obedience of good works to the hearing of the word, lest in the evil day of temptation we fall like an house built upon the face of the earth without any foundation.

Matth.
12. 1.

And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn-fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawfull to do on the sabbath-days?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull

to eat but for the priests alone? 73

5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 ^b And it came to pass also on ^b Matth. another sabbath, that he entred into 12. 9. the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day: that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the mids. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing, Is it lawfull on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples: ^c and ^c Matth. of them he chose twelve, whom also 10. 1. he named Apostles:

14 Simon (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas ^d the brother of ^d Jude 13 James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

17 ¶ And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases;

74

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude fought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, & healed them all.

* Matth. 5. 3. 20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, * Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of mans sake.

23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

* Amos 6. 1. 24 ¶ But wo unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation.

* Isa. 65. 13. 25 ¶ Wo unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep.

26 Wo unto you when all men shall speak well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

* Matth. 5. 44. 27 ¶ But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you:

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

* Matth. 5. 39. * 1 Cor. 6. 7. 29 ¶ And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: & him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coat also.

30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.

* Tob. 4. 15. Matth. 7. 12. 31 ¶ And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

* Matth. 5. 45. 32 ¶ For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.

33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

34 ¶ And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kinde unto the unthankfull, and to the evil.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.

37 ¶ Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosome. For with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again.

39 And he spake a parable unto them, ¶ Can the blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

40 ¶ The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master.

41 ¶ And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thy self beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 ¶ For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ And why call ye me Lord, Lord,

Lord, and do not the things which I say?

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ findeth a greater faith in the centurion a Gentile, then in any of the Jews; 10 healeth his servant being absent; 11 raiseth from death the widows son at Nain; 19 answereth Johns messengers with the declaration of his miracles; 24 testifieth to the people what opinion he held of John; 30 inveigheth against the Jews, who with neither the manners of John nor of Jesus could be won; 36 and sheweth by occasion of Mary Magdalene, how he is a friend to sinners, not to maintain them in sins, but to forgive them their sins, upon their faith and repentance

NOW when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, ^a he entred into Capernaum.

^a Matth. 8. 5.

2 And a certain centurions servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagoge.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

75

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me souldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, nor in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the bier, (and they that bare him stood || Or, still) and he said, Young man, I say *coffin.* unto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; & That God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 ^b And the disciples of John ^b Matth. shewed him of all these things. 11. 2.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them unto Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

76

21 And in that same hour he cured many of *their* infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many that were blinde he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously appparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more then a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet then John the Baptist: but he that is least in the Kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharisees ^d Mark desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alaba-ster-box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this* is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditour, which had two debtors: the one ought five hundred pence, and the other fiftie. See Matth. 18. 28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kifs: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kifs my feet.

46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Where-

|| Or, fru-
grated.

|| Or,
within

them-
selves.

Matth.

11. 16.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Women minister unto Christ of their substance. 4 Christ after he had preached from place to place, attended with his apostles, propoundeth the parable of the sower, 16 and of the candle; 21 declareth who are his mother, and brethren; 22 rebuketh the winds; 26 casteth the legion of devils out of the man, into the herd of swine; 37 is rejected of the Gadarenes; 43 healeth the woman of her bloody issue; 49 and raiseth from death Jairus daughter.

And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him;

2 And certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, ^a out of whom went seven devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, & many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ ^b And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable:

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the ways side, and it was troden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock, and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it,

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred-fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

11 ^c Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. ^c Matth. 13. 18.

12 Those by the way-side, are they that hear: then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock, are they, which when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, which when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ ^d No man when he hath light- ^d Matth. ed a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. 5. 15.

17 ^e For nothing is secret, that shall ^e Matth. not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad. 10. 26.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: ^f for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have. ^f Matth. 13. 12.

19 ¶ ^g Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press. ^g Or, thinketh that he hath.

20 And it was told him by certain, ^h Matth. which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. 12. 46.

21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren

^a Mark 16. 9.

^b Matth. 13. 2.

78

are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

^h Matth.
8. 23.

22 ¶ ^h Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they lunched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondred, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

ⁱ Matth.
8. 18.

26 ¶ ⁱ And they arrived at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city, a certain man which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into

them. And he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole citie, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to pass, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ ^k And behold, there came a ^k Matth.
9. 18.

man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelve years of age, & she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanchd.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they

they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and preass thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace)

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe onely, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth his apostles to work miracles, and to preach. 7 Herod desireth to see Christ. 17 Christ feedeth five thousand: 18 enquireth what opinion the world had of him; foretelleth his passion: 23 proposeth to all the pattern of his patience. 28 The transfiguration. 37 He healeth the lunatick: 43 again forewarneth his disciples of his passion: 46 commendeth humility: 51 biddeth them

to shew mildness towards all, without desire of revenge. 57 Divers would follow him, but upon conditions.

Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. ^a Matt. 10. 1.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdome of God, and to heal the sick.

3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.

4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that citie, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ Now Herod the tetrarch ^b Matt. heard of all that was done by him: ^c 14. 1. and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead:

8 And of some, that Eliashad appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the apostles when they were returned, told him all that they had done. ^c And he took them, and ^d Matt. went aside privately into a desert ^e 14. 13. place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 ^d And when the day began to ^d Matt. wear away, then came the twelve ^e 14. 15. and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two

80 two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

* Matth. 16. 13. 18 ¶ And it came to pass as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering, said, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them and commanded them to tell no man that thing,

† Matth. 17. 22. 22 Saying, ¶ The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

‡ Matth. 10. 38. 23 ¶ And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

§ Matth. 16. 26. 25 ¶ For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

¶ Mark 8. 36. 26 ¶ For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory and in his Fathers, and of the holy angels.

* Matth. 16. 28. 27 ¶ But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

28 ¶ And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and Or, James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

37 ¶ And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him. m Matth. 17. 14.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee look upon my son, for he is mine onely childe.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him that he foameth again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And

42 And as he was yet a coming the devil threw him down, and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him again to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: But while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

Matth. 17. 22. 44 ⁿ Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

Matth. 18. 1. Mark 9. 34. 46 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their hearts, took a childe, and set him by him,

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this childe in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

Mark 9. 38. 49 ¶ And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us, is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as ⁹ Elias did?

2 Kings 1. 10. 55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come

to destroy mens lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ And it came to pass that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. ¹ Matth. 8. 19.

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 ¶ And he said unto another, Follow me: But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. ¹ Matth. 8. 21.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ sendeth out at once seventy disciples to work miracles, and to preach: 17 admonisheth them to be humble, and wherein to rejoyce: 21 thanketh his Father for his grace: 23 magnifieth the happy estate of his church: 25 teacheth the lawyer how to attain eternal life, and to take every one for his neighbour that needeth his mercy: 41 reprehendeth Martha, and commendeth Mary her sister.

After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come. ¹ Matth. 10. 1.

2 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. ¹ Matth. 9. 37.

3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. ¹ Matth. 10. 16.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.

5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. ¹ Matth. 10. 11.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your

82 your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever citie ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever citie ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, then for that citie.

* Matt.
11. 21.

13 * Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

* Matt.
10. 40.

16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoyce not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rather rejoyce, because your names are written in heaven.

21 ¶ In that hour Jesus rejoyced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight

22 || All things are delivered to || Many me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him. *ancient copies add these words, And*

23 ¶ And he turned him unto his disciples, and said privately, * Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see. *turning to his disciples, he said.*

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. ** Matt. 13. 16.*

25 ¶ And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, * Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? ** Matt. 22. 35.*

26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde; and thy neighbour as thy self.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

29 But he willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half-dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyl and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two || pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

41 And Jesus answered, & said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, & troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull. And Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly: 11 assuring that God so will give us good things. 14 He casting out a dumb devil, rebuketh the blasphemous Pharisees: 28 and sheweth who are blessed: 29 preacheth to the people: 37 and reprehendeth the outward shew of holiness in the Pharisees, scribes, and lawyers.

And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, ^a Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdome come. Thy

will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. 83

3 Give us || day by day our daily || Or, bread. ^{for the day.}

4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine || in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him: || Or, out of his way.

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 ^b And I say unto you, Ask, and ^b Matth. it shall be given you: seek, and ye 7.7. shall finde: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 ^c If a son shall ask bread of ^c Matth. any of you that is a father, will he 7.9. give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake: and the people wondered.

15 But some of them said, ^d He ^d Matth. casteth out devils through Beelze- 9.34. bub, the chief of the devils. and 12.

16 And other tempting him, sought 24. of him a signe from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdome divided against it self, is brought to desolation: and a house divided against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

^c Matth.
12. 43.

24 ^e When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

27 ¶ And it came to pass as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it.

^f Matth.
12. 38.

29 ¶ And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a signe, and there shall no signe be given it, but the signe of Jonas the prophet.

30 For as Jonas was a signe unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, & condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a great-

er then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

33 ^b No man when he hath light- ^b Matth. 5. 15. ed a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel; but See on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. 15.

34 ^b The light of the body is the ^b Matth. 6. 22. eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 ⁱ And the Lord said unto him, ⁱ Matth. 23. 25. Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness.

40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather give alms of such ^{||} Or, things as you have: and behold, all ^{as you are able.} things are clean unto you.

42 But wo unto you Pharisees: for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, & pass over judgement and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

43 ^k Wo unto you Pharisees: for ^k Matth. 23. 6. ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then

45 ¶ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also.

¹ Matth. 23. 4. 46 ¹ And he said, Wo unto you also ye lawyers: for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be born, and ye your selves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

^m Matth. 23. 29. 47 ^m Wo unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;

^o Gen. 4. 8. 51 ^o From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation.

^o Matth. 23. 13. 52 ^o Wo unto you lawyers: for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in your selves, and them that were entering in, ye [¶] hindred.

[¶] Or, forbad. 53 And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

¹ Christ preacheth to his disciples to avoid hypocrisie, and fearfulness in publishing his doctrine: 13 warneth the people to beware of covetousness, by the parable of the rich man who set up greater barns. 22 We must not be over-carefull of earthly things; 31 but seek the kingdom of God, 33 give alms, 36 be ready at a knock to open to our Lord whensoever he cometh. 41 Christs ministers are to see to their charge, 49 and look for persecution. 54 The people must take this time of grace, 58 be-

cause it is a fearful thing to die 85 without reconciliation.

¹ IN ^a the mean time, when there ^a Matth. 16. 6. were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inso-much that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

2 ^b For there is nothing covered, ^b Matth. 10. 16. that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light: and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops.

4 ^c And I say unto you my ^c Matth. 10. 28. friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do.

5 But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two [¶] farthings, and not one of them [¶] See Matth. 10. 29. is forgotten before God?

7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value then many sparrows.

8 ^d Also I say unto you, Whoso- ^d Matth. 10. 32. ever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God. ² Tim. 2. 12.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

11 ^e And when they bring you ^e Matth. 10. 19. unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

86

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

|| Or,
do they
require
thy soul.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night || thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God.

† Matt.
6. 25.

22 ¶ And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have store-house nor barn; and God feedeth them: How much more are ye better then the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow: They toil not, they spin not: and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grass, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more will he

clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, || neither be ye of doubtful minde. || Or, live not in carefull suspense.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you.

32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Fathers good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

33 Sell that ye have, & give alms: provide your selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 ^h Let your loyns be girded about, and ^h your lights burning; ^h 1 Pet. 1. 13.

36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall finde watching: verily, I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those servants.

39 ⁱ And this know, that if the good-man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. ⁱ Matt. 24. 43.

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall finde so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken:

46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not ware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished?

51 ¶ Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shewre; and so it is.

55 And when ye see the southwinde blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the very last mite. 12. 42.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans, and others. 6 The fruitless fig-tree may not stand. 11 He healeth the crooked woman: 18 sheweth the powersfull working of the word in the hearts of his chosen, by the parable of the grain of mustard-seed, and of leaven: 24 exhorteth to enter in at the strait gate: 31 and reproveth Herod and Jerusalem.

There were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the towre in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and finde none: cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

¶ Or, cut him off.

¶ Or, pained. Matth. 10. 34.

1 Matth. 16. 2.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *her self*.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called *her* to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

• Matth. 13. 31. 18 ¶ Then said he, Unto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

¶ See Matt. 13. 31. 21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

• Matth. 9. 35. 22 And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

7. 13. 24 ¶ Strive to enter in at the

strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 ^d But he shall say, I tell you, ^d Matth. I know you not whence you are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquitie. 7. 23.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdome of God, and you *your selves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdome of God.

30 ^e And behold, there are last ^e Matth. which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last. 19. 30.

31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 ^f O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, ^f Matth. which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth* gather her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not? 23. 37.

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, untill the time come when ye shall say, Blessed ~~is~~ he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIV.

2 Christ healeth the dropſie on the ſabbath: 7 teacheth humilitie: 12 to feaſt the poor: 17 under the parable of the great ſupper, ſheweth how worldly-minded men, who contemn the word of God, ſhall be ſhut out of heaven. 25 Thoſe who will be his diſciples, to bear their croſſ, muſt make their accounts aforehand, leſt with ſhame they revolt from him afterwards, 34 and become altogether unprofitable, like ſalt that hath loſt his ſavour.

And it came to paſſ, as he went into the houſe of one of the chief Pharifees to eat bread on the ſabbath-day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropſie.

3 And Jeſus anſwering, ſpake unto the lawyers and Pharifees, ſaying, Is it lawfull to heal on the ſabbath-day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him go:

5 And anſwered them, ſaying, Which of you ſhall have an aſſ or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not ſtraightway pull him out on the ſabbath-day?

6 And they could not anſwer him again to theſe things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to thoſe which were bidden, when he marked how they choſe out the chief rooms; ſaying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, ſit not down in the higheſt room: leſt a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him;

9 And he that bade thee and him, come and ſay to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with ſhame to take the loweſt room.

10 ^a But when thou art bidden, go and ſit down in the loweſt room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may ſay unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then ſhalt thou have worſhip in the preſence of them that ſit at meat with thee.

11 ^b For whoſoever exalteth himſelf, ſhall be abaſed; and he that humbleth himſelf, ſhall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then ſaid he alſo to him that bade him, When thou makeſt a dinner or a ſupper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinfmen, nor thy rich neighbours; leſt they alſo bid thee again, and a recompenſe be made thee.

13 But when thou makeſt a feaſt, call ^c the poor, the maimed, the ^c Tob. lame, the blinde: 4. 7.

14 And thou ſhalt be bleſſed; for they cannot recompenſe thee: for thou ſhalt be recompenſed at the reſurrection of the juſt.

15 ¶ And when one of them that ſat at meat with him, heard theſe things, he ſaid unto him, ^d Bleſſed ^d Revel. is he that ſhall eat bread in the king- 19. 9. dome of God.

16 ^e Then ſaid he unto him, A ^e Matth. certain man made a great ſupper, 22. 2. and bade many:

17 And ſent his ſervant at ſupper-time to ſay to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one conſent began to make excuſe. The firſt ſaid unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I muſt needs go and ſee it: I pray thee have me excuſed.

19 And another ſaid, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excuſed.

20 And another ſaid, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that ſervant came, and ſhewed his lord theſe things. Then the maſter of the houſe being angry, ſaid to his ſervant, Go out quickly into the ſtreets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the ſervant ſaid, Lord, it is done as thou haſt commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord ſaid unto the ſervant, Go out into the high-ways and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my houſe may be filled.

24 For I ſay unto you, that none of thoſe men which were bidden, ſhall taſte of my ſupper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and ſaid unto them,

26 ^f If any man come to me, and 10. 37. hate

^a Prov. 25. 6, 7.

^b Matth. 23. 12.

^c Matth.

90 hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a towre, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 ¶ ⁸ Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAP. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheep: 8 of the piece of silver: 11 of the prodigal son.

Then drew near unto him all the publicanes & sinners for to hear him.

2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And he spake this parable unto them, saying,

4 ⁸ What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, untill he finde it?

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and

neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.

7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman having ten || pieces of silver, if she lose one || *Drach-* piece, doth not light a candle, and *ma* here sweep the house, and seek diligently *transla-* till she finde it? *ted a*

9 And when she hath found it, *piece of* she calleth her friends and her neigh- *silver,* bours together, saying, Rejoyce with *is the* me, for I have found the piece which *eighth* I had lost. *part*

10 Likewise I say unto you, There *of an* is joy in the presence of the angels *ounce,* of God, over one sinner that re- *which* penteth. *cometh*

11 ¶ And he said, A certain man *to seven* had two sons: *pence*

12 And the younger of them said *half-pe-* to his father, Father, give me the *ny,* and portion of goods that falleth to me. *is equal* And he divided unto them his li- *to the* ving. *Romane*

13 And not many days after, the *peny,* younger son gathered all together, *Matth.* and took his journey into a far coun- *18. 28.* trey, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joyned himself to a citizen of that countrey; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my fathers have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way

8 Matth.
5. 13.

8 Matth.
18. 12.

way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat and be merry.

24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and found.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29 And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the unjust steward.

14 Christ reproveth the hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees. 19 The rich glutton, and Lazarus the begger.

And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward; and the

same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So he called every one of his lords debtors unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?

6 And he said, An hundred || measures of oyl. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred || measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the || mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithfull in the unrighteous || mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye have not been faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 ¶ No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who

92 were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify your selves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

^b Matth. 11. 11. 16 ^b The law and the prophets were untill John: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

^c Matth. 5. 18. 17 ^c And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, then one tittle of the law to fail

^d Matth. 5. 32. 18 ^d Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certain begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich mans table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to pass that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, & seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life-time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee

therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgive another.

6 The power of faith. 7 How we are bound to God, and not he to us.

11 He healeth ten lepers. 22 Of the kingdome of God, and the coming of the Son of man.

Then said he unto the disciples,

1 It is impossible but that offences will come: but wo unto him ^a Matth. 18. 7. through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selves: ^b If ^b Matth. 18. 21. thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 ^c And the Lord said, If ye had ^c Matth. 17. 20. faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattel, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and after-

afterward thou shalt eat and drink ?

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 ¶ And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:

13 And they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus Master, have mercy on us,

14 And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, ^d Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on *his* face at his feet giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come; he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not || with observation.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or, lo there: for behold, the kingdom of God is || within you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 ^e And they shall say to you, See here, or, see there: go not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as the lightning that light-

neth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

26 ^f And as it was in the days of ^f Gen. 7. Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, untill the day that Noe entered into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all.

28 ^g Likewise also as it was in the ^g Gen. days of Lot, they did eat, they drank, 19. they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all:

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 ^h Remember Lots wife. ^h Gen.

33 ⁱ Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it: and who- ⁱ 19. 26. soever shall lose his life, shall pre- ⁱ Matth. 16. 25. serve it.

34 ^k I tell you, in that night there ^k Matth. shall be two men in one bed; the one 24. 40. shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 || Two men shall be in the field; || This 36 the one shall be taken, and the other verse is left. wanting

37 And they answered and said in most unto him, ^l Where, Lord? And he of the said unto them, Wheresoever the bo- Greek dy is, thither will the eagles be ga- copies. thered together. ^l Matth. 24. 28.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Of the importunate widow. 9 Of the Pharisee and the publicane. 15 Children brought to Christ. 18 A ruler that would follow Christ, but is hindered by his riches. 28 The reward of them, that leave all for his

|| Or, with out- ward shew. || Or, among you.

^e Matth. 24. 23.

94

his sake. 31 He forebneweth his death,
35 and restoreth a blinde man to
his sight.

And he spake a parable unto
them, to this end, that men ought

1 Thess. 5. 17. always to pray, and not to faint;

2 Saying, There was in a citie a
judge, which feared not God, neither
regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that
city, and she came unto him, saying,
Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while :
but afterward he said within himself,
Though I fear not God, nor regard
man;

5 Yet because this widow trou-
bleth me, I will avenge her, lest by
her continual coming she weary
me.

6 And the Lord said, Hear what
the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his
own elect, which crie day and night
unto him, though he bear long with
them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge
them speedily. Nevertheless, when
the Son of man cometh, shall he
finde faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto
certain which trusted in themselves
that they were righteous, and despi-
sed others :

|| Or,
as being
righteous.

10 Two men went up into the tem-
ple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and
the other a publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed
thus with himself, God I thank thee,
that I am not as other men are, ex-
tortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even
as this publicane.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give
tithes of all that I possess.

13 And the publicane standing a-
far off, would not lift up so much as
his eyes unto heaven, but smote up-
on his breast, saying, God be merci-
full to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down
to his house justified rather than the
other : for every one that exalteth
himself, shall be abased; and he that
humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

6 Matth.
23. 12.

15 And they brought unto him al-
so infants, that he would touch them:
but when his disciples saw it, they
rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him,
and said, Suffer little children to
come unto me, and forbid them not:
for of such is the kingdome of
God.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whoso-
ever shall not receive the kingdome
of God as a little childe, shall in no
wise enter therein.

18 And a certain ruler asked him,
saying, Good Master, what shall I
do to inherit eternal life? 19. 16.

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why
callest thou me good? none is good
save one, that is, God.

20 Thou knowest the command-
ments, Do not commit adulterie, Do
not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear
false witness, Honour thy father and
thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I
kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these
things, he said unto him, Yet lackest
thou one thing: sell all that thou
hast, and distribute unto the poor,
and thou shalt have treasure in hea-
ven: and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he
was very sorrowfull: for he was very
rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he
was very sorrowfull, he said, How
hardly shall they that have riches
enter into the kingdome of God!

25 For it is easier for a camel to
go through a needles eye, then for
a rich man to enter into the king-
dome of God.

26 And they that heard it, said,
Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which
are impossible with men, are possible
with God.

28 Then Peter said, Lo, we have
left all, and followed thee. 19. 27.

29 And he said unto them, Verily
I say unto you, there is no man that
hath left house, or parents, or bre-
thren, or wife, or children for the
kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive mani-
fold more in this present time, and in
the world to come life everlasting.

31 Then he took unto him the
twelve, and said unto them, Behold,
we go up to Jerusalem, and all things
that are written by the prophets
con-

concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated and spitted on.

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

¹Matt.
20, 29.

35 ¶ And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blinde man sat by the way-side begging;

36 And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

¹ Of Zaccheus a publicane. ¹¹ The ten pieces of money. ²⁸ Christ rideth into Jerusalem with triumph: ⁴¹ weepeth over it: ⁴⁵ driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple: ⁴⁷ teaching daily in it. The rulers would have destroyed him, but for fear of the people.

AND Jesus entred and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and could not for the press, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycomore-tree to see him; for he was to pass that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor: and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him four-fold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is the son of Abraham.

10 ^a For the Son of man is come ^a Matt. to seek and to save that which was ^{18, 11.} lost.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediately appear.

12 ^b He said therefore, A certain ^b Matt. noble man went into a far countrey ^{25. 14.} to receive for himself a kingdome, and to return;

13 And he called his ten servants, here and delivered them ten ^{||} pounds, translated a ^{||} Mina and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received according to the kingdome, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, saying, I have given you five shillings the one, and thou hast gained ten pounds, which according to the five shillings thou gavest me, thou hast gained ten pounds more.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And

96

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithfull in a very little, have thou authoritie over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound which I have kept: laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

Matth.
13.12.

26 For I say unto you, ^c That unto every one which hath, shall be given: and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

Matth.
21.1.

29 ^d And it came to pass when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *the* mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against *you*; in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring *him* hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose *him*? thus shall ye say

unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen,

38 Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude, said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately crie out.

41 ¶ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee, and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another: because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 ^e And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that ^e Math.
21.12.
fold therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer:

prayer: but ye have made it a den of theeves.

47 And he taught dayly in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might do: for all the people || were very attentive to hear him.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ avoucheth his authority, by a question of Johns baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard. 19 Of giving tribute to Cesar. 27 He convinceth the Sadducees that denied the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the son of David. 45 He warneth his disciples to beware of the scribes.

Matth. 21.23.

And^a it came to pass, that on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon him, with the elders,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, By what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing; and answer me:

4 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, from heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

Matth. 21.33.

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: ^b A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey for a long time.

10 And at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11 And again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent the third; and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, ^c The stone which the builders re- ^d ^e ^f ^g ^h ⁱ ^j ^k ^l ^m ⁿ ^o ^p ^q ^r ^s ^t ^u ^v ^w ^x ^y ^z ^{aa} ^{ab} ^{ac} ^{ad} ^{ae} ^{af} ^{ag} ^{ah} ^{ai} ^{aj} ^{ak} ^{al} ^{am} ^{an} ^{ao} ^{ap} ^{aq} ^{ar} ^{as} ^{at} ^{au} ^{av} ^{aw} ^{ax} ^{ay} ^{az} ^{ba} ^{bb} ^{bc} ^{bd} ^{be} ^{bf} ^{bg} ^{bh} ^{bi} ^{bj} ^{bk} ^{bl} ^{bm} ^{bn} ^{bo} ^{bp} ^{bq} ^{br} ^{bs} ^{bt} ^{bu} ^{bv} ^{bw} ^{bx} ^{by} ^{bz} ^{ca} ^{cb} ^{cc} ^{cd} ^{ce} ^{cf} ^{cg} ^{ch} ^{ci} ^{cj} ^{ck} ^{cl} ^{cm} ^{cn} ^{co} ^{cp} ^{cq} ^{cr} ^{cs} ^{ct} ^{cu} ^{cv} ^{cw} ^{cx} ^{cy} ^{cz} ^{da} ^{db} ^{dc} ^{dd} ^{de} ^{df} ^{dg} ^{dh} ^{di} ^{dj} ^{dk} ^{dl} ^{dm} ^{dn} ^{do} ^{dp} ^{dq} ^{dr} ^{ds} ^{dt} ^{du} ^{dv} ^{dw} ^{dx} ^{dy} ^{dz} ^{ea} ^{eb} ^{ec} ^{ed} ^{ee} ^{ef} ^{eg} ^{eh} ^{ei} ^{ej} ^{ek} ^{el} ^{em} ^{en} ^{eo} ^{ep} ^{eq} ^{er} ^{es} ^{et} ^{eu} ^{ev} ^{ew} ^{ex} ^{ey} ^{ez} ^{fa} ^{fb} ^{fc} ^{fd} ^{fe} ^{ff} ^{fg} ^{fh} ^{fi} ^{fj} ^{fk} ^{fl} ^{fm} ^{fn} ^{fo} ^{fp} ^{fq} ^{fr} ^{fs} ^{ft} ^{fu} ^{fv} ^{fw} ^{fx} ^{fy} ^{fz} ^{ga} ^{gb} ^{gc} ^{gd} ^{ge} ^{gf} ^{gg} ^{gh} ^{gi} ^{gj} ^{gk} ^{gl} ^{gm} ^{gn} ^{go} ^{gp} ^{gq} ^{gr} ^{gs} ^{gt} ^{gu} ^{gv} ^{gw} ^{gx} ^{gy} ^{gz} ^{ha} ^{hb} ^{hc} ^{hd} ^{he} ^{hf} ^{hg} ^{hh} ^{hi} ^{hj} ^{hk} ^{hl} ^{hm} ^{hn} ^{ho} ^{hp} ^{hq} ^{hr} ^{hs} ^{ht} ^{hu} ^{hv} ^{hw} ^{hx} ^{hy} ^{hz} ^{ia} ^{ib} ^{ic} ^{id} ^{ie} ^{if} ^{ig} ^{ih} ⁱⁱ ^{ij} ^{ik} ^{il} ^{im} ⁱⁿ ^{io} ^{ip} ^{iq} ^{ir} ^{is} ^{it} ^{iu} ^{iv} ^{iw} ^{ix} ^{iy} ^{iz} ^{ja} ^{jb} ^{jc} ^{jd} ^{je} ^{jf} ^{jj} ^{jk} ^{jl} ^{jm} ^{jn} ^{jo} ^{jp} ^{jq} ^{jr} ^{js} ^{jt} ^{ju} ^{jv} ^{jw} ^{jx} ^{ky} ^{kz} ^{la} ^{lb} ^{lc} ^{ld} ^{le} ^{lf} ^{lg} ^{lh} ^{li} ^{lj} ^{lk} ^{ll} ^{lm} ^{ln} ^{lo} ^{lp} ^{lq} ^{lr} ^{ls} ^{lt} ^{lu} ^{lv} ^{lw} ^{lx} ^{ly} ^{lz} ^{ma} ^{mb} ^{mc} ^{md} ^{me} ^{mf} ^{mg} ^{mh} ^{mi} ^{mj} ^{mk} ^{ml} ^{mm} ^{mn} ^{mo} ^{mp} ^{mq} ^{mr} ^{ms} ^{mt} ^{mu} ^{mv} ^{mw} ^{mx} ^{my} ^{mz} ^{na} ^{nb} ^{nc} nd ^{ne} ^{nf} ^{ng} ^{nh} ⁿⁱ ^{nj} ^{nk} ^{nl} ^{nm} ⁿⁿ ^{no} ^{np} ^{nq} ^{nr} ^{ns} ^{nt} ^{nu} ^{nv} ^{nw} ^{nx} ^{ny} ^{nz} ^{oa} ^{ob} ^{oc} ^{od} ^{oe} ^{of} ^{og} ^{oh} ^{oi} ^{oj} ^{ok} ^{ol} ^{om} ^{on} ^{oo} ^{op} ^{oq} ^{or} ^{os} ^{ot} ^{ou} ^{ov} ^{ow} ^{ox} ^{oy} ^{oz} ^{pa} ^{pb} ^{pc} ^{pd} ^{pe} ^{pf} ^{pg} ^{ph} ^{pi} ^{pj} ^{pk} ^{pl} ^{pm} ^{pn} ^{po} ^{pp} ^{pq} ^{pr} ^{ps} ^{pt} ^{pu} ^{pv} ^{pw} ^{px} ^{py} ^{pz} ^{qa} ^{qb} ^{qc} ^{qd} ^{qe} ^{qf} ^{qg} ^{qh} ^{qi} ^{qj} ^{qk} ^{ql} ^{qm} ^{qn} ^{qo} ^{qp} ^{qq} ^{qr} ^{qs} ^{qt} ^{qu} ^{qv} ^{qw} ^{qx} ^{qy} ^{qz} ^{ra} ^{rb} ^{rc} rd ^{re} ^{rf} ^{rg} ^{rh} ^{ri} ^{rj} ^{rk} ^{rl} ^{rm} ^{rn} ^{ro} ^{rp} ^{rq} ^{rr} ^{rs} ^{rt} ^{ru} ^{rv} ^{rw} ^{rx} ^{ry} ^{rz} ^{sa} ^{sb} ^{sc} ^{sd} ^{se} ^{sf} ^{sg} ^{sh} ^{si} ^{sj} ^{sk} ^{sl} sm ^{sn} ^{so} ^{sp} ^{sq} ^{sr} ^{ss} st ^{su} ^{sv} ^{sw} ^{sx} ^{sy} ^{sz} ^{ta} ^{tb} ^{tc} ^{td} ^{te} ^{tf} ^{tg} th ^{ti} ^{tj} ^{tk} ^{tl} tm ^{tn} ^{to} ^{tp} ^{tq} ^{tr} ^{ts} ^{tt} ^{tu} ^{tv} ^{tw} ^{tx} ^{ty} ^{tz} ^{ua} ^{ub} ^{uc} ^{ud} ^{ue} ^{uf} ^{ug} ^{uh} ^{ui} ^{uj} ^{uk} ^{ul} ^{um} ^{un} ^{uo} ^{up} ^{uq} ^{ur} ^{us} ^{ut} ^{uu} ^{uv} ^{uw} ^{ux} ^{uy} ^{uz} ^{va} ^{vb} ^{vc} ^{vd} ^{ve} ^{vf} ^{vg} ^{vh} ^{vi} ^{vj} ^{vk} ^{vl} ^{vm} ^{vn} ^{vo} ^{vp} ^{vq} ^{vr} ^{vs} ^{vt} ^{vu} ^{vv} ^{vw} ^{vx} ^{vy} ^{vz} ^{wa} ^{wb} ^{wc} ^{wd} ^{we} ^{wf} ^{wg} ^{wh} ^{wi} ^{wj} ^{wk} ^{wl} ^{wm} ^{wn} ^{wo} ^{wp} ^{wq} ^{wr} ^{ws} ^{wt} ^{wu} ^{wv} ^{ww} ^{wx} ^{wy} ^{wz} ^{xa} ^{xb} ^{xc} ^{xd} ^{xe} ^{xf} ^{xg} ^{xh} ^{xi} ^{xj} ^{xk} ^{xl} ^{xm} ^{xn} ^{xo} ^{xp} ^{xq} ^{xr} ^{xs} ^{xt} ^{xu} ^{xv} ^{xw} ^{xx} ^{xy} ^{xz} ^{ya} ^{yb} ^{yc} ^{yd} ^{ye} ^{yf} ^{yg} ^{yh} ^{yi} ^{yj} ^{yk} ^{yl} ^{ym} ^{yn} ^{yo} ^{yp} ^{yq} ^{yr} ^{ys} ^{yt} ^{yu} ^{yv} ^{yw} ^{yx} ^{yy} ^{yz} ^{za} ^{zb} ^{zc} ^{zd} ^{ze} ^{zf} ^{zg} ^{zh} ^{zi} ^{zj} ^{zk} ^{zl} ^{zm} ^{zn} ^{zo} ^{zp} ^{zq} ^{zr} ^{zs} ^{zt} ^{zu} ^{zv} ^{zw} ^{zx} ^{zy} ^{zz} ^{aa} ^{ab} ^{ac} ^{ad} ^{ae} ^{af} ^{ag} ^{ah} ^{ai} ^{aj} ^{ak} ^{al} ^{am} ^{an} ^{ao} ^{ap} ^{aq} ^{ar} ^{as} ^{at} ^{au} ^{av} ^{aw} ^{ax} ^{ay} ^{az} ^{ba} ^{bb} ^{bc} ^{bd} ^{be} ^{bf} ^{bg} ^{bh} ^{bi} ^{bj} ^{bk} ^{bl} ^{bm} ^{bn} ^{bo} ^{bp} ^{bq} ^{br} ^{bs} ^{bt} ^{bu} ^{bv} ^{bw} ^{bx} ^{by} ^{bz} ^{ca} ^{cb} ^{cc} ^{cd} ^{ce} ^{cf} ^{cg} ^{ch} ^{ci} ^{cj} ^{ck} ^{cl} ^{cm} ^{cn} ^{co} ^{cp} ^{cq} ^{cr} ^{cs} ^{ct} ^{cu} ^{cv} ^{cw} ^{cx} ^{cy} ^{cz} ^{da} ^{db} ^{dc} ^{dd} ^{de} ^{df} ^{dg} ^{dh} ^{di} ^{dj} ^{dk} ^{dl} ^{dm} ^{dn} ^{do} ^{dp} ^{dq} ^{dr} ^{ds} ^{dt} ^{du} ^{dv} ^{dw} ^{dx} ^{dy} ^{dz} ^{ea} ^{eb} ^{ec} ^{ed} ^{ee} ^{ef} ^{eg} ^{eh} ^{ei} ^{ej} ^{ek} ^{el} ^{em} ^{en} ^{eo} ^{ep} ^{eq} ^{er} ^{es} ^{et} ^{eu} ^{ev} ^{ew} ^{ex} ^{ey} ^{ez} ^{fa} ^{fb} ^{fc} ^{fd} ^{fe} ^{ff} ^{fg} ^{fh} ^{fi} ^{fj} ^{fk} ^{fl} ^{fm} ^{fn} ^{fo} ^{fp} ^{fq} ^{fr} ^{fs} ^{ft} ^{fu} ^{fv} ^{fw} ^{fx} ^{fy} ^{fz} ^{ga} ^{gb} ^{gc} ^{gd} ^{ge} ^{gf} ^{gg} ^{gh} ^{gi} ^{gj} ^{gk} ^{gl} ^{gm} ^{gn} ^{go} ^{gp} ^{gq} ^{gr} ^{gs} ^{gt} ^{gu} ^{gv} ^{gw} ^{gx} ^{gy} ^{gz} ^{ha} ^{hb} ^{hc} ^{hd} ^{he} ^{hf} ^{hg} ^{hh} ^{hi} ^{hj} ^{hk} ^{hl} ^{hm} ^{hn} ^{ho} ^{hp} ^{hq} ^{hr} ^{hs} ^{ht} ^{hu} ^{hv} ^{hw} ^{hx} ^{hy} ^{hz} ^{ia} ^{ib} ^{ic} ^{id} ^{ie} ^{if} ^{ig} ^{ih} ⁱⁱ ^{ij} ^{ik} ^{il} ^{im} ⁱⁿ ^{io} ^{ip} ^{iq} ^{ir} ^{is} ^{it} ^{iu} ^{iv} ^{iw} ^{ix} ^{iy} ^{iz} ^{ja} ^{jb} ^{jc} ^{jd} ^{je} ^{jf} ^{jj} ^{jk} ^{jl} ^{jm} ^{jn} ^{jo} ^{jp} ^{jq} ^{jr} ^{js} ^{jt} ^{ju} ^{jv} ^{jw} ^{jx} ^{ky} ^{kz} ^{la} ^{lb} ^{lc} ^{ld} ^{le} ^{lf} ^{lg} ^{lh} ^{li} ^{lj} ^{lk} ^{ll} ^{lm} ^{ln} ^{lo} ^{lp} ^{lq} ^{lr} ^{ls} ^{lt} ^{lu} ^{lv} ^{lw} ^{lx} ^{ly} ^{lz} ^{ma} ^{mb} ^{mc} ^{md} ^{me} ^{mf} ^{mg} ^{mh} ^{mi} ^{mj} ^{mk} ^{ml} ^{mm} ^{mn} ^{mo} ^{mp} ^{mq} ^{mr} ^{ms} ^{mt} ^{mu} ^{mv} ^{mw} ^{mx} ^{my} ^{mz} ^{na} ^{nb} ^{nc} nd ^{ne} ^{nf} ^{ng} ^{nh} ⁿⁱ ^{nj} ^{nk} ^{nl} ^{nm} ⁿⁿ ^{no} ^{np} ^{nq} ^{nr} ^{ns} ^{nt} ^{nu} ^{nv} ^{nw} ^{nx} ^{ny} ^{nz} ^{oa} ^{ob} ^{oc} ^{od} ^{oe} ^{of} ^{og} ^{oh} ^{oi} ^{oj} ^{ok} ^{ol} ^{om} ^{on} ^{oo} ^{op} ^{oq} ^{or} ^{os} ^{ot} ^{ou} ^{ov} ^{ow} ^{ox} ^{oy} ^{oz} ^{pa} ^{pb} ^{pc} ^{pd} ^{pe} ^{pf} ^{pg} ^{ph} ^{pi} ^{pj} ^{pk} ^{pl} ^{pm} ^{pn} ^{po} ^{pp} ^{pq} ^{pr} ^{ps} ^{pt} ^{pu} ^{pv} ^{pw} ^{px} ^{py} ^{pz} ^{qa} ^{qb} ^{qc} ^{qd} ^{qe} ^{qf} ^{qg} ^{qh} ^{qi} ^{qj} ^{qk} ^{ql} ^{qm} ^{qn} ^{qo} ^{qp} ^{qq} ^{qr} ^{qs} ^{qt} ^{qu} ^{qv} ^{qw} ^{qx} ^{qy} ^{qz} ^{ra} ^{rb} ^{rc} rd ^{re} ^{rf} ^{rg} ^{rh} ^{ri} ^{rj} ^{rk} ^{rl} ^{rm} ^{rn} ^{ro} ^{rp} ^{rq} ^{rr} ^{rs} ^{rt} ^{ru} ^{rv} ^{rw} ^{rx} ^{ry} ^{rz} ^{sa} ^{sb} ^{sc} ^{sd} ^{se} ^{sf} ^{sg} ^{sh} ^{si} ^{sj} ^{sk} ^{sl} sm ^{sn} ^{so} ^{sp} ^{sq} ^{sr} ^{ss} st ^{su} ^{sv} ^{sw} ^{sx} ^{sy} ^{sz} ^{ta} ^{tb} ^{tc} ^{td} ^{te} ^{tf} ^{tg} th ^{ti} ^{tj} ^{tk} ^{tl} tm ^{tn} ^{to} ^{tp} ^{tq} ^{tr} ^{ts} ^{tt} ^{tu} ^{tv} ^{tw} ^{tx} ^{ty} ^{tz} ^{ua} ^{ub} ^{uc} ^{ud} ^{ue} ^{uf} ^{ug} ^{uh} ^{ui} ^{uj} ^{uk} ^{ul} ^{um} ^{un} ^{uo} ^{up} ^{uq} ^{ur} ^{us} ^{ut} ^{uu} ^{uv} ^{uw} ^{ux} ^{uy} ^{uz} ^{va} ^{vb} ^{vc} ^{vd} ^{ve} ^{vf} ^{vg} ^{vh} ^{vi} ^{vj} ^{vk} ^{vl} ^{vm} ^{vn} ^{vo} ^{vp} ^{vq} ^{vr} ^{vs} ^{vt} ^{vu} ^{vv} ^{vw} ^{vx} ^{vy} ^{vz} ^{wa} ^{wb} ^{wc} ^{wd} ^{we} ^{wf} ^{wg} ^{wh} ^{wi} ^{wj} ^{wk} ^{wl} ^{wm} ^{wn} ^{wo} ^{wp} ^{wq} ^{wr} ^{ws} ^{wt} ^{wu} ^{wv} ^{ww} ^{wx} ^{wy} ^{wz} ^{xa} ^{xb} ^{xc} ^{xd} ^{xe} ^{xf} ^{xg} ^{xh} ^{xi} ^{xj} ^{xk} ^{xl} ^{xm} ^{xn} ^{xo} ^{xp} ^{xq} ^{xr} ^{xs} ^{xt} ^{xu} ^{xv} ^{xw} ^{xx} ^{xy} ^{xz} ^{ya} ^{yb} ^{yc} ^{yd} ^{ye} ^{yf} ^{yg} ^{yh} ^{yi} ^{yj} ^{yk} ^{yl} ^{ym} ^{yn} ^{yo} ^{yp} ^{yq} ^{yr} ^{ys} ^{yt} ^{yu} ^{yv} ^{yw} ^{yx} ^{yy} ^{yz} ^{za} ^{zb} ^{zc} ^{zd} ^{ze} ^{zf} ^{zg} ^{zh} ^{zi} ^{zj} ^{zk} ^{zl} ^{zm} ^{zn} ^{zo} ^{zp} ^{zq} ^{zr} ^{zs} ^{zt} ^{zu} ^{zv} ^{zw} ^{zx} ^{zy} ^{zz} ^{aa} ^{ab} ^{ac} ^{ad} ^{ae} ^{af} ^{ag} ^{ah} ^{ai} ^{aj} ^{ak} ^{al} ^{am} ^{an} ^{ao} ^{ap} ^{aq} ^{ar} ^{as} ^{at} ^{au} ^{av} ^{aw} ^{ax} ^{ay} ^{az} ^{ba} ^{bb} ^{bc} ^{bd} ^{be} ^{bf} ^{bg} ^{bh} ^{bi} ^{bj} ^{bk} ^{bl} ^{bm} ^{bn} ^{bo} ^{bp} ^{bq} ^{br} ^{bs} ^{bt} ^{bu} ^{bv} ^{bw} ^{bx} ^{by} ^{bz} ^{ca} ^{cb} ^{cc} ^{cd} ^{ce} ^{cf} ^{cg} ^{ch} ^{ci} ^{cj} ^{ck} ^{cl} ^{cm} ^{cn} ^{co} ^{cp} ^{cq} ^{cr} ^{cs} ^{ct} ^{cu} ^{cv} ^{cw} ^{cx} ^{cy} ^{cz} ^{da} ^{db} ^{dc} ^{dd} ^{de} ^{df} ^{dg} ^{dh} ^{di} ^{dj} ^{dk} ^{dl} ^{dm} ^{dn} ^{do} ^{dp} ^{dq} ^{dr} ^{ds} ^{dt} ^{du} ^{dv} ^{dw} ^{dx} ^{dy} ^{dz} ^{ea} ^{eb} ^{ec} ^{ed} ^{ee} ^{ef} ^{eg} ^{eh} ^{ei} ^{ej} ^{ek} ^{el} ^{em} ^{en} ^{eo} ^{ep} ^{eq} ^{er} ^{es} ^{et} ^{eu} ^{ev} ^{ew} ^{ex} ^{ey} ^{ez} ^{fa} ^{fb} ^{fc} ^{fd} ^{fe} ^{ff} ^{fg} ^{fh} ^{fi} ^{fj} ^{fk} ^{fl} ^{fm} ^{fn} ^{fo} ^{fp} ^{fq} ^{fr} ^{fs} ^{ft} ^{fu} ^{fv} ^{fw} ^{fx} ^{fy} ^{fz} ^{ga} ^{gb} ^{gc} ^{gd} ^{ge} ^{gf} ^{gg} ^{gh} ^{gi} ^{gj} ^{gk} ^{gl} ^{gm} ^{gn} ^{go} ^{gp} ^{gq} ^{gr} ^{gs} ^{gt} ^{gu} ^{gv} ^{gw} ^{gx} ^{gy} ^{gz} ^{ha} ^{hb} ^{hc} ^{hd} ^{he} ^{hf} ^{hg} ^{hh} ^{hi} ^{hj} ^{hk} ^{hl} ^{hm} ^{hn} ^{ho} ^{hp} ^{hq} ^{hr} ^{hs} ^{ht} ^{hu} ^{hv} ^{hw} ^{hx} ^{hy}

98

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

^c Matt.
22. 23.

27 ¶ Then came to him certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

31 And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

^f Exod.
3. 6.

37 Now that the dead are raised, ^f even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

^g Matt.
22. 42.

41 And he said unto them, ^g How say they that Christ is Davids son?

^h Psal.
110. 1.

42 And David himself saith in the book of psalms, ^h The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,

46 ⁱ Beware of the scribes, which ⁱ Matt. desire to walk in long robes, and ^{23. 5.} love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts;

47 Which devour widows houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

¹ Christ commendeth the poor widow.

⁵ He foretelleth the destruction of the temple, and of the city Jerusalem: ²⁵ The signes also which shall be before the last day. ³⁴ He exhorteth them to be watchfull.

And he looked up, ^a and saw the ^a Mark rich men casting their gifts into ^{12. 41.} the treasure.

² And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in thither two ^{||}mites. ^{||} See

³ And he said, Of a truth I say, ^{||} un- ^{||} Mark to you, that this poor widow hath cast ^{12. 42.} in more then they all.

⁴ For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in all the living that she had.

⁵ ¶ And as some spake of the ^b Matt. temple, how it was adorned with ^{24. 1.} goodly stones, and gifts, he said,

⁶ As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

⁷ And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe ^{will there be} when these things shall come to pass?

⁸ And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

⁹ But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass, but the end is not by and by.

¹⁰ Then said he unto them, Na- ^c Matt. tion shall rise against nation, and ^{24. 7.} kingdome against kingdome:

¹¹ And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and

and pestilences, and fearfull sights, and great signes shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my names sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

⁴ Matt. 19. 19. 14 ^a Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before, what ye shall answer.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gain-say, nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake.

⁵ Matt. 10. 30. 18 ^e But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

19 In your patience possess ye your souls.

⁶ Matt. 24. 15. 20 ^f And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the mountains; & let them which are in the midst of it, depart out; and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those days: for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be troden down of the Gentiles, untill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

⁷ Matt. 24. 29. 25 ^g And there shall be signes in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring;

26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those

things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees;

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, & drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ.

3 Satan prepareth Judas to betray him. 7 The apostles prepare the pass-over. 19 Christ instituteth his holy supper: 21 covertly foretelleth of the traitour: 24 dehortheth the rest of his apostles from ambition: 32 assureth Peter his faith shoul'd not fail, 34 and yet he should denie him thrice. 39 He prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood: 47 is betrayed with a kiss:

100

50 he healeth Malchus ear. 54 He is thrice denied of Peter, 63 shamefully abused, 66 and confesseth himself to be the Son of God.

• Matth. 26. 2. **N**ow ^a the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the pass-over.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

• Matth. 26. 14. 3 ¶ ^b Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them **||** in the absence of the multitude.

|| Or, without tumult. • Matth. 26. 17.

7 ¶ ^c Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the pass-over must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the pass-over, that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the good-man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the pass-over with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make readie.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made readie the pass-over.

• Matth. 26. 20. 14 ^d And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

|| Or, I have heartily desired. 15 And he said unto them, **||** With desire I have desired to eat this pass-over with you before I suffer.

16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, untill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and

divide it among your selves.

18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, untill the kingdome of God shall come.

19 ¶ ^e And he took bread, and ^f gave thanks, and brake it, and gave ^g unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. • Matth. 26. 26.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ ^f But behold, the hand of ^g him that betrayeth me, is with me ^h on the table. • Matth. 26. 21.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined: but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 ⁱ And he said unto them, The ^j kings of the Gentiles exercise lord- ^k ship over them; and they that exer- ^l cise authoritie upon them, are called benefactors. • Matth. 20. 25.

26 But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint unto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed unto me:

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdome, ^m and sit ⁿ on thrones, judging the twelve tribes ^o of Israel. • Matth. 19. 28.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, ^p Satan hath desired ^q to have you, that he may sift you as ^r wheat. • 1 Pet. 5. 8.

32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am readie to go with thee both into prison, and to death.

34 ^s And

¹ Matt. 26.34. 34 * And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice denie that thou knowest me.

¹ Matt. 10.9. 35 ¹ And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then said he unto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

¹ Isa. 53. 12. 37 For I say unto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, ^m And he was reckoned among the transgressours: for the things concerning me have an end.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

¹ Matt. 26.36. 39 ¶ ¹ And he came out, & went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

¹ Matt. 26.41. 40 ° And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stones cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

44 And being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

45 And when he rose up from prayer, & was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

¹ Matt. 26.47. 47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, to kiss him.

48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord,

shall we smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

54 ¹ Then took they him, and ¹ Matt. 26.57. led him, and brought him into the high priests house. And Peter followed afar off.

55 ¹ And when they had kindled ¹ Matt. 26.69. a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.

56 But a certain maid beheld him, as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou saiest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.

61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt denie me thrice.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ ¹ And as soon as it was day, ¹ Matt. 27.1. the elders of the people, and the chief priests & the scribes came together,

102

ther, and led him into their counsel,

67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeve.

68 And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am.

^c Mark
14. 62.

71 And they said, What need we any further witness? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Jesus is accused before Pilate, and sent to Herod. 8 Herod mocketh him.*

12 *Herod and Pilate are made friends. 18 Barabbas is desired of the people, and is loosed by Pilate, and Jesus is given to be crucified. 27 He telleth the women that lament him, the destruction of Jerusalem: 34 prayeth for his enemies. 39 Two evildoers are crucified with him. 46 His death. 50 His burial.*

And the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a king.

^a Matt.
27. 11.

3 ^a And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? and he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewrie, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests & scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 ¶ ^b And Pilate when he had ^b Matt.
called together the chief priests, and 27. 23.
the rulers, and the people,

14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him;

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

18 And they cryed out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas:

19 (Who for a certain sedition made in the citie, and for murder was cast in prison)

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.

21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed.

24 And Pilate ¶ gave sentence ¶ Or,
that it should be as they required. *assented.*

25 And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

26 ^c And as they led him away, ^c Matt.
they laid hold upon one Simon a 27. 32.
Cyrenian,

Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great companie of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.

29 For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

30 ^a Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.

31 ^e For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the drie?

32 ^f And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called || Calvarie, there they crucified him, and the malefactours; one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding: and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactours, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds:

but this man hath done nothing amiss

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the || earth untill the ninth hour. || Or,

45 And the sun was darkened, and the vail of the temple was rent in the mids.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, ^g Father, ^h Psal. into thy hands I commend my spirit: 31. 5. and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.

50 ¶ ⁱ And behold, there was a ^j Matth. man named Joseph, a counsellor, 27. 57. and he was a good man, and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdome of God)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath-day, according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 Christ's resurrection is declared by two angels to the women that come to the sepulchre: 9 these report it to others

Y y y

^a Isa. 2. 19. Hosea 10. 8. Revel. 6. 16. ^e 1 Pet. 4. 17. ^f Matth. 27. 38. || Or, the place of a skull.

104

others. 13 Christ himself appeareth to the two disciples that went to Emmaus. 36 Afterward he appeareth to the apostles, and reproveth their unbelief: 47 giveth them a charge: 49 promiseth the holy Ghost: 51 and so ascendeth into heaven.

^a Matth.
28. 1.

NOW ^aupon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead?

|| Or,
him that
liveth.

^b Matth.
17. 23.

6 He is not here, but is risen, ^b remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

7 Saying, the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleevd them not.

^c John
20. 6.

12 ^c Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondring in himself at that which was come to pass.

^d Mark
16. 12.

13 ¶ ^d And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem, about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to pass, that while they communed together, and reason-

ed, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

20 And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said; but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to beleve all that the prophets have spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

30 And

Or,
ceased to
be seen of
them.

30 And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he || vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, & while he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

* Mark
16. 14.

36 ¶ And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet beleaved not for joy, and wondred, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honey-comb.

43 And he took it, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ And behold, I send the ^f John promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high. ^{15. 26.} ^{Acts 1.4.}

50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethanie: and he lift up his hands, and blessed them.

51 ¶ And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. ^{Mark 16. 19.} ^{Acts 1.9.}

52 And they worshipped him, & returned to Jerusalem, with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple, praising & blessing God. Amen.

The Gospel according to S. JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 The divinity, humanity, and office of Jesus Christ. 15 The testimony of John. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.



N the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.

6 ¶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. ^{Math. 3. 1.}

7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all men through him might believe.

8 He was not that light, but was sent to bear witness of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world

Y y 2

world

* Gen.
1. 1.

* Col.
1. 16.

* Heb.
11. 3.

106 world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he || power to become the sons of God, even to them that beleeve on his name:

13 Which were born, not of bloud, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 ^e And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ John bare witness of him and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me; for he was before me.

16 And of his ^f fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18 ^e No man hath seen God at any time; the onely begotten Son, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, & denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou || that prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us: what sayest thou of thy self?

23 ^b He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water; but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not;

27 ⁱ He it is who coming after me, ⁱ is preferred before me, whose shoes ⁱ latchet I am not worthy to unloose. ⁱ Matth. 3. 11. Acts 19. 4.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which || taketh away the sin of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, w^{ch} is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 ^k And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples:

36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where || dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was || about the tenth hour.

40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, || the Christ.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou

|| Or, the right, or privilege.

^e Matth. 1. 16.

^f Col. 1. 19.

^e 1 Tim. 6. 16.

1 John 4. 12.

|| Or, a prophet.

^b Matth. 3. 3.

|| Or, beareth.

^k Matth. 3. 16.

|| Or, abidest.

|| That was two hours before night.

|| Or, the anointed.

thou shalt be called Cephaz, which is by interpretation, || a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom ¹ Moses in the law, and the ^m prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, beleevest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily verily I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth into Capernaum, and to Jerusalem, 14 where he purgeth the temple of buyers and sellers. 19 He foretelleth his death and resurrection. 23 Many beleeved because of his miracles, but he would not trust himself with them.

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there.

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.

6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse; but thou hast kept the good wine untill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples beleeved on him.

12 ¶ After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many days.

13 ¶ And the Jews pass-over was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting:

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen; and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables;

16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Fathers house an house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembered that it was written, ² The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. ^{Psalm 69.9.}

18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What signe shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Jesus answered and said unto them,

108 them, ^b Destroy this temple, and in
^b Matth. three days I will raise it up.

26. 61. 20 Then said the Jews, Fourty and
 six years was this temple in build-
 ing, and wilt thou rear it up in three
 days?

21 But he spake of the temple of
 his bodie.

22 When therefore he was risen
 from the dead, his disciples remem-
 bred that he had said this unto them:
 and they beleevved the scripture, and
 the word which Jesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jeru-
 salem at the pass-over, in the feast-
 day, many beleevved in his name,
 when they saw the miracles which
 he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit
 himself unto them, because he knew
 all men,

25 And needed not that any
 should testifie of man: for he knew
 what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the neces-
 sity of regeneration: 14 of faith in his
 death. 16 The great love of God to-
 wards the world. 18 Condemnation
 for unbelief. 23 The baptisme, wit-
 ness, and doctrine of John concern-
 ing Christ.

THERE was a man of the Pharisees,
 named Nicodemus, a ruler of the
 Jews:

2 The same came to Jesus by
 night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we
 know that thou art a teacher come
 from God: for no man can do these
 miracles that thou doest, except God
 be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto
 him, Verily verily I say unto thee,
 Except a man be born ^{||} again, he can-
 not see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How
 can a man be born when he is old?
 can he enter the second time into his
 mothers womb, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily verily I
 say unto thee, Except a man be born
 of water and of the Spirit, he can-
 not enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh,
 is flesh; and that which is born of the
 Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marvel not that I said unto
 thee, Ye must be born ^{||} again.

8 The winde bloweth where it
 listeth, and thou hearest the sound
 thereof, but canst not tell whence it
 cometh, and whither it goeth: so is
 every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said
 unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto
 him, Art thou a master of Israel, and
 knowest not these things?

11 Verily verily I say unto thee,
 We speak that we do know, and tes-
 tifie that we have seen; and ye re-
 ceive not our witness.

12 If I have told you earthly
 things, and ye beleevve not, how shall
 ye beleevve if I tell you of heavenly
 things?

13 And no man hath ascended up
 to heaven, but he that came down
 from heaven, *even* the Son of man
 which is in heaven.

14 ¶ ^a And as Moses lifted up ^a Num.
 the serpent in the wilderness, even 21. 9.
 so must the Son of man be lifted up:

15 That whosoever beleevveth in
 him, should not perish, but have eter-
 nal life.

16 ¶ ^b For God so loved the ^b 1 John
 world, that he gave his onely begot- 4. 9.
 ten Son, that whosoever beleevveth
 in him, should not perish, but have
 everlasting life.

17 ^c For God sent not his Son in- ^c Chap.
 to the world to condemn the world; 12. 47.
 but that the world through him
 might be saved.

18 ¶ He that beleevveth on him,
 is not condemned: but he that be-
 leevveth not, is condemned already,
 because he hath not beleevved in the
 name of the onely begotten Son of
 God.

19 And this is the condemnation,
^d that light is come into the world, ^d Chap.
 and men loved darkness rather 1. 4.
 then light, because their deeds
 were evil.

20 For every one that doeth evil,
 hateth the light, neither cometh to
 the light lest his deeds should be
^{||} reproved.

21 But he that doeth truth, cometh
 to the light, that his deeds may
 be made manifest, that they are
 wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Je-
 sus and his disciples into the land of
 Judea,

^{||} Or,
 from a-
 bove.

^{||} Or,
 from a-
 bove.

^{||} Or,
 discover-
 ed.

¹ Chap. 4. 2. Judea, and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Enon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: & they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of Johns disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John answered and said, ² A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, ^h I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegrooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, ¹ hath set to his seal, that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the spirit by measure unto him.

35 ² The Father loveth the Son, & hath given all things into his hand.

36 ¹ He that beleeveeth on the Son, hath everlasting life: and he that beleeveeth not the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abide on him.

CHAP. IV.

¹ Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himself unto her. 27 His disciples marvel. 31 He declareth to them his zeal to Gods

glory. 39 Many Samaritanes beleeve on him. 43 He departeth into Galilee, and healeth the rulers son that lay sick at Capernaum.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized mo disciples then John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but *his* disciples)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 And he must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground ² that Jacob ¹ Gen. gave to his son Joseph. 33. 19.

6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus therefore being wearied with *his* journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour. 22. Josh. 24. 32.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattel?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not,

110

not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

^b Deut.
32. 5.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in ^b Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, beleeve me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

^c 2 Cor.
3. 17.

24 ^c God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he.

27 ¶ And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 ¶ In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat?

34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet four moneths, and *then* cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; ^d for they are white already to harvest. ^d Math. 9. 37.

36 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleeved on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days.

41 And many more beleeved, because of his own word:

42 And said unto the woman, Now we beleeve, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ ^e Now after two days he ^e Math. departed thence, and went into Galilee: 13. 57.

44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own countrey.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, ^f where he made the ^f Chap. water wine. And there was a certain ^{2. 1.} noble man, whose son was sick at ^{||} Or, Capernaum. ^{courier,}

47 When he heard that Jesus was ^{or ruler.} come out of Judea into Galilee, he

he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleewe.

49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my childe die.

50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man beleewed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, & he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them the hour, when he began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth; and himself beleewed, & his whole house.

54 This is again the second miracle that Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Jesus on the sabbath-day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirty years. 10 The Jews therefore cavil, and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himself, and reproveth them, shewing by the testimony of his Father, 32 of John, 36 of his works, 39 and of the scriptures, who he is.

^a Levit. 23, 2. **A**fter this, there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

^b Or, gate. 2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep-^c market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmitie thirtie and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and

knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day; ^b it is not lawfull for thee to carrie thy bed.

^b Jer. 17, 22.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, ^c a multitude ^d being in that place.

^c Or, from the

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not onely had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself

112 himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works then these, that ye may marvel.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them: even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:

23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and beleeve on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily verily I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is, coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

^c Matth. 25. 46. 29 And shall come forth, ^c they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

^d Chap. 8. 14. 31 ^d If I bear witness of my self, my witness is not true.

^e Matth. 3. 17. 32 ^e There is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me, is true.

^f Chap. 1. 7. 33 Ye sent unto John, ^f and he bare witness unto the truth.

34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing

for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I have greater witness then that of John; for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, ^g hath born witness ^g Matth. of me. Ye have neither heard his ^g 3. 17. & voice at any time, ^h nor seen his ^h 17. 5. shape. ^h Deut.

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeve not. ^{4. 12.}

39 ¶ Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life, & they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 ⁱ How can ye beleeve, which ⁱ Chap. receive honour one of another, and ⁱ 12. 43. seek not the honour that cometh from God onely?

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleeved Moses, ye would have beleeved me: ^k for he ^k Gen. 3. wrote of me. ^{15.}

47 But if ye beleeve not his writings, how shall ye beleeve my words? ^{18. 15.}

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes.

15 Thereupon the people would have made him king. 16 But withdrawing himself, he walketh on the sea to his disciples: 26 reproveth the people flocking after him, and all the fleshly bearers of his word: 32 declareth himself to be the bread of life to beleevers. 66 Many disciples depart from him. 68 Peter confesseth him. 70 Judas is a devil.

After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tyberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles

cles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

^a Levit. 23.5. ^b Deut. 16.1. ^b Matt. 14.15. 4 And the pass-over, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

5 ¶ When Jesus then lift up his eyes, and saw a great companie come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penie-worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley-loaves, which remained over and above, unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come & take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

^c Matt. 14.23. 16 And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

17 And entred into a ship, and went over the sea towards Caperna-

um: and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great winde that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone:

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

27 ¶ Labour not for the meat ^{¶ Or.} which perisheth, but for that meat ^{Work not.} which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: ^d for him hath God the Father sealed. ^{Matt. 3.17.}

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, ^e This is the work of God, that ^f ye beleeve on him whom he hath sent. ^{John 3.23.}

30 They said therefore unto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and beleeve thee? what dost thou work?

114
Exod.
16.15.
Num.
11.7.
Psal.
78.25.

31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, ^b He gave them bread from heaven to eat.
32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, shall never hunger; & he that beleeveeth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and beleeve not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and beleeveeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

^b Matth.
13. 55.

42 And they said, ^b Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

ⁱ Isa. 54.
13.
Jer. 31.
34.

45 ⁱ It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

^b Matt.
11. 27.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, ^b save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verily verily I say unto you, He that beleeveeth on me, hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread, which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us ^{his} flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so, he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard ^{this}, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

62 ⁱ What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? ^{Chap. 3. 13.}

63 It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, ^{they} are spirit, and ^{they} are life.

64 But

64 But there are some of you that beleeve not: For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleeved not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life.

^m Matth. 16. 16. 69 ^m And we beleeve, and are sure that thou art that Christ the Son of the living God.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

1 Jesus reproveth the ambition and boldness of his kinsmen: 10 goeth up from Galilee to the feast of tabernacles: 14 teacheth in the temple. 40 Divers opinions of him among the people. 45 The Pharisees are angry that their officers took him not, and chide with Nicodemus for taking his part.

After these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewrie, because the Jews sought to kill him.

^a Lev. 23. 34. 2 ^a Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: If thou do these things, shew thy self to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleeve in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie.

7 The world cannot hate you; but

me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, ^b for my ^b Chap. time is not yet full come. 8. 20.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man ^{||} letters, ^{||} Or, having never learned? learning.

16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glorie: but he that seeketh his glorie that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

19 ^c Did not Moses give you the ^c Exod. law, and yet none of you keepeth ^c 24. 3. the law? ^d Why go ye about to kill ^d Chap. me? 5. 18.

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

22 ^e Moses therefore gave unto ^e 12. 3. you circumcision, (not because it ^f Gen. is of Moses, ^f but of the fathers) 17. 10. and ye on the sabbath-day circumsise a man. ^{||} Or, without

23 If a man on the sabbath-day ^{breaking} receive circumcision, ^{||} that the law ^{the law} of Moses should not be broken; are ^{of Mo-} ye angry at me, because I have ^{ses.} made

116 made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

^a Deut. 1.16. 24 ^a Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

26 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleevd on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do mo miracles then these which this *man* hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.

^a Chap. 13.33. 34 ^b Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not finde him? will he go unto the dispersed among the *¶* Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come?

¹ Lev. 23.36. 37 ¹ In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

^a Deut. 18.15. 38 ^a He that beleeveth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water

39 (¹ But this spake he of the ¹ Isa. spirit, which they that beleevd on 4+3. him, should receive: for the holy Joel 2. Ghost was not yet *given*, because that 28. Jesus was not yet glorified)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 ^m Hath not the scripture said, ^m Matt. That Christ cometh of the seed of 2.5. David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees beleevd on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (^a he that came to Jesus by night, ⁿ Chap. being one of them) 3.2.

51 ^o Doth our law judge any man ^o Deut. before it hear him, and know what 17.8, he doeth? &c.

52 They answered, and said unto and 19. him, Art thou also of Galilee? 15. Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ delivereth the woman taken in adulterie. 12 He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine; 33 answereth the Jews that boasted of Abraham, 59 and conveyeth himself from their cruelty.

Jesus went unto the mount of Olives
2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery;

adultery; and when they had set her in the mids,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adulterie, in the very act.

Levit. 20.10. 5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stouped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground as though he heard them not.

Deut. 17.7. 7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stouped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 Shee said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

Chap. 1.5. and 9.5. 12 ¶ Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thy self; thy record is not true.

Chap. 5.31. 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of my self, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

Deut. 17.6. Matth. 18.16. 17 It is also written in your law, that the testimonie of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witness of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me,

117 19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasure as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye beleeve not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me, is true; & I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my self; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many beleeved on him.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which beleeved on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed:

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? Rom. 6.20.

34 Jesus answered them, Verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth

118 committeth sin, is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

1 John
3.8.

44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

1 John
4.6.

47 He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh & judgeth,

51 Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 The man that was born blinde restored to sight. 8 He is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They are offended at it, and excommunicate him: 35 but he is received of Jesus, and confesseth him. 39 Who they are whom Christ enlighteneth.

And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

Chap.
9.

Or,
spread
the clay
upon
the eyes
of the
blinde
man.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blinde man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not beleve concerning him, that he had been blinde, and received his sight, untill they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blinde? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our

son, and that he was born blinde:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blinde, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou beleve on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he,

Or,
excom-
municat-
ed him,

120 he, Lord, that I might beleeve on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleeve. And he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Jesus said, For judgement I am come into this world: that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blinde.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, & said unto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blinde, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the door, and the good shepherd. 19 Divers opinions of him.

24 He proveth by his works, that he

is Christ the Son of God: 39 escapeth the Jews, 40 and went again beyond Jordan, where many beleeved on him.

✓ Verily verily I say unto you, He that entreth not by the door into the sheep-fold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

8 All that ever came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and finde pasture.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

11 ^a I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. ^a Isa. 40. 11. Ezek. 34. 23.

12 But he that is an hireling and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; ^b and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. ^b Ezek. 37. 22.

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, ^c because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. ^c Isa. 53. 7, 8.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. ^d This commandment have I received of my Father. ^d Acts 2. 24.

19 ¶ There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil: Can a devil open the eyes of the blinde?

22 ¶ And it was at Jerusalem the ^e feast of the dedication, and it was winter. ^e 1 Mac. 4. 59.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou || make us to doubt? || Or, If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. ^{bold us}

25 Jesus answered them, I told ^{in sus-} you, and ye beleeved not: the works ^{pense.} that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witness of me.

26 But ye beleeve not; because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave them me, is greater then all: and none is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?

33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered them, ^f Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, beleeve me not.

38 But if I do, though ye beleeve not me, beleeve the works: that ye may know and beleeve that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode.

41 And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeved on him there

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus four days buried. 45 Many Jews beleeve. 47 The high priests and Pharisees gather a council against Christ. 49 Caiaphas prophesieth. 54 Jesus hid himself.

55 at the pass-over they enquire after him, and lay wait for him.

121

Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

2 (^a It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick) ^a Matths 26. 7.

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest, is sick.

4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?

9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things said he: and after that, he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there (to the intent ye may beleeve) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lien in the grave four days already.

Z z z z

18 (Now

122 18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto
 || That is, Jerusalem, || about fifteen furlongs off)
 about two miles. 19 And many of the Jews came

to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.

• Luke 24 Martha saith unto him, • I
 14. 14. know that he shall rise again in the
 Chap. 5. resurrection at the last day.

29. 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the
 • Chap. resurrection, and the • life: he that
 6. 35. beleeveth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live;

26 And whosoever liveth, and beleeveth in me, shall never die. Beleevest thou this?

27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I beleeve that thou art the Christ the Son of God which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come and calleth for thee.

29 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave, to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and † was troubled,

† Gr. he troubled himself.

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him.

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, ^d which opened the eyes ^a Chap. of the blinde, have caused that even ^{9. 6.} this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.

40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest beleeve thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lift up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeve that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, beleeved on him.

46 But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeve on him; and the Romanes shall come and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

Chap.
8. 14.

50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth, they took counsel together, for to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a countrey near to the wilderness, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Jews pass-over was nigh at hand: and many went out of the countrey up to Jerusalem before the pass-over, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus. 10 The high priests consult to kill him. 12 Christ rideth into Jerusalem. 20 Greeks desire to see Jesus. 23 He foretelleth his death. 37 The Jews are generally blinded: 42 yet many chief rulers beleeve, but do not confesse him: 44 therefore Jesus calleth earnestly for confession of faith.

THEN Jesus, six days before the pass-over, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly,

and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons son, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. Chap. 13. 29.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: & they came, not for Jesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death;

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and beleaved on Jesus.

12 ¶ On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written,

15 Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold thy King cometh, sitting on an asses colt: Zech. 9. 9.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

124

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

¶ Matth.
10. 39.

25 ¶ He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die)

34 The people answered him, We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?

¶ Psal.
110. 4.

35 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus and departed, and did hide himself from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, ¶ Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,

40 ¶ He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also, many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

43 ¶ For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

44 ¶ Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 ¶ I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me, should not abide in darkness.

47 ¶ And if any man hear my words and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

49 For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Jesus washeth the disciples feet: exhorteth them to humility and charity.

18 He foretelleth and discovereth to John by a token, that Judas should betray him: 31 commandeth them to love one another: 36 and forewarneth Peter of his denial.

Matth.
16. 2.

NOW ^a before the feast of the pass-over, when Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world, unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And supper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simons son, to betray him)

3 Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel and girded himself.

5 After that, he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but also my hands and my head.

10 Jesus saith to him, He that is washed, needeth not, save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto

them, Know ye what I have done to you? 125

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

16 ^b Verily verily I say unto you, ^b Matth. The servant is not greater then his 10. 24. Lord, neither he that is sent, greater Chap. then he that sent him. 15. 20.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 ¶ I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, ^c He that ^c Psal. eateth bread with me, hath lift up his 41. 9. heel against me.

19 ¶ Now I tell you before it ¶ Or, come, that when it is come to pass, ^d From ye may beleve that I am he. hence-

20 ^d Verily verily I say unto you, ^d Matth. He that receiveth whomsoever I 10. 40. send, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

21 ^e When Jesus had thus said, ^e Matth. he was troubled in spirit, and testi- 16. 21. fied, and said, Verily verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jesus bosome, one of his disciples whom Jesus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He then lying on Jesus breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a ¶ sop, when I ¶ Or, have dipped it. And when he had morsel. dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

27 And after the sop, Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus

126 Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you.

34 ¶ A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily verily I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples with the hope of heaven: 6 professeth himself the way, the truth, and the life; and one with the Father: 13 assureth their prayers in his name to be effectual: 15 requesteth love and obedience: 16 promiseth the holy Ghost the Comforter: 17 and leaveth his peace with them.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place

for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest, and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, shew us the Father?

10 Beleevest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of my self: but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.

12 Verily verily I say unto you, He that beleeveeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, & greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

13 ¶ And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.

17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you.

19 Yes a little while, and the world

¶ Or, orphans.

¶ Chap.
7. 34.

¶ Levit.
19. 18.
Chap.
15. 17.
Ephes.
5. 2.
1 John
4. 21.

¶ Matth.
26. 33.

world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot: Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father: For my Father is greater than I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might beleeve.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 The consolation and mutual love be-

tween Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine. 11 A comfort in the hatred and persecution of the world. 26 The office of the holy Ghost, and of the apostles.

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 ^a Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. ^b Matth. 15. 13.

3 ^b Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. ^c Chap. 13. 10.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, for ^d without me ye can do nothing. ^e Or, severed from me.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love: even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

12 ^f This is my commandment, ^g That ye love one another, as I have loved you. ^h Chap. 13. 34. ⁱ 1 Thess.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. ^j John 3. 11.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants;

128 wants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

^d Matth. 28. 19. 16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ^d ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it *hated* you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

^e Matth. 10. 24. Chap. 13. 16. 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, ^e The servant is not greater then the lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

^{||} Or, *excuse.* 22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no ^{||} cloke for their sin.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen, and hated both me and my Father.

^f psal. 35. 19. 25 But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, ^f They hated me without a cause.

^g Luke 24. 49. Chap. 14. 26. 26 ^g But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.

27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

ⁱ Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation by the promise of the holy

Ghost, & by his resurrection and ascension; 23 assureth their prayers made in his name to be acceptable to his Father. 33 Peace in Christ, and in the world affliction.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will ^{||} reprove the world of sin, and of ^{||} Or, *convince* righteousness, and of judgement:

9 Of sin, because they believe not on me;

10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, & ye see me no more;

11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit, when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me?

20 Verily verily I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoyce: and ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she is in travail, hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: ^a Verily verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ^{||} proverbs: the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in ^{||} proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ^{||} proverb. 129

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we beleeve that thou camest forth from God. || Or, parable.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now beleeve?

32 ^b Behold the hour cometh, yea, ^b Matth. is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to ^{||} his own, and ^{||} Or, shall leave me alone: and yet I am ^{his own} not alone, because the Father is ^{home} with me. 26.31.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him: 6 to preserve his apostles in unitie, 17 and truth: 20 to glorifie them, and all other beleevers with him in heaven.

THESE words spake Jesus; and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee.

2 ^a As thou hast given him power ^a Matth. over all flesh, that he should give ^{28.18.} eternal life to as many as thou hast given him.

3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and ^b Chap. they have received them, ^b and have ^{16.17.} known

130

known surely that I came out from thee, and they have beleeved that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy-Father, keep through thine own name, those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition: that the scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeve on me through their word:

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee; that they also may be one in us: that the world may beleeve that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that

thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

24 Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glorie which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee; but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 10 Peter smiteth off Malchus ear. 12 Jesus is taken and led unto Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peters denial. 19 Jesus examined before Caiaphas. 28 His arraignment before Pilate. 36 His kingdom. 40 The Jews ask Barabbas to be let loose.

When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples.

2 And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 As soon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? and they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

2 That

Psal.
109.8.

Or,
truly
sancti-
fied.

Chap. 7.12. 9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, ^c Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right ear. The servants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year.) ||

14 ^d Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

15 ¶ ^e And Simon Peter followed Jesus, & so did another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

16 But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals, (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

19 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort, and in secret have I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, stroke Jesus || with the palm of his

hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 (^f Now Annas had sent him ^g Matth. bound unto Caiaphas the high 26.57. priest.)

25 And Simon Peter stood and warned himself: ^h They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one ⁱ Matth. of his disciples? He denied it, and 26.69. said, I am not.

26 One of the servants of the high priest (being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again, and immediately the cock crew.

28 ¶ ^j Then led they Jesus from ^k Matth. Caiaphas, unto || the hall of judge- 27.2. ment: and it was early, ^l and they || Or, themselves went not into the judge- Pilates ment-hall, lest they should be de- house. filed: but that they might eat the ^m Acts 10.28. pass-over.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawfull for us to put any man to death:

32 ⁿ That the saying of Jesus ^k Matth. might be fulfilled, which he spake, 20.19. signifying what death he should die.

33 ^o Then Pilate entred into the ^l Matth. judgement-hall again, and called 27.11. Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

34 Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: What hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate

|| And Annas sent Christ bound unto Caiaphas the high priest, vers. 24. ^d Chap. 11.50. ^e Matth. 26.58.

|| Or, with a rod.

132

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

^m Matth. 27. 15.

39 ^m But ye have a custome, that I should release unto you one at the pass-over: will ye therefore that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

ⁿ Acts 3. 14.

40 ⁿ Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and beaten.* 4 *Pilate is desirous to release him, but being overcome with the outrage of the Jews, he delivered him to be crucified.* 23 *They cast lots for his garments.* 26 *He commendeth his mother to John.* 28 *He dieth.* 31 *His side is pierced.* 38 *He is buried by Joseph and Nicodemus.*

^m Matth. 27. 26.

Then ^a Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crown of thorns, & put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail king of the Jews: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard

that saying, he was the more afraid; 9 And went again into the judgement-hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not, that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cefars friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgement-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the pass-over, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your king.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

16 ^b Then delivered he him ^b therefore unto them to be crucified. ^b Matth. 27. 31. And they took Jesus & led him away.

17 And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha.

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latine.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews; but that he said,

said, I am king of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

Matth. 27. 35. ¶ 23 Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments (and made four parts, to every souldier a part) and also his coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top through-
Or, wrought.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, ^d They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

¶ Psal. 22. 18. 25 ¶ Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.
Or, Clopas.

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, & the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.

¶ Psal. 69. 21. 28 ¶ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, ^e that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 The Jews therefore because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day (for that sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came thereout, blood and water,

133 35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleve.

36 For these things were done, ^f that ^f Exod. the scripture should be fulfilled, A 12. 46. bone of him shall not be broken. Num. 9.

37 And again another scripture ^g 12. saith, ^g They shall look on him whom Psal. 34. they pierced. 20.

38 ¶ ^h And after this, Joseph of ^h Zech. Arimathea (being a disciple of Je- 12. 10. sus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) ^h Matth. besought Pilate that he might take 27. 57. away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave: He came therefore and took the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation-day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

C H A P. XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre: 3 so do Peter and John, ignorant of the resurrection. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 The incredulity and confession of Thomas. 30 The scripture is sufficient to salvation.

THe ^a first day of the week cometh ^a Matth. Mary Magdalene early when it 28. 1. was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and Mark seeth the stone taken away from the 16. 1. sepulchre.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, & to the ^b other disciple ^b Chap. whom Jesus loved, and saith unto 13. 23. them, They have taken away the and 21. Lord out of the sepulchre, and we 20. know not where they have laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And

134

5 And he stouping down *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie;

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and beleaved.

9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stouped down *and looked into the sepulchre*,

12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had layen:

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? she supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at

evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 ^d Whose soever sins ye remit, ^d Matth. they are remitted unto them; and ^{18. 18.} whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them, when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleieve.

26 ¶ And after eight days, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and be not faithless, but beleieving.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast beleaved: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have beleaved.

30. ¶ ^e And many other signes truly ^e Chap. did Jesus in the presence of his disci- ^{21. 25.} ples, which are not written in this book.

31 But these are written, that ye might beleieve that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that beleieving ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appearing again to his disciples, was known of them by the great draught

^e Mark
16. 14.

draught of fishes: 12 He dineth with them; 15 earnestly commandeth Peter to feed his lambs and sheep; 18 foretelleth him of his death; 22 rebuketh his curiosity touching John. 25 The conclusion.

AFTER these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he himself:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entred into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, *Or, Sirs,* Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, & ye shall finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coat unto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish, which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, & drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh and taketh bread, & giveth them, & fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that

Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me more then these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon son of Jonas lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? *a Chap. 13. 23. & 20. 2.*

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do?

22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die: but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

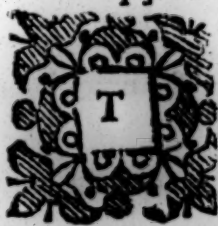
24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

25 *b Chap. 20. 30.* And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

The ACTS of the Apostles.

CHAP. I.

Christ preparing his apostles to the beholding of his ascension, gathereth them together into the mount Olivet, commandeth them to expect in Jerusalem the sending down of the holy Ghost, promisetli after few days to send it: by vertue whereof they should be witnesses unto him, even to the utmost parts of the earth. 9 After his ascension they are warned by two angels to depart, and to set their minds upon his second coming. 12 They accordingly return, and giving themselves to prayer, choose Matthias apostle in the place of Judas.



He former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do & teach,

2 Untill the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them fourtie days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdome of God:

4 And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me.

5 For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many days hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

8 But ye shall receive power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses

unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight. ^d Luke 24. 51.

10 And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath-days journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twentie)

16 Men and brethren, This scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus. ^e Psal. 41. 9.

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this ministration.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. ^f Matth. 27. 7.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch

as

|| Or, eating together with them.

^a Luke

24. 49.

^b Matth.

3. 11.

^c Chap.

2. 1.

|| Or, the power of the holy Ghost

coming

upon you.

as that field is called in their proper tongue, Acedama, that is to say, The field of blood.

20 For it is written in the book of psalms, ¹ Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and, ² His || bishoprick let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministry & apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others: 14 Whom Peter disproving, and shewing that the apostles spake by the power of the holy Ghost, that Jesus was risen from the dead, ascended into heaven, had poured down the same holy Ghost, and was the Messiah, a man known to them to be approved of God by his miracles, wonders and signes, and not crucified without his determinate counsel, and foreknowledge: 37 He baptizeth a great number that were converted, 41 who afterwards devoutly and charitably converse together: the apostles working many miracles, and God daily increasing his church.

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty winde, and it filled all

the house where they were sitting. 137

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them:

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now † when this was noised † Gr. abroad, the multitude came together, and were || confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. *when this voice was made.*

7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak, Galileans? *|| Or, troubled in minde.*

8 And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderfull works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words:

15 For these are not drunken as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel,

17 * And it shall come to pass in the last days, (saith God) I will pour out of my spirit upon all flesh: Joel 2. 28. and your sons & your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

138

18 And on my servants, and on my hand-maidens I will pour out in those days of my spirit, and they shall prophesie :

19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signes in the earth beneath; bloud, and fire, and vapour of smoke.

^b Joel
2. 31.

20 ^b The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into bloud, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

^c Rom.
10. 13.

21 And it shall come to pass, *that* ^c whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth a man approved of God, among you, by miracles and wonders and signes, which God did by him in the midit of you, as ye your selves also know:

23 Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain :

24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

^d Psal.
16. 8.

25 For David speaketh concerning him, ^d I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope.

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

^e Or,
I may.
^e 1 King.
2. 10.

29 Men *and* brethren, || let me freely speak unto you ^e of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day :

^f Psal.
132. 11.

30 Therefore being a prophet, ^f and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loyns, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ, to sit on his throne :

^g Psal.
16. 10.

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, ^g that his soul was not left in hell, neither

his flesh did see corruption.

32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.

34 For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, ^h The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit ^h Psal.
110. 1.

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstool.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the apostles, Men *and* brethren, what shall we do?

38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did he testifie and exhort, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added *unto them* about three thousand souls.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signes were done by the apostles.

44 And all that beleaved were together, and had all things common,

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread || from house to || Or, ^g
house, did eat their meat with glad- ^h house.
ness and singleness of heart,

47 Praising God, and having fa-
vour

vour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter preaching to the people that came to see a lame man restored to his feet, 12 professeth the cure not to have been wrought by his or Johns own power, or holiness, but by God, and his Son Jesus, and through faith in his name: 13 withall reprehending them for crucifying Jesus. 17 Which because they did it through ignorance, and that thereby were fulfilled Gods determinate counsel, and the scriptures, 19 he exhorteth them by repentance and faith to seek remission of their sins, and salvation in the same Jesus.

NOW Peter and John went up together into the temple, at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

2 And a certain man lame from his mothers womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple.

3 Who seeing Peter & John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes upon him, with John, said, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift him up; and immediately his feet and ancle-bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: & they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

14 ^a But ye denied the holy One, ^a Matth. and the just, and desired a murderer ^{27. 20.} to be granted unto you,

15 And killed the || prince of life, || Or, whom God hath raised from the ^{author.} dead; whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his name through faith in his name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord,

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom the heaven must receive, untill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets, since the world began.

22 For Moses truly said unto the fathers, ^b A prophet shall the Lord ^b Deut. your God raise up unto you, of your ^{18. 15.} brethren, like unto me; him shall ye ^{Chap. 7.} hear in all things whatsoever he ^{37.} shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to pass, that every soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets,

140 phets, and of the covenant which
 ' Gen. God made with our fathers, saying
 12. 3. unto Abraham, ' And in thy seed
 shall all the kindreds of the earth be
 blessed.

26 Unto you first, God having
 raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to
 bless you, in turning away every one
 of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IV.

1 The rulers of the Jews offended with
 Peters sermon, 4 (though thousands
 of the people were converted that heard
 the word) imprison him and John.

5 After, upon examination, Peter
 boldly avouching the lame man to be
 healed by the name of Jesus, and that
 by the same Jesus onely we must be e-
 ternally saved, 13 they command him
 and John to preach no more in
 that name, adding also threatening.

23 Whereupon the church fleeth to
 prayer: 31 and God by moving the
 place where they were assembled, testi-
 fied that he heard their prayer, con-
 firming the Church with the gift of the
 holy Ghost, and with mutual love and
 charitie.

¶ Or, ruler.
 And as they spake unto the peo-
 ple, the priests and the captain
 of the temple, and the Sadducees
 came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught
 the people, and preached through
 Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them,
 and put them in hold unto the next
 day: for it was now even-tide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which
 heard the word, beleaved; and the
 number of the men was about five
 thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to pass on the
 morrow, that their rulers, and elders,
 and scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and
 Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander,
 and as many as were of the kindred
 of the high priest, were gathered to-
 gether at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in
 the midst, they asked, By what pow-
 er, or by what name have ye done
 this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy
 Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of
 the people, and elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of

the good deed done to the impotent
 man, by what means he is made
 whole;

10 Be it known unto you all, and
 to all the people of Israel, that by
 the name of Jesus Christ of Naza-
 reth, whom ye crucified, whom God
 raised from the dead, even by him
 doth this man stand here before you
 whole.

11 ¶ This is the stone which was
 set at nought of you builders, which
 is become the head of the corner. ^{1 Psal. 118. 22. Matth. 21. 42.}

12 Neither is there salvation in
 any other: for there is none other
 name under heaven given among
 men whereby we must be saved.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the
 boldness of Peter and John, and per-
 ceived that they were unlearned and
 ignorant men, they marvelled, and
 they took knowledge of them, that
 they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man which
 was healed standing with them, they
 could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had command-
 ed them to go aside out of the coun-
 cel, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to
 these men? for that indeed a nota-
 ble miracle hath been done by them
 is manifest to all them that dwell in
 Jerusalem, and we cannot denie it.

17 But that it spread no further
 among the people, let us straitly
 threaten them, that they speak
 henceforth to no man in this name.

18 And they called them, and
 commanded them not to speak at all,
 nor teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered
 and said unto them, Whether it be
 right in the sight of God, to heark-
 en unto you more then unto God,
 judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speak the
 things which we have seen and
 heard.

21 So when they had further
 threatened them, they let them go,
 finding nothing how they might pu-
 nish them, because of the people: for
 all men glorified God for that which
 was done.

22 For the man was above fourty
 years old, on whom this miracle of
 healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And

23 ¶ And being let go, they went to their own companie, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is:

25 Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, ^b Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things?

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy holy childe Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal: and that signes and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy childe Jesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

32 And the multitude of them that beleaved, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his own, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessours of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them down at the apostles feet: and distribution was

made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation) a Levite, and of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, & brought the money, and laid it at the apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

After that Ananias and Sapphira his wife for their hypocrisie at Peters rebuke had fallen down dead, 12 and that the rest of the apostles had wrought many miracles, 14 to the increase of the faith: 17 the apostles are again imprisoned, 19 but delivered by an angel, bidding them to preach openly to all: 21 When, after their teaching accordingly in the temple, 29 and before the council, 33 they are in danger to be killed; through the advice of Gamaliel, a great counsellor among the Jews, they be kept alive, 40 & are but beaten: for which they glorifie God, and cease no day from preaching.

BUT a certain man named Ananias with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privie to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart || to lie || Or, to to the holy Ghost, and to keep back deceive. part of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

142

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband *are* at the door, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many signes and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man joyn himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And beleivers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women)

¶ Or, in every street.
15 Inſomuch that they brought forth the sick ¶ into the ſtreets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the leaſt, the ſhadow of Peter paſſing by, might overſhadow ſome of them.

16 There came alſo a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jeruſalem, bringing ſick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean ſpirits: and they were healed every one.

¶ Or, envy.
17 ¶ Then the high prieſt roſe up, and all they that were with him, (which is the ſect of the Sadducees) and were filled with ¶ indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the apoſtles, and put them in the common priſon.

19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the priſon-doors, and brought them forth, and ſaid,

20 Go, ſtand and ſpeak in the temple to the people, all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high prieſt came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the ſenate of the children of Iſrael, and ſent to

the priſon to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the priſon, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The priſon truly found we ſhut with all ſafeſtie, and the keepers ſtanding without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high prieſt, and the captain of the temple, and the chief prieſts heard theſe things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, ſaying, Behold, the men whom ye put in priſon, are ſtanding in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, leſt they ſhould have been ſtoned)

27 And when they had brought them, they ſet them before the council: and the high prieſt asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we ſtraitly Chap. 4. 18. command you, that you ſhould not teach in this name? and behold, ye have filled Jeruſalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood upon us.

29 ¶ Then Peter and the other apoſtles answered and ſaid, We ought to obey God rather than men.

30 The God of our fathers raiſed up Jeſus, whom ye ſlew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Iſrael, and forgiveness of ſins.

32 And we are his witneſſes of theſe things; and ſo is alſo the holy Ghoſt, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counſel to ſlay them.

34 Then ſtood there up one in the council, a Pharifee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apoſtles forth a little ſpace,

35 And ſaid unto them, Ye men of Iſrael, take heed to your ſelves, what

what ye intend to do as touching these men.

36 For before these days rose up Theudas boasting himself to be some body, to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joyned themselves: who was slain, and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered and brought to nought.

Or,
believed.

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

¶ The apostles desired to have the poor regarded for their bodily sustenance, as also careful themselves to dispense the word of God, the food of the soul, 3 appoint the office of deaconship to seven chosen men: 5 of whom, Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the holy Ghost, is one: 12 who is taken of those whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and after falsely accused of blasphemy against the law and the temple.

And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost and wisdom, whom ye may appoint over this business.

4 But we will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicholas a proselyte of Antioch.

6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Stephen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, & of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council,

13 And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us.

Or,
rites.

15 And all that sat in the council, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 Stephen permitted to answer to the accusations

accusation of blasphemy, 2 sheweth that Abraham worshipped God rightly, and how God chose the fathers, 20 before Moses was born, and before the tabernacle and temple were built: 37 that Moses himself witnessed of Christ: 44 and that all outward ceremonies were ordained according to the heavenly pattern to last but for a time: 51 reprehending their rebellion, and murdering of Christ, the just One, whom the prophets foretold should come into the world: 54 Whereupon they stone him to death; who commendeth his soul to Jesus, and humbly prayeth for them.

THEN said the high priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

Gen. 12. 1.

3 And said unto him, Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, & come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no childe.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should sojourn in a strangeland, and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil four hundred years.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, saith God: and after that shall they come forth, & serve me in this place.

Gen. 17. 9.

8 And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs.

Gen. 21. 3.

Gen. 25. 26.

Gen. 29. 31, &c.

Gen. 37. 28.

9 And the Patriarchs moved with envie, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And delivered him out of all

his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governour over Egypt, and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction; and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

13 And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brethren; & Josephs kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.

15 So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, he and our fathers.

16 And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor the father of Sychem.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose, which knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20 In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his fathers house three moneths:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mightie in words and in deeds.

23 And when he was full fourtie years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25 For he supposed his brethren would

would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not.

Exod.
2. 13.

26 ^p And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us?

28 Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of madian, where he begat two sons.

Exod.
3. 1.

30 ^a And when fourtie years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it he wondered at the sight: and as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord came unto him,

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, & I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, after that he had ^a shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, ^a and in the wilderness fourtie years:

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said unto the children of Israel, ^a A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, ^a like unto me; him shall ye hear.

38 ^a This is he that was in the church in the wilderness, with the ^a Exod. angel which spake to him in the ^a 19. 3. mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

40 ^a Saying unto Aaron, Make us ^a Exod. gods to go before us: for as for this ^a 32. 1. Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, ^a O ye house of Israel, ^a Amos have ye offered to me slain beasts, ^a 5. 25. and sacrifices, by the space of forty years in the wilderness?

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made, to worship them: and I will carrie you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, ^a that he should make it according to the fashion that he had ^a Exod. 25. 40. seen.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of David.

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to finde a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 ^a But Solomon built him an house ^a 1 Chr.

48 Howbeit ^a the most High dwel- ^a 17. 12. leth not in temples made with hands; ^a Chap. as saith the prophet, ^a 17. 24.

49 ^a Heaven is my throne, and ^a Isa. 66. earth is my footstool: what house ^a 1, 2. will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always

always resist the holy Ghost : as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted ? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers :

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, & they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God.

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, & ran upon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him : & the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

By occasion of the persecution in Jerusalem, the church being planted in Samaria ; by Philip the deacon, who preached, did miracles, and baptized many, among the rest Simon the sorcerer, a great seducer of the people ; 14 Peter and John come to confirm, and enlarge the church : where by prayer and imposition of hands, giving the holy Ghost, 18 when Simon would have bought the like power of them, 20 Peter sharply reproving his hypocrisie, and covetousness, and exhorting him to repentance, together with John preaching the word of the Lord, return to Jerusalem. 26 But the Angel sendeth Philip to teach, and baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there

was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem ; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing, and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them : and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that citie.

9 But there was a certain man called Simon, which before-time in the same citie used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleaved Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself beleaved also : and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might

might receive the holy Ghost :

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them : onely they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus)

17 Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter : for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

25 And they when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose and went : and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authoritie under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, & had come to Jerusalem for to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and joyn thy self to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said, Under-

standest thou what thou readeest?

31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? and he desired Philip that he would come up, and sit with him.

32 The place of the scripture which he read, was this, *He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before his shearer,* so opened he not his mouth: 53.7.

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

36 And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I beleve that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is stricken down to the earth, 10 is called to the apostleship, 18 and is baptized by Ananias. 20 He preacheth Christ boldly. 23 The Jews lay wait to kill him; 29 so do the Grecians: but he escapeth both. 31 The church having rest, Peter healeth Eneas of the palsey, 36 and restoreth Tabitha to life.

And Saul yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus

148 Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he journeyed he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: *It is hard* for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, & it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three days without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord.

11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street, which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests, to binde all that call on thy name.

15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord (*even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest*) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales; and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him:

24 ² But their laying await was known of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him. 2 Cor. 11. 32.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and beleevied not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down

to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all quarters, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy.

34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and alms-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose, and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many beleaved in the Lord.

43 And it came to pass, that he

carried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 *Cornelius a devout man, 5 being commanded by an angel, sendeth for Peter: 11 who by a vision, 15, 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles.*

34 *As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius and his company, 44 the holy Ghost falleth on them, 48 and they are baptized.*

There was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the seaside: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his household-servants, and a devout souldier of them that waited on him continually:

8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the house-top to pray, about the sixth hour

10 And he became very hungry, & would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the four corners, & let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

13 And

Or,
be grie-
ved.

150

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time; What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean; behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawfull

thing for a man that is a Jew, to keep companie, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I unto you without gainfaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting untill this hour, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner, by the sea-side; who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, ^a Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: Deut. 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11.

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. 1 Pet. 1. 17.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (*I say*) you know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power; who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses, chosen before of God.

even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead.

Jer. 31. 34. Mic. 7. 18. 43 ^b To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter being accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The gospel being spread into Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, Barnabas is sent to confirm them. 26 The disciples there are first called Christians. 27 They send relief to the brethren in Judea in time of famine.

And the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, & didst eat with them

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying; and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me,

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay, and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, as on us ^a Chap. at the beginning. 2. 4.

16 Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, ^b John indeed baptized with water; ^b John but ye shall be baptized with the ^c 1. 26, holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ ^c Now they which were ^c Chap. scattered abroad upon the persecu- 8. 1, tion that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews onely.

20 And some of them were men
B b b b of

152 of Cyprus and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleaved, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

¶ Or,
in the
church.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves ¶ with the church, and taught much people; and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James, and imprisoneth Peter, whom an angel delivereth upon the prayers of the church. 20 In his pride, taking to himself the honour due to God, he is stricken by an angel, and dieth miserably. 24 After his death the word of God prospereth.

¶ Or,
began.

NOW about that time, Herod the King ¶ stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further, to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of souldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison; but ¶ prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. ¶ Or, in-
stant and
earnest

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night was Peter was sleeping between two souldiers, bound with two chains; and the keepers before the door kept the prison. made.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and binde on thy sandals: And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, & forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together, praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came ¶ to hearken, named Rhoda. ¶ Or, to
ask who
was there

14 And

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckening unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and there abode.

¶ Or have an hostile minde, intending war. † Gr. that was over the kings bed-chamber.

20 ¶ And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus † the kings chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, & gave up the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

¶ Or, charge, chap. 11. 29, 30.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministry, & took with them John whose surname was Mark.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the forcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Jesus is

Christ. 42 The Gentiles beleeve; 45 but the Jews gainsay, and blaspheme: 46 whereupon they turn to the Gentiles. 48 As many as were ordained to life, beleeved.

Now there were in the church that was at Antioch, certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch and Saul.

¶ Or, Herods foster-brother.

2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to their minister.

6 And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain forcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus:

7 Which was with the deputy of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God,

8 But Elymas the forcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie and all mischief, thou childe of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the deputy when he saw what was done, beleeved, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

B b b b 2

13 Now

154

13 Now when Paul and his companie loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men *and* brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckening with *his* hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people: when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, ^b and with an high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of fourtie years † suffered he their manners in the wilderness.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, ^c he divided their land to them *or feedeth* by lot.

20 And after that ^d he gave unto them judges, about the space of four hundred and fifty years, untill Samuel the prophet.

21 ^e And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of fourtie years.

22 And when he had removed him, ^f he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, ^g I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 ^h Of this mans seed hath God according to *his* promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour Jesus:

24 ⁱ When John had first preached before his coming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, ^k Whom think ye that I am? I am not *he*. But behold, there com-

meth one after me, whose shoes of *his* feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men *and* brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you seareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath-day, they have fulfilled *them* in condemning *him*.

28 ^l And though they found no ¹ Matth. cause of death *in him*, yet desired ^{27. 22.} they Pilate that he should be slain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took *him* down from the tree, and laid *him* in a sepulchre.

30 ^m But God raised him from the dead: ^m Matth. 28. 6.

31 And he was seen many days of them which came up with him ⁿ Psal. from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are ^{2. 7.} his witnesses unto the people. ^{Heb. 1. 5.}

32 And we declare unto you glad ^o Isa. tidings, how that the promise which ^{55. 3.} was made unto the fathers, [†] Gr.

33 God hath fulfilled the same unto ^{τα ὅσα,} us their children, in that he hath ^{holy,} or raised up Jesus again; as it is also ^{just} written in the second psalm, ^{things:} Thou art my son, this day have I begotten which ^{word the}

34 And as concerning that he raised ^{Septuag.} him up from the dead, ^{now} no both in more to return to corruption, he said the place ^{of Isa.} on this wise, ^{55. 3.} I will give you the sure [†] mercies of David.

35 Wherefore he saith also in ^{and in} another ^{psalm,} ^p Thou shalt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption. ^{thers, use}

36 For David ^{||} after he had served ^{which is} his own generation by the will in the of God, ^q fell on sleep, and was ^{Hebrew,} laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: ^{mercies.}

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption. ^p Psal. 16. 10.

38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through ^{||} Or, ^{after he} this man is preached unto you the ^{had in his} forgiveness of sins: ^{own age}

39 And by him all that beleeve are ^{the will} justified from all things, from which ^{of God.} ye could not be justified by the law ^{1 Kings} of Moses. ^{2. 10.}

† Hab.
1. 5.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken of in the prophets,

41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them † the next sabbath.

† Gr. in
the week
between,
or in the
sabbath
between.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, and religious Proselytes followed Paul & Barnabas; who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next sabbath-day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

† Isa.
49. 6.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

† Matth.
10. 14.

51 But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIV.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted

from Iconium. 8 At Lystra Paul healeth a creeple; whereupon they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They pass through divers churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience. 26 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.

And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks, believed.

2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil-affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Jews, and part with the apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about:

7 And there they preached the gospel.

8 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a creeple from his mothers womb, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter which was before their city, brought

156 oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God,

which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

16 Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.

17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they beleaved.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia:

26 And thence sailed to Antioch,

from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Great diffension ariseth touching circumcision. 6 The apostles consult about it, 22 and send their determination by letters to the churches. 36 Paul and Barnabas, thinking to visit the brethren together, fall at strife, and depart asunder.

And certain men which came down from Judea, taught the brethren, and said, ^a Except ye be ^a Galat. 5. 2. circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small diffension & disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which beleaved, saying, That it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up and said unto them, ^b Men and brethren, ^b Chap. 10. 20. & 11. 13. ye know how that a good while ago, God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and beleve.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the holy Ghost, even as *he did* unto us :

9 And put no difference between us and them, ^c purifying their hearts by faith.

^c Chap. 10. 43.

1 Cor.

1. 2.

^d Matth.

23. 4.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, ^d to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But we beleeve that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles & wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men *and brethren*, hearken unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written,

^e Amos

9. 11.

16 ^e After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up:

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, faith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things strangled, and *from* bloud.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath-day.

22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas; *namely*, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren:

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The apostles, and elders, and brethren send greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, *Ye must* be circumcised, and keep the law; to whom we gave no *such* commandment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 Men that have hazarded their lives, for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden then these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from bloud, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoiced for the *¶* consolation.

¶ Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed *them*.

33 And after they had tarried *there* a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 And some days after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren, in every citie where we have preached the word of the Lord, *and see* how they do.

158

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus;

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria, and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul having circumcised Timothy, 7 and being called by the Spirit from one country to another, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination. 19 For which cause he and Silas are whipped and imprisoned. 26 The prison-doors are opened. 31 The jailer is converted, 37 and they are delivered.

• Rom.
16. 21.

THEN came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek:

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him, because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.

• Chap.
15. 28.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not,

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and first, we were in that city abiding certain days.

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river-side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and abide there. And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel, possessed with a spirit of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying: Or, of Python.

17 The same followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many days. But Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market-place, unto the rulers, Or, court.

20 And

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our citie,

21 And teach customs which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them: and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat them.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jayler to keep them safely.

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison-doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thy self no harm; for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas;

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Beleeve on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced, beleeving in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go,

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romanes, and have cast us into prison; and now do they thrust us out privily? nay verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entered into the house of Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica: 4 where some beleeve, and others persecute him. 10 He is sent to Berea, and preacheth there. 13 Being persecuted at Thessalonica, 15 he cometh to Athens, and disputeth and preacheth the living God to them unknown, 34 whereby many are converted unto Christ.

NOW when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-days reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeved, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which beleeved not, moved with envie, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the citie on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people

6 And

2 Cor.
11.25.
1 Thess.
2,2.

160

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also;

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, That there is another king, *one* Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of minde, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them believed: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens: and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred *¶ Or, full* in him, when he saw the city *¶ whole of idols.* ly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him: and some said,

¶ Or, base fellow. What will this *¶ babler* say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter

forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto *¶ Areopagus*, saying, May *¶ Or*, we know what this new doctrine, *Mars-hill.* whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certain *It was* strange things to our ears: we would the high- *the high-* know therefore what these things *sest* court mean. *in A-*

21 (For all the Athenians, and *the* strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to hear some new thing.)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the midst of *¶ Mars-hill*, and said, Ye men of *¶ Or, the* Athens, I perceive that in all things *court of* ye are too superstitious. *the Are-*

23 For as I passed by, and beheld *opagites.* your *¶ devotions*, I found an altar *¶ Or*, with this inscription, *To THE* gods that *you wor-* UNKNOVVN GOD. Whom there- *ship,* fore ye ignorantly worship, him de- *2 Thess.* clare I unto you.

24 *2. 4.* God that made the world, *Chap.* and all things therein, seeing that he *7. 48.* is Lord of heaven and earth, dwel- *leth* not in temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, *as though he needed* *¶ Psal.* any thing, seeing he giveth to all *50. 8.* life, and breath, and all things;

26 And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and finde him, though he be not far from every one of us:

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his off-spring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God, *we ought not to* *¶ Isa.* think that the Godhead is like unto *40. 18.* gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day

¶ Or,
offered
saith.

day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by *that* man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath ¶ given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certain men clave unto him, and beleaved: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 *Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles.*

9 *The Lord encourageth him in a vision.* 12 *He is accused before Gallio the deputy, but is dismissed.* 18 *Afterwards passing from citie to citie, he strengtheneth the disciples.* 24 *Apollus being more perfectly instructed by Aquila and Priscilla, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacy.*

After these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth;

• Rom.
16.3.

2 And found a certain Jew named • Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italie, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers)

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and perswaded the Jews, and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was Christ.

• Matth.
10.14.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, ^b he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entered into a certain mans house, named Justus, one that worshipped

God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

8 • And Crispus the chief ruler ^c 1 Cor. of the synagogue, beleaved on the 1.14. Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, beleaved, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

11 And he † continued there a † Gr. *sat* year and six moneths, teaching the there. word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgement-seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdness, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you:

15 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it; for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drave them from the judgement-seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, & beat him before the judgement-seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: having shorn ^{bis} head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem: but I will

163 will return again unto you, if God
 1 Cor. will. And he sailed from Ephesus.
 4.19. 22 And when he had landed at
 James Cefarea, and gone up and saluted the
 4.15. church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some
 time there, he departed, and went
 over all the countrey of Galatia and
 Phrygia in order, strengthening all
 the disciples.

24 ¶ And a certain Jew named
 1 Cor. Apollos, born at Alexandria, an elo-
 1.12. quent man, and mightie in the scrip-
 tures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in
 the way of the Lord; and being ser-
 vent in the spirit, he spake and taught
 diligently the things of the Lord,
 knowing onely the baptisme of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly
 in the synagogue. Whom when A-
 quila and Priscilla had heard, they
 took him unto them, and expounded
 unto him the way of God more per-
 fectly.

27 And when he was disposed to
 pass into Achaia, the brethren
 wrote, exhorting the disciples to re-
 ceive him: who, when he was come,
 helped them much which had be-
 lieved through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced
 the Jews, and that publickly, shew-
 ing by the scriptures, that Jesus was
 Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost is given by Pauls
 hands. 9 The Jews blaspheme his
 doctrine, which is confirmed by mi-
 racles. 13 The Jewish exorcists 16 are
 beaten by the devil. 19 Conjuring
 books are burnt. 24 Demetrius, for
 love of gain, raiseth an uproar a-
 gainst Paul, 35 which is appeased
 by the town-clerk.

AND it came to pass, that while
 Apollos was at Corinth, Paul ha-
 ving passed through the upper coasts,
 came to Ephesus: and finding certain
 disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye re-
 ceived the holy Ghost since ye be-
 lieved? And they said unto him, We
 have not so much as heard whether
 there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto
 what then were ye baptized? And
 they said, Unto Johns baptisme.

4 Then said Paul, John verily baptiz-
 ed with the baptisme of re-
 pentance, saying unto the people,
 That they should beleeve on him
 which should come after him, that
 is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were
 baptized in the name of the Lord
 Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his
 hands upon them, the holy Ghost
 came on them; and they spake with
 tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about
 twelve.

8 And he went into the syna-
 gogue, and spake boldly for the
 space of three moneths, disputing
 and perswading the things concern-
 ing the kingdome of God.

9 But when divers were hardened,
 and beleeved not, but spake evil of
 that way before the multitude, he
 departed from them, and separated
 the disciples, disputing daily in the
 school of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space
 of two years; so that all they which
 dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the
 Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought special mi-
 racles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were
 brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs
 or aprons, and the diseases departed
 from them, and the evil spirits went
 out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vaga-
 bond Jews, exorcists, took upon them
 to call over them which had evil
 spirits, the name of the Lord Je-
 sus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus
 whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of
 one Sceva a Jew, and chief of the
 priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered
 and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I
 know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil
 spirit was, leapt on them, and over-
 came them, and prevailed against
 them, so that they fled out of that
 house naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to all
 the Jews and Greeks also dwel-
 ling at Ephesus; and fear fell on
 them all, and the name of the
 Lord

Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleevved came, and confessed, & shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia, and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred unto him, Timotheus and Erastus; but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silver-smith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen.

25 Whom he called together with the work-men of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth:

26 Moreover, ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands:

27 So that not onely this our craft is in danger to be set at nought; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of

Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of † Gr. the great goddess Diana, and of the ^{the} image which fell down from Jupiter? ^{temple-keeper.}

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, ‖ the ‖ Or, the law is open, and there are deputies; ^{court-} let them implead one another. ^{days are}

39 But if ye enquire any thing ^{kept.} concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a ‖ lawfull assembly. ‖ Or,

40 For we are in danger to be ^{ordinary.} called in question for this days uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lords supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus having fallen down dead, 10 is raised to life.

17 At Miletus he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himself, 28 committeth Gods flock to them, 29 warneth them

of false teachers, 32 commendeth them to God, 36 prayeth with them, and goeth his way.

AND after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, & had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, & came unto them to Troas in five days, where we abode seven days

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech untill midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, & sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.

14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios; and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many tears, and temptations which befell me by the lying in wait of the Jews:

20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions shall abide me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your

your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three years, I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans silver, or gold, or apparel.

34 Yea, you your selves know, that these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak; and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul will not by any means be dissuaded from going to Jerusalem. 9 Philips daughters, prophetesses. 17 Paul cometh to Jerusalem: 27 where he is apprehended, and in great danger, 31 but by the chief captain is rescued, and permitted to speak to the people.

And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course unto Coos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those days, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls companie departed, and came unto Cesarea; and we entred into the house of Philip the evangelist, (which was one of the seven) and abode with him.

9 And the same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep, and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.

14 And when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And

1 Cor.

4.12.

1 Thess.

2.9.

2 Thess.

3.8.

Chap.

6.5.

166

15 And after those days we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also *certain* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the *day* following Paul went in with us unto James; and all the elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which belevee, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise *their* children, neither to walk after the customs.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: we have four men which have a vow on them;

24 Them take, and purifie thy self with them, and be at charges with them, that they may ^b shave *their* heads: and all may know that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy self also walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which belevee, ^c we have written and concluded, that they observe no such thing, save onely that they keep themselves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, & the next day purifying himself ^{wth} them, entred into the temple, ^d to signifie the accomplishment of the days of purification, untill that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and farther, brought Greeks also into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seen before with him in the city, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple)

30 And all the citie was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took souldiers, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chief captain and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded *him* to be bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came upon the stairs, so it was that he was born of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?

38 ^e Art not thou that Egyptian ^e Chap. which before these days madest an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers? 5.36.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a city is

^b Num.
6.18.
Chap.
18.18.

^c Chap.
15.20.

^d Num.
6.13.

in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckened with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth at large, how he was converted to the faith, 17 and called to his apostleship. 22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 24 He should have been scourged; 25 but claiming the privilege of a Roman he escapeth.

MEN, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he faith)

3 ^{Chap. 21. 39.} I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus a citie in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city, at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

4 ^{Chap. 8. 3.} And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

5 As also the high priest doth bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to pass, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecuest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me, saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witness unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to pass, that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance;

18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, & get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in every synagogue them that beleevd on thee.

20 ^{Chap. 7. 58.} And when the bloud of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lift up their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air,

C c c c

24 The

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, & bade that he should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying, take heed what thou doest; for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free-born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commandeth them to smite him. 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Jews laying wait for Paul 20 is declared unto the chief captain. 27 He sendeth him to Felix the governour.

And Paul earnestly beholding the A council, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, untill this day.

2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Revilest thou Gods high priest?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not bre-

thren, that he was the high priest: For it is written, ^a Thou shalt not ^a Exod. speak evil of the ruler of thy people. 22. 28.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, Men and brethren, ^b I ^b Phil. am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: 3. 5. ^c of the hope and resurrection of the ^c Chap. dead, I am called in question. 24. 21.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.

8 ^d For the Sadducees say that ^d Matth. there is no resurrection, neither an- 22. 23. gel nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and strove, saying, We finde no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves ^{||} under a curse, ^{||} Or, saying, that they would neither eat with an oath of execration nor drink till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then forty which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing untill we have slain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the council, signifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then

|| Or,
tortured
him.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring down Paul to morrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them mo then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to go to Cesarea, and horse-men threescore and ten, and spear-men two hundred, at the third hour of the night.

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the governour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governour Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but

to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul and brought him by night to Antipatris

32 On the morrow they left the horse-men to go with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea and delivered the epistle to the governour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the governour had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia;

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods judgement-hall.

CHAP. XXIV.

1 Paul being accused by Tertullus the oratour, 10 answereth for his life & doctrine. 24 He preacheth Christ to the governour and his wife. 26 The governour hopeth for a bribe, but in vain. 27 At last going out of his office, he leaveth Paul in prison.

And after five days, Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and with a certain oratour named Tertullus, who enformed the governour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept it always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarenes:

170

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lyfias came upon us, and with great violence took *him* away out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying, that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckened unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for my self:

11 Because that thou mayest understand that there are yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confess unto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeving all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many years, I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

^a Chap.
21. 27.

18^a Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same *here* say, if they have found any evil-doing in me, while I stood before the council,

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, ^b Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you ^c Chap. 23. 6. this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of *that* way, he deferred them, and said, When Lyfias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let *him* have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come unto him.

24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 But after two years, Porcius Festus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

2 The Jews accuse Paul before Festus.

8 He answereth for himself, 11 and appealeth unto Cesar. 14 Afterwards Festus openeth his matter to king Agrippa, 23 and he is brought forth.

25 Festus cleareth him to have done nothing worthy of death.

NOW when Festus was come into the province, after three days he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the high priest, and the chief of the Jews enformed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly *thither*.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which

which among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them || more then ten days, he went down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgement-seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, & laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove;

8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cessars judgement-seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certain days, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had been there many days, Festus declared Pauls cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews enformed me, desiring to have judgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were

come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgement-seat, and I commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And because || I doubted of || Or, such manner of questions, I asked him I was whether he would go to Jerusalem, doubtful and there be judged of these matters. *how to enquire*

21 But when Paul had appealed *hereof.* to be reserved unto the || hearing of || Or, Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar. *judgement.*

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man myself. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signify the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

2 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childhood,

12 and how miraculously he was converted,

converted, and called to his apostleship. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad, whereunto he answereth modestly. 28 Agrippa is almost persuaded to be a Christian. 31 The whole companie pronounce him innocent.

Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself,

2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially, because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes instantly serving God day and night, hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

10 Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death I gave my voice against them.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12 Whereupon as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests;

13 At midday, O king, I saw in

the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee;

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul thou art beside thy self: much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most

* Chap.
8. 3.

° Chap.
9. 2.

most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am perswaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleevest thou the prophets? I know that thou beleevest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not onely thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that sat with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage,

11 but is not beleaved. 14 They are tossed to and fro with tempest, 41 and suffer shipwrack; 22, 34, 44 yet all come safe to land.

And when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we lanchèd, meaning to sail by the coast of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica, being with us.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had lanchèd from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the winde not suffering us, we sailed under || Crete, || Or, over against Salmone:

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called, The fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, & when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with || hurt and much damage, not || Or, onely of the lading and ship, but also of our lives. injury.

11 Nevertheless, the centurion beleeved the master and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means, they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the south-west, and north-west.

13 And when the south-winde blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence they sailed close by Crete.

14 But not long after there || arose || Or, against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ship was caught, & could not bear up into the winde, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain island which is called Claudia, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quicksands, strake sail, and so were driven.

18 And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship;

19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sun nor stars

174

stars in many days appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of *any mans* life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not Paul; thou must be brought before Cesar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs, be of good cheer: for I beleve God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain island.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the ship-men deemed that they drew near to some countrey:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest they should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the ship-men were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast anchors out of the foreship,

31 Paul said to the centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take *some meat*; for this is for your health:

for there shall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took *some meat*.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had || taken || Or, up the anchors, they committed *cut the themselves* unto the sea, and loosed *anchors,* the rudder-bands, and hoised up the *they left* main sail to the winde, and made to *them in* ward shore. *the sea,*

41 And falling into a place where &c. two seas met, they ran the ship aground; and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinderpart was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape.

43 But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from *their* purpose, and commanded that they which could swim, should cast *themselves* first into the sea, & get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on *broken pieces* of the ship: And so it came to pass that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Paul after his shipwrack is kindly entertained of the barbarians. 5 The viper on his hand hurteth him not. 8 He healeth many diseases in the island. 11 They depart towards Rome. 17 He declareth to the Jews the cause of his coming. 24 After his preaching some were perswaded, and some beleevd not. 30 Yet he preacheth there two years.

And when they were escaped, then they knew that the island was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one because of the present rain, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who received us and lodged us three days courteously.

8 And it came to pass that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three days.

13 And from thence we set a compass, and came to Rhegium: and after one day the south-winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet

us as far as Appii-forum, & the Three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to pass, that after three days, Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar; not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see you, and to speak with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some beleevved the things ¹ I sa. 6. 9. which were spoken, and some beleeved not. Matth.

13. 14.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, ⁴ 12. after that Paul had spoken one Luke word, Well spake the holy Ghost by 8. 10. Esaias the prophet, unto our fathers, John

12. 40.

26 Saying, ' Go unto this people, Rom. and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and ¹¹ 8. shall

176 shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with *their eyes*, and hear with *their ears*, and understand with *their heart*, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent

unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, & teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 Paul commendeth his calling to the Romanes, 9 and his desire to come to them. 16 What his gospel is, and the righteousness which it sheweth. 18 God is angry with all manner of sin. 21 What were the sins of the Gentiles.



Aul a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an Apostle, 1 separated unto the gospel of God,

2 (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures)

3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh,

† Gr. determined. 4 And † declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

|| Or, to the obedience of faith. 5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship || for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name:

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

|| Or, in my spirit. 9 For God is my witness, whom I serve || with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers,

10 Making request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end you may be established;

12 That is, that I may be comforted together || with you, by the mutual faith both of you and me. || Or, in you.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit || among you also, even as || Or, among other Gentiles. in you.

14 I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, ^b The just shall live by faith. ⁶ Hab. 2. 4.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness, and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. ¹¹ Gal. 3. ^{Hebr.} 10. 38.

19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest || in them; || Or, for God hath shewed it unto them. ¹⁰ to them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by

Or, the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; || so that they are without excuse :

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools :

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible ^d God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves :

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more then the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections : For even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature :

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like || to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to || a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not convenient :

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignitie; whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despitefull, proud, boasters, inventers of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, || without natural affection, implacable, unmercifull :

32 Who knowing the judgement of God, (that they which commit such things are worthy of death) not

only do the same, but || have pleasure in them that do them.

CHAP. II.

1 They that sin, though they condemn it in others, cannot excuse themselves, them.

6 and much less escape the judgement of God, 9 whether they be Jews or Gentiles. 14 The Gentiles cannot escape, 17 nor yet the Jews, 25 whom their circumcision shall not profit, if they keep not the law.

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest : ^a for wherein thou judgest ^a Matth. another, thou condemnest thy self; 7. 2. for thou that judgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgement of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart, ^b treasurest up unto ^b James thy self wrath against the day of ^b 5. 3. wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God; ^c Psal. 62. 12. Matth.

6 ^c Who will render to every man ^c 16. 27. according to his deeds : ^d Revel.

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for ^e Gr. glory, and honour, and immortality; ^e Greek. eternal life : ^f Gr.

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but ^g Deur. obey unrighteousness; indignation, ^g 10. 17. and wrath; ^h 2 Chron.

9 Tribulation and anguish upon ⁱ 19. 7. every soul of man that doeth evil, Job 34. of the Jew first, and also of the ⁱ Gen- 19. tile. ^j Acts 10.

10 But glory, honour, and peace, ^k 34. to every man that worketh good, to ^k Gal. 2. 6. the Jew first, and also to the ^k Gen- Ephes. tile. ^l 6. 9.

11 For ^l there is no respect of persons with God. ^m 3. 25. Coloss.

12 For as many as have sinned ⁿ 1. without law, shall also perish without ⁿ 17. law;

178 law : and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law,

* Matth. 13 (For ^e not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

James 1. 22. 14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

|| Or, the conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts || the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)

|| Or, between them- 16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

selves. 17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God ;

|| Or, triest the things that differ. 18 And knowest his will, and || approveest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,

19 And art confident that thou thy self art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which are in darkness,

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is ^f written.

* Isa. 52. 5. 25 For circumcision verily profireth, if thou keep the law : but if Ezek. 36. 20, 23. thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

26 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the

law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 The Jews prerogative : 3 which they have not lost. 9 Howbeit, the law convinceth them also of sin. 20 Therefore no flesh is justified by the law, 28 but all without difference, by faith onely: 31 and yet the law is not abolished.

W Hat advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way : chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid : yea, let God be true, but ^a every man a liar; as it is ^a Psal. written, ^b That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest ^b Psal. overcome when thou art judged. ^c 51. 4.

5 But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

6 God forbid : for then how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

8 And not rather, as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are we better *then* they? No in no wise : for we have before [†] proved both Jews and Gen- [†] Gr. tiles, that they are all under sin; ^{charged.}

10 As it is written, ^c There is none ^c Psal. righteous, no not one : ^d 14. 1,

11 There is none that understandeth, ^e 2, 3. there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one.

4 Psal. 5. 9. 6 Psal. 140. 3. 7 Psal. 10. 7. 8 Prov. 1. 16. 16. 16. 59. 7. 8. 13^d Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; ^e the poison of asps is under their lips:

14^f whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness.

15^g Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are in their ways:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18^h There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

|| Or, subject to the judgement of God.

20 Thereforeⁱ by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

22 Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that beleeve; for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath || set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the || remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which beleeve in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

29 Is he the God of the Jews one-

ly? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP. IV.

1 Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousness, 10 before he was circumcised. 13 By faith onely he and his seed received the promise. 16 Abraham is the father of all that beleeve. 24 Our faith also shall be imputed to us for righteousness.

What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith the scripture?

4 Abraham beleeved God, and it was^a counted unto him for righteousness. 15. 6.

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, James 2. 23.

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeve in him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works.

7 Saying, ^b Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. 32. 1.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

9 Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision onely, or upon the uncircumcision also? For we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith, which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that beleeve, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be

180 be imputed unto them also :

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision onely, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the law worketh wrath : for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace ; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that onely which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all,

* Gen.
17. 5.
|| Or,
like unto
him.

17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations) || before him whom he believed, even God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were :

18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, ^d So shall thy seed be.

* Gen.
15. 5.

19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred year old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's womb.

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God:

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him ;

24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead,

25 Who was delivered for our of-

fences, and was raised again for our justification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God, ² & joy in our hope; ³ that faith we were reconciled by his blood, when we were enemies, ⁴ we shall much more be saved being reconciled.

12 As sin and death came by Adam, ¹⁷ so much more righteousness and life by Jesus Christ. ²⁰ Where sin abounded, grace did superabound.

Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 * By whom also we have access ^a Ephes. by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoyce in hope of the glory of God. ^{2. 18.}

3 And not onely so, but we glory in tribulations also, ^b knowing that ^c James tribulation worketh patience; ^{1. 3.}

4 And patience, experience; and experience, hope :

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost which is given unto us.

6 For when we were yet without strength, || in due time Christ died ^d Or, for the ungodly. ^{according}

7 For scarcely for a righteous ^e to the man will one die: yet peradventure ^{time.} for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not onely so, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entred into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, || for that all have sinned. ^f Or, in

13 For untill the law sin was in ^{whom.} the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless, death reigned from

from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come :

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one, many be dead ; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, *which is by one man, Jesus Christ*, hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as it *was* by one that sinned, *so is* the gift : for the judgement *was* by one to condemnation ; but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

¶ Or, by one offence.
17 For if ¶ by one mans offence, death reigned by one ; much more they which receive abundance of grace, & of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ

¶ Or, by one offence.
18 Therefore as ¶ by the offence of one judgement came upon all men to condemnation : even so ¶ by the righteousness of one, *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life

¶ Or, by one righteousness.
19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners : so by the obedience of one, shall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover, the law entered, that the offence might abound : But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound :

21 That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not live in sin, 2 for we are dead unto it, 3 as appeareth by our baptisme. 12 Let not sin reign any more, 18 because we have yeilded our selves to the service of righteousness, 23 and for that death is the wages of sin.

What shall we say then ? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound ?

2 God forbid : how shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein ?

* Gal. 3. 27.
¶ Or, are.

3 Know ye not, that ^a so many of us as ¶ were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death ?

4 Therefore we are ^b buried with him by baptisme into death : that like as Christ was raised up from the

dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death : we shall be also *in the likeness of his resurrection* :

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead, is [†] freed [†] Gr. justified. from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleeve that we shall also live with him :

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more ; death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once : but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also your selves to be dead indeed unto sin ; but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yeeld ye your members as [†] instruments of unrighteousness unto sin : but yeeld your selves ^{arms, or weapons} unto God, as those that are alive from the dead ; and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you : for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then ? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace ? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that ^c to whom ^c John ye yeeld your selves servants to 8. 34. obey, his servants ye are to whom ye ² Per. obey ; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness ? 2. 19.

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin ; but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine [†] which was delivered you. [†] Gr.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye *where to* became the servants of righteousness ye were

19 I speak after the manner of delivered men, because of the infirmities of your flesh : for as ye have yeilded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity, unto iniquity ; even

182 even so now yeeld your members servants to righteousness, unto holiness.

† Gr. 20 righteousness, 20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free † from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord

CHAP. VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth. 4 But we are dead to the law. 7 Yet is not the law sin, 12 but holy, just, good, 16 as I acknowledge who am grieved because I cannot keep it.

K Now ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man, as long as he liveth?

* 1 Cor. 7. 39. 2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

3 So then if while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

† Gr. 5 For when we were in the flesh, the † motions of sins which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

|| Or, 6 But now we are delivered from the law, || that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had

not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known || lust, except the law || Or, had said, Thou shalt not covet. concupi.

8 But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. science. 20. 17. Exod. Deut. 5.

9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy; and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

13 Was then that which is good, made death unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15 For that which I do, I † allow † Gr. not: for what I would, that do I not; know. but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man.

23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my minde, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who

Or, this body of death.

who shall deliver me from || the body of this death !

25 I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the minde I my self serve the law of God ; but with the flesh, the law of sin.

CHAP. VIII.

1 They that are in Christ, and live according to the Spirit, are free from condemnation. 5, 13 What harm cometh of the flesh, 6, 14 and what good of the Spirit, 17 and what of being Gods children : 19 whose glorious deliverance all things long for. 29 It was beforehand decreed from God. 38 What can sever us from his love ?

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son, in the likeness of sinfull flesh, and || for sin condemned sin in the flesh :

4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, do minde the things of the flesh : but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For † to be carnally minded, is death ; but † to be spiritually minded, is life and peace :

7 Because † the carnal minde is enmity against God : for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin ; but the Spirit is life, because of righteousness.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell

in you ; he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortal bodies, || by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 183

12 Therefore brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. *because of his Spirit.*

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die : but if ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear ; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. 4. 6. *Gal.*

16 The Spirit it self beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heirs ; heirs of God, and joynt-heirs with Christ : if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope :

21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that || the whole || creation groaneth, and travaileth in pain together untill now : *Or, every creature*

23 And not onely they, but our selves also, which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we our selves groan within our selves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body. *Luke 21. 28.*

24 For we are saved by hope : But hope that is seen, is not hope : for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for ?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our

Or, by a sacrifice for sin.

† Gr. the mind-ing of the flesh.

† Gr. the mind-ing of the Spirit.

† Gr. the mind-ing of the flesh.

184

our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

|| Or,
that.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of the Spirit, || because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

28 And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among manie brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that justifieth:

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

* Psal.
44. 22.

36 (As it is written, * For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay in all these things we are more then conquerers, through him that loved us.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord,

CH AP. IX.

1 Paul is sorry for the Jews. 7 All the seed of Abraham were not the children of the promise. 18 God hath mercy upon whom he will. 21 The potter may do with his clay what he list. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Jews were foretold. 31 The cause why so few Jews embraced the righteousness of faith.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the holie Ghost,

2 That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my self were || accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsmen according to the flesh: || Or, separated.

4 Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glorie, and the || covenants, and the giving of || Or, testaments, the law, and the service of God, and the promises;

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but in * Isaac shall thy seed be called. * Gen. 21. 12.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but * the children * Gal. 4. of the promise are counted for the 28. seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara * Gen. shall have a son. 18. 10.

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth) * Gen. 25. 23.

12 It was said unto her, The * || elder shall serve the || younger. || Or,

13 As it is written, * Jacob have greater. I loved, but Esau have I hated. || Or,

14 What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God * Mal. forbid. 1. 2. 3.

15 For

¹Exod.
33. 19.

15 For he saith to Moses ¹ I will have mercie on whom I will have mercie, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercie.

²Exod.
9. 16.

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, ² Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercie on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet finde fault? For who hath resisted his will?

|| Or, an-
swerest
again, or
disputest
with
God.

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that || repliest against God? ³ shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

⁴Isa.
45. 9.

21 Hath not the ¹ potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

⁵Jer.
18. 6.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath || fitted to destruction:

⁶Wisd.
15. 7.

|| Or,
made up.

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glorie on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glorie?

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews onely, but also of the Gentiles.

⁷Hosea
2. 23.

25 As he saith also in Osee, ⁸ I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her, beloved, which was not beloved.

⁹Pet. 2.
10.

¹⁰Hof. 1.
10.

26 ¹ And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called, the children of the living God.

¹¹Isa. 10.
22, 23.

27 Esaus also crieth concerning Israel, ¹² Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

|| Or, the
account.

28 For he will finish || the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Esaus said before, 185

¹³ Except the Lord of sabaoth had ¹⁴ left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith:

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it, not by faith, but as it were ¹⁵ by the works of the law: for they 14. and stumbled at that stumbling-stone; 28. 16.

33 As it is written, ¹⁶ Behold, I ¹⁷ lay in Sion a stumbling-stone, and 2. 6. rock of offence: and whosoever be- || Or, con- leeveth on him, shall not be || ashamed. founded.

CHAP. X.

5 The scripture sheweth the difference betwixt the righteousness of the law, and this of faith; ¹⁸ and that all, both Jew and Gentile, that beleieve, shall not be confounded; ¹⁹ and that the Gentiles shall receive the word, and beleieve. ²⁰ Israel was not Ignorant of these things.

Brethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that beleeveth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, ²¹ That ²² the man which doeth those things, 18. 5. shall live by them. Ezek.

6 But the righteousness which is ²³ of faith, speaketh on this wise, ²⁴ Say Gal. 3. not in thine heart, Who shall ascend 12. into heaven? (that is to bring Christ ²⁵ down from above) 30. 12.

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead) ²⁶ Dent.

8 But what saith it? ²⁷ The word is 30. 14.

D d d d a

nigh

186 nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt beleeve in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleeveeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

^d Isa. 28. 11 For the scripture saith, ^d Whosoever beleeveeth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

^e Joel 2. 32. ^e For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

^f Acts 2. 21. 14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not beleeved? and how shall they beleeve in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written,

^f Isa. 52. 7. How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

^g Nahum 1. 15. 16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, ^g Lord, who hath beleeved ^g our report?

^h John 12. 38. 17 So then, faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

ⁱ Gr. the hearing of us. 18 But I say, have they not heard? Yes verily, ⁱ their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

^j Or, preaching. 19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First, Moses saith, ^j I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

^k Psal. 19. 4. 20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, ^k I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

^l Deut. 32. 21. 21 But to Israel he saith, ^l All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected, though the rest were

hardened. 16 There is hope of their conversion. 18 The Gentiles may not insult upon them: 26 for there is a promise of their salvation. 33 Gods judgements are unsearchable.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 ^a Lord, they have killed thy ^a 1 King, prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. 19. 14.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? ^b I have reserved to ^b 1 King, my self seven thousand men, who 19. 18. have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ^c blinded:

8 According as it is written, ^c God hath given them the spirit of ^c flum- ^c Or, ed. ber, ^d eyes that they should not see, ^d Isa. and ears that they should not hear, 29. 10. unto this day. ^e Or,

9 And David saith, ^e Let their remorse- table be made a snare, and a trap, and ^f Isa. 6. 9. a stumbling-block, and a recom- ^f Psal. pense unto them. 69. 22.

10 ^f Let their eyes be darkened, ^f Psal. that they may not see, and bow down 69. 23. their back alway.

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the ^g di- ^g Or, de- minishing of them the riches of the ^g Or, de- cay, or Gentiles: how much more their loss. fulness?

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation *them which are my flesh*, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world; what *shall* the receiving of *them be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first-fruit *be* holy, the lump *is* also *holy*: and if the root *be* holy, so *are* the branches.

17 And if some of the branches *be* broken off, and thou being a wilde olive-tree, wert grafted in *amongst* them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive-tree;

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear.

21 For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heed* lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodness, and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but towards thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graff them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is wilde by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive-tree; how much more shall these which *be* the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive-tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mysterie (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that *blindness* in part is happened to Israel, untill the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall be sa-

ved: as it is written, *There shall* 187
come out of Sion the deliverer, and *Isa. 59.*
shall turn away ungodliness from *20.*
Jacob.

27 For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins

28 As concerning the gospel, *they are enemies* for your sake: but as touching the election, *they are beloved* for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance.

30 For as ye in times past have not *believed* God, yet have now ob- *Or,*
tained mercy through their unbelief: *obeyed.*

31 Even so have these also now not *believed*, that through your *Or,*
mercy they also may obtain mercy. *obeyed.*

32 For God hath *concluded* *Or,*
them all in unbelief, that he might *shut them*
have mercy upon all. *all up to-*

33 O the depth of the riches both *gether.*
of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable *are* his judgements, and his ways past finding out!

34 *For* who hath known the *Isa.*
minde of the Lord, or who hath been *40. 13.*
his counsellor? *Wisd. 9.*

35 Or who hath first given to *11.*
him, and it shall be recompensed un- *1 Cor. 2.*
to him again? *16.*

36 For of him, and through him, and to him *are* all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercies must move us to please God. 3 No man must think too well of himself, 6 but attend every one on that calling, wherein he is placed. 9 Love, and many other duties are required of us. 19 Revenge is specially forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but *be* ye transformed by *Ephef.*
the renewing of your minde, that *4. 23.*
ye may *prove* what *is* that good, *Ephef.*
and acceptable and perfect will of *5. 17.*
God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly then he ought to think;

188 but to think † soberly according as
 ¶ Gr. 20 God hath dealt ^c to every man the
 sobriety. measure of faith.
^c Ephes. 4 For ^d as we have many mem-
 4. 7. bers in one body, and all members
^d 1 Cor. have not the same office:
 12. 12. 5 So we being many are one body
 in Christ, and every one members
 one of another.
^e 1 Pet. 4. 6 ^e Having then gifts, differing
 10, 11. according to the grace that is given
 to us, whether prophesie, *let us pro-*
phesie according to the proportion of
faith:
 7 Or ministerie, *let us wait on our*
ministring; or he that teacheth, on
teaching;
 8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhor-
 ¶ Or, im- tation: he that ¶ giveth, *let him do it*
 parteth. ¶ with simplicitie; he that ruleth,
 ¶ Or; with diligence; he that sheweth mer-
 liberally. cie, with cheerfulness.
 9 *Let love be without dissimulation.*
 Abhor that which is evil, cleave
 to that which is good.
^g Hebr. 10 ^f Be kindly affectioned one to
 13. 1. another; ¶ with brotherly love, in
 ¶ Or, in honour preferring one another:
 the love 11 Not slothfull in business: fer-
 of the vent in spirit; serving the Lord:
 brethren. 12 Rejoycing in hope; patient in
 tribulation; continuing instant in
 prayer:
 13 Distributing to the necessitie
 of saints; given to hospitalitie.
^h Matth. 14 ^h Bless them which persecute
 5. 44. you: bless, and curse not.
 ¶ Or, 15 Rejoyce with them that do re-
 be con- joyce, and weep with them that weep.
 tented 16 Be of the same minde one
 with towards another. Minde not high
 mean things, but ¶ condescend to men of
 things. low estate. ^b Be not wise in your own
^b Prov. conceits.
 3. 7. 17 ⁱ Recompense to no man evil
 Isa. 5. 21. for evil. Provide things honest in the
ⁱ Prov. 20. 22. sight of all men.
ⁱ Theff. 18 If it be possible, as much as li-
 5. 15. eth in you, ^k live peaceably with all
ⁱ 1 Pet. 1. 9 men.
^k Hebr. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your
 12. 14. selves, but rather give place unto
ⁱ Deut. wrath: for it is written, ⁱ Vengeance
 32. 35. is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.
 Hebr. 10. 20 ^m Therefore if thine enemy
 30. hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give
^m Prov. him drink: for in so doing thou shalt
 25. 21. heap coals of fire on his head.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but
 overcome evil with good.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Subjection, and many other duties
 we ow to the magistrates. 8 Love is
 the fulfilling of the law. 11 Gluttony
 and drunkenness, and the works of
 darkness, are out of season in the
 time of the gospel.

Let every soul ^a be subject unto ^a Tit. 3. 1.
 the higher powers. For ^b there is ^b 1 Pet. 2.
 no power but of God: the powers ^c 13.
 that be, are ¶ ordained of God. ^b Wild.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth ^d 6. 3.
 the power, resisteth the ordinance of ¶ Or,
 God: and they that resist, shall re- ordered.
 ceive to themselves damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to
 good works, but to the evil. Wilt
 thou then not be afraid of the power?
 do that which is good, and thou shalt
 have praise of the same:

4 For he is the minister of God to
 thee for good. But if thou do that
 which is evil, be afraid; for he bear-
 eth not the sword in vain: for he is
 the minister of God, a revenger to exe-
 cute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be sub-
 ject, not onely for wrath, but also for
 conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tri-
 bute also: for they are Gods mini-
 sters, attending continually upon this
 very thing.

7 ^c Render therefore to all their ^c Matth.
 dues: tribute to whom tribute is due, ^d 22. 21.
 custome to whom custome, fear to
 whom fear, honour to whom honour.

8 Ow no man any thing, but to
 love one another: for he that loveth
 another, hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this, ^d Thou shalt not commit ^d Exod.
 adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou ^e 20.
 shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear ^e Deut. 5.
 false witness, Thou shalt not covet;
 and if there be any other command-
 ment, it is briefly comprehended in
 this saying, namely, ^e Thou shalt love ^e Lev. 19.
 thy neighbour as thy self. ^f 18.

10 Love worketh no ill to his ^f Matth.
 neighbour: therefore love is the ful- ^f 22. 39.
 filling of the law. ^f Gal. 5.

11 And that, knowing the time, ^g 14.
 that now it is high time to awake out ^g James
 of sleep: for now is our salvation ^g 2. 8.
 nearer then when we beleaved.

12 The night is far spent, the day

is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

Or, decently. Luke 21. 34. 13 Let us walk || honestly as in the day; [†]not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

Gal. 5. 16. 1 Pet. 2. 11. 14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and ^s make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

CHAP. XIV.

3 Men may not contemn nor condemn one the other for things indifferent:

13 but take heed that they give no offence in them: 15 For that the apostle proveth unlawfull by many reasons.

Or, not to judge his doubtful thoughts. Him that is weak in the faith receive you, but || not to doubtful disputations.

2 For one beleeveth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

James 4. 12. 4 ^a Who art thou that judgest another mans servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth: Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth everie day alike. Let every man be || fully perswaded in his own minde.

Or, fully assured. Or, observeth. 6 He that || regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy

brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for ^bwe shall all ^bstand before the judgement-seat of Christ. 189 2 Cor. 5. 10.

11 For it is written, ^cAs I live, ^cIsa. saith the Lord, every knee shall bow 45. 23. to me, and everie tongue shall confess to God. Phil. 2. 10.

12 So then everie one of us shall give account of himself to God

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling-block, or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing [†]unclean of it self: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be [†]unclean, to him it is unclean. † Gr. common. † Gr. common.

15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not [†]charitably. ^a Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. † or. according to charity. † Cor. 8. 11.

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the holie Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meat destroy not the work of God. ^e All things indeed are pure; ^e Tit. 1. but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. 15.

21 It is good neither to eat ^fflesh, ^f1 Cor. nor to drink wine, nor any thing 8. 13. whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thy self before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. || Or, discerneth and putteth a difference between meats.

23 And he that || doubteth, is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith, is sin.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must bear with the weak.

2 We may not please our selves,

3 for Christ did not so, 7 but receive

190

ceive one the other, as Christ did us all, 8 both Jews, 9 and Gentiles. 15 Paul excuseth his writing, 28 and promiseth to see them, 30 and requesteth their prayers.

WE then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selves.

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

^a Psal.
69. 9.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself; but as it is written, ^a The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.

4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning; that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

^b 1 Cor.
1. 10.
|| Or,
after the
example
of.

5 ^b Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be like-minded one towards another, || according to Christ Jesus:

6 That ye may with one minde and one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glorie of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

^c Psal.
18. 49.

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercie; as it is written, ^c For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

^d Deut.
32. 43.

10 And again he saith, ^d Rejoyce ye Gentiles with his people.

^e Psal.
117. 1.

11 And again, ^e Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

^f Isa. 11.
10.

12 And again Esaias saith, ^f There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in beleevings, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holie Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have

written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the || offering up of the Gentiles might || Or, be acceptable, being sanctified by the holie Ghost. ^g sacrifici-
cing.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glorie through Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signes & wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another mans foundation:

21 But as it is written, ^h To whom ^h Isa. 53. he was not spoken of, they shall see: 15. and they that have not heard, shall understand.

22 For which cause also I have been || much hindred from coming to || Or, you. ⁱ many

23 But now having no more place ^j ways, or in these parts, and having a great ^j often-
desire these many years to come un-
to you; ^j times.

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled ^k with your company. ^k Gr.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minister unto the saints. ^l with you
v. 32.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debtors they are. For ^m if the ^m 1 Cor. 9. 11. Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their dutie is also to minister unto them in carnal things.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this

this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am sure that when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christs sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me;

31 That I may be delivered from them that || do not beleve in Judea; and that my service which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul willetth the brethren to greet many; 17 and adviseth them to take heed of those which cause dissension and offences; 21 and after sundry salutations endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

3 Greet ^{1 AAs} Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus: 18.2,16.

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not onely I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved,

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus || household.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. || Or, friends. Greet them that be of the || household || Or, of Narcissus, which are in the friends. Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 ^b Salute one another with an ^b 1 Cor. holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you. 16.20. 2 Cor.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, 13.12. mark them which cause divisions 1 Pet. and offences, contrary to the doctrine 5.14. which ye have learned; and avoid them.

18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and || simple concerning evil.

20 And the God of peace shall || bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen. || Or, tread.

21 ^c Timotheus my work-fellow, ^c AAs and Lucius and Jason and Sosipater 16.1. my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, (according to the revelation of the mystérie,

|| Or,

friends.

|| Or,

friends.

|| Or,
are diso-
bedient.

2 Cor.

13.12.

1 Pet.

5.14.

|| Or,
harmless.

|| Or,

tread.

^c AAs

16.1.

192 myſterie, ^d which was kept ſecret
^a Ephel. ſince the world began,
 3. 9. 26 But now is made manifeſt, and
 Col. 1. 26 by the ſcriptures of the prophets
 according to the commandment
 of the everlaſting God, made known
 to all nations for the obedience of
 faith)

27 To God onely wiſe, be glo-
 ry through Jeſus Chriſt for ever.
 Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from
 Corinthus, and ſent by Phebe
 ſervant of the church at Cen-
 chrea.

The firſt epiſtle of Paul the apoſtle, to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

After his ſalutation and thanksgiving,
 10 he exhorteth them to unity, 12 and
 reproveth their diſſenſions. 18 God
 deſtroyeth the wiſdome of the wiſe
 21 by the fooliſhneſſ of preaching;
 and 26 calleth not the wiſe, mighty,
 and noble, but 27, 28 the fooliſh,
 weak, and men of no account.



Paul called to be an
 apoſtle of Jeſus
 Chriſt, through the
 will of God, and
 Soſthenes our bro-
 ther,

2 Unto the church
 of God which is at Corinth, to them
 that ^a are ſanctified in Chriſt Jeſus,
^b called to be ſaints, with all that in
 every place call upon the name of
 Jeſus Chriſt our Lord, both theirs
 and ours.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace
 from God our Father, and from the
 Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

4 I thank my God always on your
 behalf, for the grace of God which
 is given you by Jeſus Chriſt;

5 That in every thing ye are en-
 riched by him, in all utterance, and
 in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimony of Chriſt
 was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no
 gift; waiting for the † coming of our
 Lord Jeſus Chriſt:

8 Who ſhall alſo confirm you un-
 to the end, that ye may be blameleſſ
 in the day of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

9 ^c God is faithfull, by whom
 ye were called unto the fellow-
 ſhip of his Son Jeſus Chriſt our
 Lord.

10 Now I beſeech you, brethren,
 by the name of our Lord Jeſus
 Chriſt, that ye all ſpeak the ſame
 thing, and that there be not diviſions

among you; but that ye be perfectly
 joyned together in the ſame minde,
 and in the ſame judgement.

11 For it hath been declared unto
 me of you, my brethren, by them
 which are of the houſe of Chloe, that
 there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I ſay, that every one
 of you ſaith, I am of Paul, and I of
^d Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of ^d A&s
 Chriſt. 18. 24.

13 Is Chriſt divided? was Paul
 crucified for you? or were ye bapti-
 zed in the name of Paul?

14 I thank God, that I baptized
 none of you, but ^e Crifpus and ^e A&s
 Gaius: 18. 8.

15 Leſt any ſhould ſay, that I
 had baptized in mine own name.

16 And I baptized alſo the houſ-
 hold of Stephanas: beſides, I know
 not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Chriſt ſent me not to ba-
 ptize, but to preach the goſpel: ^f 2 Pet.
 not with wiſdome of || words, leſt ^{1. 16.}
 the croſs of Chriſt ſhould be made of ^{|| Or,}
 none effect. ^{Speech.}

18 For the preaching of the croſs ^{5 Rom.}
 is to them that periſh, fooliſhneſſ: ^{1. 16.}
 but unto us which are ſaved, it is the ^b Iſa.
⁵ power of God. 29. 14.

19 For it is written, ^b I will de-
 ſtroy the wiſdome of the wiſe, and ^{1. 16.}
 will bring to nothing the underſtand-
 ing of the prudent. ^b Iſa.

20 ⁱ Where is the wiſe? where ⁱ Iſa. 33.
 is the ſcribe? where is the diſputer ^{18.}
 of this world? hath not God made
 fooliſh the wiſdome of this world?

21 ^k For after that, in the wiſdome ^k Rom.
 of God, the world by wiſdome knew ^{1. 20.}
 not God, it pleaſed God by the foo-
 liſhneſſ of preaching to ſave them
 that beleeve.

22 For the ^l Jews require a ſigne, ^l Matth.
 and the Greeks ſeek after wiſdome: ^{12. 38.}

23 But we preach Chriſt cruci-
 fied,

^a A&s

15. 9.

^b Rom.

1. 7.

† Gr.
 revelati-
 on.

^c 1 Theſſ.
 5. 24.

† Gr.
 ſchiſmes.

fied, unto the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks, foolishness;

24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25 Because the foolishness of God is wiser then men; and the weakness of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, nor many mighty, nor many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty;

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29 That no flesh should glorie in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That, according as it is written, ^m Hethat glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

He declareth that his preaching, though it bring not excellency of speech, or of humane wisdom; yet consisteth in the 4, 5 power of God; and so far excelleth the wisdom of this world, and humane sense, as that the natural man cannot understand it.

And I, brethren, when I came to you, ^a came not with excellencie of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimonie of God.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching ^b was not with enticing words of mans wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought.

7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mysterie, even the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world unto our glorie.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, ^c Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13 ^d Which things also we speak, ^e 2 Pet. 1. 16. not in the words which mans wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. ^f Or,

14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: ^g *eth.* for they are foolishness unto him; ^h *Or, discerned.* neither can he know them, because ⁱ *they are spiritually discerned.* ^j Isa. 40.

15 ^k But he that is spiritual, ^l *judgeth all things, yet he himself is not judged of no man.* ^m 9. 13.

16 ⁿ For who hath known the minde of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the minde of Christ. ^o *shall.* ^p Rom. 11. 34.

CHAP. III.

2 Milk is fit for children. 3 Strife and division, arguments of a fleshly minde.

7 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing. 9 The ministers are Gods fellow-workmen. 11 Christ the onely foundation. 16 Men the temples of God, 17 which must be kept holie. 19 The wisdom of

Jer. 23. 24.
1 Cor. 10. 17.

Chap. 1. 17.

2 Pet. 1. 16.
Or, persuadable.
Gr. be.

of this world is foolishness with God.

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

• Hebr. 5. 12.

2 I have fed you with ^a milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

¶ Or, factions.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and [¶] divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk [†] as men?

† Gr. according to man.

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollos, are ye not carnal?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye beleeved, even as the Lord gave to everie man?

6 I have planted, Apollos watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

• Psal. 62. 12.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: ^b and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.

¶ Or, tillage.

9 For we are labourers together with God: ye are Gods [¶] husbandrie, ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

† Gr. is revealed.

13 Everie mans work shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it [†] shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall trie everie mans work, of what sort it is.

14 If any mans work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans work shall be burnt, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so, as by fire.

16 ^c Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? ^c Chap. 6. 19.

17 If any man [¶] defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holie, which [¶] Or, destroy. temple ye are. ² Cor. 6. 16.

18 Let no man deceive himself: If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God: for it is written, ^d He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. ^d Job. 5. 13.

20 And again, ^e The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. ^e Psal. 94. 11.

21 Therefore let no man glorie in men: for all things are yours:

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours;

23 And ye are Christs; and Christ is Gods.

CHAP. IV.

1 In what account the ministers ought to be had. 7 We have nothing which we have not received. 9 The apostles, spectacles to the world, angels, and men, 13 the filth and off-scouring of the world; 15 yet our fathers in Christ, 16 whom we ought to follow.

LET a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of mans [†] judgement: yea, I judge [†] Gr. not mine own self. day.

4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 ^a Therefore judge nothing before the time, untill the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, & will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God. ^a Matth. 7. 1. Rom. 2. 1.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollos, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think of men, above that which is written, that

that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

† Gr.
disting-
guisheth
thee.

7 For who † maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glorie as if thou hadst not received it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

† Gr.
theatre.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a † spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We are fools for Christs sake, but ye are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong: ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Even unto this present hour, we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place;

ⁱ Aḡs
20.34.

12 ⁱ And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless: being persecuted, we suffer it:

1 Thess.
2.9.

13 ⁱ Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of all things unto this day.

2 Thess.
3.8.

ⁱ Matth.
5.44.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructours in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithfull in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

18 Now some are puffed up as though I would not come to you.

ⁱ Aḡs

19.21.

ⁱ James
4.15.

19 ⁱ But I will come to you shortly, ⁱ if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person 6 is cause rather of shame unto them, then of rejoycing. 7 The old leaven is to be purged out. 10 Hainous offenders are to be shunned and avoided.

IT is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be taken away from among you.

3 ⁱ For I verily as absent in bodie, ⁱ Col. 2.5 but present in spirit, have || judged || Or, already, as though I were present, determining him that hath so done this mined deed;

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

5 ⁱ To deliver such an one unto ⁱ 1 Tim. Satan for the destruction of the 1.20. flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

6 Your glorying is not good: Know ye not that ⁱ a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? ⁱ Gal. 5.9

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our pass-over || is sacrificed for us.

8 Therefore let us keep || the feast, || Or, not with old leaven, neither with the 1.20. holy-day. leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to companie with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep companie, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner,

196 tortioner, with such an one, no nor to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The Corinthians must not vex their brethren, in going to law with them; 6 especially under infidels. 9 The unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 15 Our bodies are the members of Christ, 19 and temples of the holy Ghost: 16, 17 They must not therefore be defiled.*

DAre any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer your selves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankinde,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor

drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were ^b some of you: ^b Tit. 3. but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 ^c All things are lawfull unto me, but all things are not expedient: ^c Chap. 10. 23. all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any. ^c Or, profitable

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is joyned to an harlot, is one body? for ^d two (saith he) shall be ^d Gen. 2. one flesh. 24.

17 But he that is joyned unto the Lord, is one spirit. ^e Matth. 19. 5.

18 Flee fornication. Every sin Ephes. 5. 31. that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body.

19 What, ^e know ye not that your ^e Chap. 3. 16. body is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ^f ye are bought with a ^f Chap. 7. 23. price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

CHAP. VII.

2 *He treateth of marriage, 4 shewing it to be a remedie against fornication; 10 and that the bond thereof ought not lightly to be dissolved. 18, 20 Every man must be content with his vocation. 25 Virginity wherefore to be embraced. 35 And for what respects we may either marry, or abstain from marrying.*

Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Never-

* Matth. 6. 39.
Luke 6. 29.
Rom. 12. 19.

2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own bodie, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own bodie, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinenzie.

6 But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my self: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, & another after that.

8 If say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry then to burn.

* Matth.
5.32.
and 19.9
Mark
10.11.
Luke
16.18.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, * Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that beleeveth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeveth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

† Gr.
in peace.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us † to peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O

wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk: and so ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised: is any called in uncircumcision? let him not become circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it; but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lords † free-man: likewise also he that is † Gr. called being free, is Christs servant. made

23 * Ye are bought with a price, free. be not ye the servants of men. Chap.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein 6.10. he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present † distress, I say, † Or, that it is good for a man so to be. necessity.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marrie, she hath not sinned: nevertheless, such shall have trouble in the flesh; but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, be as though they had none;

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoyce, as though they rejoyced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not;

31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But

32 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord.

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in bodie and in spirit: but she that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marrie.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessitie, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doeth well.

38 So then, he that giveth her in marriage, doeth well: but he that giveth her not in marriage, doeth better.

^c Rom. 7.2.

39 ^c The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to be married to whom she will; onely in the Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgement: and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 To abstain from meats offered to idols.

8,9 We must not abuse our Christian libertie, to the offence of our brethren:

11 but must bridle our knowledge with charity.

NOW as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charitie edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth no-

thing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that ^a an idol is nothing in the world, and ^a Chap. 10.19. that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we || in him; and one Lord Jesus ^{|| Or, for him,} Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. ^{Rom. 11.}

7 Howbeit there is not in every ^{36.} man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, || are we ^{|| Or, have we the better;} the better; neither if we eat not, || are we the worse. ^{the more.}

9 But take heed lest by any ^{|| Or,} means this || libertie of yours become ^{have we the less.} a stumbling-block to them that are weak. ^{|| Or,}

10 For if any man see thee which ^{power.} hath knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be ^{† Gr. edified.} † emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols:

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore ^b if meat make my ^b Rom. 14.21. brother to offend I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth his libertie, 7 and that the minister ought to live by the gospel:

15 yet that himself hath of his own accord abstained 18 to be either chargeable unto them, 22 or offensive unto any in matters indifferent.

24 Our life is like unto a race.

AM I not an apostle? am I not ^a Chap. 15.8. free? ^a have I not seen Jesus Christ

Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this,

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

Or, woman. 5 Have we not power to lead about a sister a wife as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or faith not the law the same also?

Deut. 25. 4. 9 For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or faith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

Rom. 15. 27. 11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

Num. 18. 20. Deut. 10. 9. and 18. 1. 13 Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things, live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

Or, feed. Gal. 5. 6. 14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

Tim. 1. 17. 15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, wo

is unto me if I preach not the gospel.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law;

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery, is temperate in all things: Now, they do it to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away.

CHAP. X.

1 The sacraments of the Jews 6 are types of ours, 7 and their punishments 11 examples for us. 14 We must flee from idolatry. 21 We must not make the Lords table the table of devils: 24 and in things indifferent we must have regard of our brethren.

E e e

More-

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under
^a the cloud, and all passed through
^b the sea;

² And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea;

³ And did all eat the same ^c spiritual meat;

⁴ And did all drink the same ^d spiritual drink: (For they drank of that spiritual Rock that \parallel followed them: and that Rock was Christ.)

⁵ But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they ^e were overthrown in the wilderness.

⁶ Now these things were \dagger our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as ^f they also lusted.

⁷ Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, ^g The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

⁸ Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and ^h fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

⁹ Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and ⁱ were destroyed of serpents.

¹⁰ Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and ^k were destroyed of the destroyer.

¹¹ Now all these things happened unto them for \parallel ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

¹² Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

¹³ There hath no temptation taken you, but \parallel such as is common to man: but God ^{is} faithfull, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

¹⁴ Wherefore my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

¹⁵ I speak as to wise men: judge ye what I say.

¹⁶ The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

¹⁷ For we being many are one

bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

¹⁸ Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

¹⁹ What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

²⁰ But I say, that the things which the Gentiles ^l sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.

²¹ Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.

²² Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger then he?

²³ All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

²⁴ Let no man seek his own: but every man anothers wealth.

²⁵ Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

²⁶ For ^m the earth is the Lords, and the fulness thereof.

²⁷ If any of them that beleieve not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

²⁸ But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. For ⁿ the earth is the Lords, and the fulness thereof.

²⁹ Conscience I say, not thine own, but of the others: for why is my libertie judged of another mans conscience?

³⁰ For, if I by \parallel grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?

³¹ Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

³² Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the \dagger Gentiles, nor to the church of God:

³³ Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

CHAP. XI.

1 Hereprovethe them because in holy assemblies 4 their men prayed with their heads covered, and 6 women with their heads uncovered: 17 and because generally their meetings were not for the better, but for the worse; as 21 namely, in profaning with their own feasts the Lords supper. 23 Lastly, he calleth them to the first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the || ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman, is the man; and the head of Christ, is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, for as much as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have || power on her head, because of the angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a || covering.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be || divisions among you; and I partly beleeve it.

19 For there must be also || heresies among you, that they which are approved, may be made manifest among you.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, || this is not to eat the Lords supper.

21 For in eating every one taketh before other, his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame || them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I have received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: this do || in remembrance of me.

25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament for a remembrance in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, || ye do shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guiltie of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh

202
|| Or,
judge-
ment.

eth unworthily, eateth and drinketh
|| damnation to himſelf, not diſcern-
ing the Lords bodie.

30 For this cauſe many are weak
and ſickly among you, and many
ſleep.

31 For if we would judge our
ſelves, we ſhould not be judged.

32 But when we are judged we
are chaſtened of the Lord, that we
ſhould not be condemned with the
world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when
ye come together to eat, tarric one
for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let
him eat at home; that ye come not
together unto || condemnation. And
the reſt will I ſet in order when I
come.

|| Or,
judge-
ment.

CHAP. XII.

1 Spiritual gifts 4 are divers, 7 yet
all to profit withall; 8 and to that
end are diverſly beſtowed; 12 that
by the like proportion, as the mem-
bers of a natural body tend all to
the 16 mutual decencie, 22 ſer-
vice, and 26 ſuccour of the ſame
body; 27 ſo we ſhould do one for
another, to make up the myſtical body
of Chriſt.

NOW concerning ſpiritual gifts,
brethren, I would not have you
ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles,
carried away unto theſe dumb idols,
even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to under-
ſtand, that no man ſpeaking by the
Spirit of God, calleth Jeſus || ac-
curſed: and that no man can ſay
that Jeſus is the Lord, but by the
holie Ghoſt.

|| Or;
anathe-
ma.

* Rom.
12. 4,
&c.

4 Now there are diverſities of
gifts, but the ſame Spirit.

5 And there are differences of ad-
miniſtrations, but the ſame Lord.

6 And there are diverſities of o-
perations, but it is the ſame God,
which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifeſtation of the
Spirit, is given to every man to pro-
fit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spi-
rit, the word of wiſdome; to another
the word of knowledge by the ſame
Spirit;

9 To another faith by the ſame

Spirit; to another the gifts of heal-
ing by the ſame Spirit;

10 To another the working of mi-
racles; to another prophesie; to an-
other diſcerning of ſpirits; to another
divers kinds of tongues; to another
the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all theſe worketh that one
and the ſelf ſame Spirit, dividing to
every man ſeverally as he will.

12 For as the bodie is one, and
hath many members, and all the
members of that one bodie, being
many, are one bodie: ſo alſo is
Chriſt.

13 For by one Spirit are we all
baptized into one bodie, whether we
be Jews or † Gentiles, whether we be † Gr.
bond or free; and have been all made *Greeks*
to drink into one Spirit.

14 For the bodie is not one mem-
ber, but many.

15 If the foot ſhall ſay, Becauſe I
am not the hand, I am not of the bo-
die; is it therefore not of the bodie?

16 And if the ear ſhall ſay, Becauſe
I am not the eye, I am not of the bo-
die; is it therefore not of the bodie?

17 If the whole body were an eye,
where were the hearing? if the whole
were hearing, where were the ſmel-
ling?

18 But now hath God ſet the
members, every one of them in the
bodie, as it hath pleaſed him.

19 And if they were all one mem-
ber, where were the bodie?

20 But now are they many mem-
bers, yet but one bodie.

21 And the eye cannot ſay unto
the hand, I have no need of thee:
nor again, the head to the feet, I have
no need of you.

22 Nay much more, thoſe mem-
bers of the bodie, which ſeem to be
more feeble, are neceſſary.

23 And thoſe members of the bo-
dy, which we think to be leſs honour-
able, upon theſe we || beſtow more || Or,
abundant honour, and our uncome- *put on,*
ly parts have more abundant come-
lineſs.

24 For our comely parts have no
need: but God hath tempered the
bodie together, having given more
abundant honour to that part which
lacked:

25 That there ſhould be no || ſchiſme *|| Or,*
in *diviſion*

in the bodie; but *that* the members should have the same care one for another.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

Ephef. 4. 11.

28 And^b God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, || diversities of tongues.

Or, kinds,

29 *Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all* || workers of miracles?

Or, powers,

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *All gifts, 2, 3 how excellent soever, are nothing worth without charitie.*

4 *The praises thereof, and 13 prelation before hope and faith.*

THough I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charitie, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of prophesie, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

Or, is not rash.

4 Charitie suffereth long, and is kinde; charitie envieth not; charitie || vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up,

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

Or, with the truth.

6 Rejoyceth not in iniquitie, but rejoyceth || in the truth:

7 Beareth all things, beleeveth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charitie never faileth: but whether *there be* prophesies, they shall

fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I understood as a childe, I || thought as a childe: but when I be- || Or, came a man, I put away childish *reasoned.* things.

12 For now we see through a glass, † darkly; but then face to face: now † Gr. in I know in part; but then shall I know *a riddle.* even as also I am known.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these *is* charity.

CHAP. XIV.

1 *Prophecie is commended, 2, 3, 4 and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison drawn from musical instruments. 12 Both must be referred to edification, 22 as to their true and proper end. 26 The true use of each is taught, 29 and the abuse taxed. 34 Women are forbidden to speak in the church.*

Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man † under- † Gr. standeth him; howbeit in the spirit *heareth.* he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater *is* he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp,

E e e e 3

except

204

|| Or,
sunes.

except they give a distinction in the
|| sounds, how shall it be known what
is piped or harped?

8 For if the trumpet give an un-
certain sound, who shall prepare
himself to the battel?

† Gr.
signifi-
cant.

9 Solikewise you, except ye ut-
ter by the tongue words [†] easie to be
understood, how shall it be known
what is spoken? for ye shall speak
into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many
kinds of voices in the world, and
none of them is without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the
meaning of the voice, I shall be un-
to him that speaketh, a barbarian;
and he that speaketh shall be a barba-
rian unto me.

† Gr. of
spirits.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye
are zealous [†] of spiritual gifts, seek
that ye may excell to the edifying of
the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speak-
eth in an *unknown* tongue, pray that
he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *unknown*
tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my
understanding is unfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray
with the spirit, and I will pray with
the understanding also: I will sing
with the spirit, and I will sing with
the understanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt blest with
the spirit, how shall he that occupi-
eth the room of the unlearned, say
Amen at thy giving of thanks, see-
ing he understandeth not what thou
sayest?

17 For thou verily givest thanks
well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with
tongues more then you all:

19 Yet in the church I had ra-
ther speak five words with my un-
derstanding, that *by my voice* I might
teach others also, then ten thousand
words in an *unknown* tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in
understanding: howbeit, in malice
be ye children, but in understand-
ing be [†] men.

* Matth.
18. 3.
† Gr.
perfect, or
of a ripe
age.

21 In the law it is ^b written, With
men of other tongues and other lips,
will I speak unto this people: and
^b Isa. 28. yet for all that will they not hear me,
11. faith the Lord.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a
signe, not to them that beleeve, but to
them that beleeve not: but prophe-
sying *serveth* not for them that be-
leeve not, but for them which be-
leeve.

23 If therefore the whole church
be come together into one place, and
all speak with tongues, and there
come in those that are unlearned, or
unbeleevers, will they not say that
ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there
come in one that beleeveth not, or
one unlearned, he is convinced of all,
he is judged of all:

25 And thus are the secrets of his
heart made manifest; and so falling
down on *his face*, he will worship
God, and report that God is in you
of a truth.

26 How is it then, brethren? when
ye come together, every one of you
hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a
tongue, hath a revelation, hath an
interpretation. Let all things be done
to edifying.

27 If any man speak in an *unknown*
tongue, let it be by two, or at the most
by three, and that by course; and let
one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter,
let him keep silence in the church;
and let him speak to himself, and to
God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or
three, and let the other judge.

30 If *any thing* be revealed to an-
other that sitteth by, let the first hold
his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one
by one, that all may learn, and all
may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets
are subject to the prophets.

33 For God is not *the authour* of
† confusion, but of peace, as in all
churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence
in the churches: for it is not permit-
ted unto them to speak; but *they are*
commanded to be under obedience, as
also saith the ^d law.

35 And if they will learn any
thing, let them ask their husbands at
home: for it is a shame for women
to speak in the church.

36 What? came the word of God
out

† Gr.
tumult,
or unquie-
tude.
* 1 Tim.
2. 12.
† Gen.
3. 16.

out from you? or came it unto you onely?

37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, covet to prophesie, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

CHAP. XV.

3 By Christs resurrection ¹² he proveth the necessity of our resurrection, against all such as deny the resurrection of the body. ²¹ The fruit, ³⁵ and manner thereof, ⁵¹ and of the changing of them that shall be found alive at the last day.

Moreover brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein ye stand;

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory that I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.

6 After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the

grace of God which was with me.

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, & so ye believed.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised:

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept. ^{Coloss. 1. 18.}

21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ^{Rev. 1. 5.}

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But every man in his own order: Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christs, at his coming. ^{1 Thess. 4. 15.}

24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power.

25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. ^{Psal. 110. 1.}

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed, is death.

27 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him. ^{Psal. 8. 6.}

28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

|| Or, bold fast.
† Gr. by what speech.
Isa. 53. 5, 6, &c.

Psal. 16. 10.
John 20. 19.

Acts 9. 4.
Chap. 9. 1.
|| Or, an abor-tive.

206

29 Else what shall they do, which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?

|| Some read, *our*

31 I protest by || your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

|| Or, to speak after the manner of men.

32 If || after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? ⁱ let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.

ⁱ Isa.

22. 13.

33 Be not deceived: Evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousness and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption:

43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power:

44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body and there is a spiritual body.

² Gen. 2. 7.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam ² was made a living soul, the last Adam *was made* a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit that *was* not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

47 The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last ¹ trump, (for the trumpet shall sound) and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ¹ Matth. 24. 31. ¹ Theff. 4. 16.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, ^m Death is swallowed up in victory. ^m Isa. 25. 8. ^{Hof. 13. 14.}

55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. ^{||} Or, *hell.*

57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

¹ He exhorteth them to relieve the want of the brethren at Jerusalem; ¹⁰ commendeth Timothy; ¹³ and after friendly admonitions, ¹⁶ shutteth up his epistle with divers salutations.

NOW concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your [†]liberality unto Jerusalem.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: (for I do pass through Macedonia)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus untill Pentecost.

9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you, with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints)

16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you.

21 Greet ye one another with an holy kiss.

¹ Rom. 16.16.

22 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

23 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, Maran-atha.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

25 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

¶ The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus and Timotheus.

The second epistle of Paul the apostle, to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 The apostle encourageth them against troubles, by the comforts and deliverances which God had given him, as in all his afflictions. 8 so particularly in his late danger in Asia: 12 and calling both his own conscience, and theirs to witness of his sincere manner of preaching the immutable truth of the gospel, 15 he excuseth his not coming to them, as proceeding not of lightness, but of his lenity towards them.

Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church

of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 ² Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; ^{1.3.}

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

|| Or, is wrought.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which || is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, inasmuch that we despaired even of life:

|| Or, answer.

9 But we had the || sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us:

|| Rom. 15.30.

11 You also ^b helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by manie on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie and godly sinceritie, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, then what you read or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as ye also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

|| Or, grace.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second || benefit:

16 And to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus

minded, did I use lightness? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, & nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our || word || Or, toward you, was not yea and nay. preach-

19 For the Son of God Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glorie of God by us.

21 Now he which stablisheth us with you, in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God:

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 Having shewed the reason why he came not to them, 6 he requireth them to forgive and to comfort that excommunicated person, 10 even as himself also upon his true repentance had forgiven him: 12 declaring withall why he departed from Troas to Macedonia, 14 and the happy success which God gave to his preaching in all places.

BUT I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heaviness.

2 For if I make you sorrie, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorrie by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with manie tears; not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient

Or, *Or,*
measure. 6 Sufficient to such a man is this
|| punishment, which was inflicted of
many.

7 So that contrariwise, ye ought
rather to forgive him, and comfort
him, lest perhaps such a one should
be swallowed up with overmuch
sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that
ye would confirm your love towards
him.

9 For to this end also did I write,
that I might know the proof of
you, whether ye be obedient in all
things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing,
I forgive also: for if I forgave any
thing, to whom I forgave it, for your
sakes forgave I it, || in the person of
Christ;

11 Lest Satan should get an ad-
vantage of us: for we are not igno-
rant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to
Troas to preach Christs gospel, and
a door was opened unto me of the
Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, be-
cause I found not Titus my brother:
but taking my leave of them, I went
from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God which
always causeth us to triumph in
Christ, and maketh manifest the fa-
vour of his knowledge by us in every
place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet
favour of Christ, in them that are sa-
ved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the favour of
death unto death; and to the other,
the favour of life unto life: and who
is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many, which
|| corrupt the word of God: but as
of sinceritie, but as of God, in the
sight of God, speak we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 Lest their false teachers should
charge him with vain-glory, he shew-
eth the faith and graces of the Carin-
thians to be a sufficient commendati-
on of his ministry. 6 Whereupon en-
tring a comparison between the mi-
nisters of the law, and of the gospel,
12 he proveth that his ministry is
so far the more excellent, as the go-
spel of life and liberty is more glori-

ous then the law of condemnation.

DO we begin again to commend
our selves? or need we, as some
others, epistles of commendation to
you, or letters of commendation from
you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our
hearts, known and read of all men:

3 For as much as ye are manifestly
declared to be the epistle of Christ,
ministred by us, written not with
ink, but with the Spirit of the living
God; not in tables of stone, but in
fleshy tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through
Christ to God-ward:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our
selves to think any thing as of our
selves: but our sufficiencie is of God.

6 Who also hath made us able
ministers of the new testament, not
of the letter, but of the spirit: for
the letter killeth, but the spirit || gi-
veth life.

7 But if the ministration of death
written and engraven in stones, was
glorious, so that the children of Is-
rael could not stedfastly behold the
face of Moses, for the glorie of his
countenance, which glory wasto be
done away;

8 How shall not the ministration
of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of con-
demnation be glorie, much more doth
the ministration of righteousness ex-
ceed in glorie.

10 For even that which was made
glorious, had no glorie in this respect,
by reason of the glorie that excel-
leth.

11 For if that which is done away
was glorious, much more that which
remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have such
hope, we use great || plainness of
speech.

13 And not as Moses * which
put a vail over his face, that the
children of Israel could not stedfast-
ly look to the end of that which is
abolished.

14 But their minds were blinded:
for until this day remaineth the same
vail untaken away, in the reading of
the old testament; which vail is done
away in Christ.

15 But even unto this day, when
Moses

Or,
in the
sight.

Or,
deal de-
ceitfully
with.
* Chap.
4. 2.

Or,
quicken-
eth.

Or,
boldness.
* Exod.
34. 33.

210 Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is libertie.

¶ Or, of the Lord the Spirit. 18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as ¶ by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. IV.

1 He declareth how he hath used all sincerity and faithfull diligence in preaching the gospel; 7 and how the troubles and persecutions which he daily endured for the same, did redound to the praise of Gods power, 12 to the benefit of the church, 16 and to the apostles own eternal glory.

¶ Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy we faint not:

2 But have renounced the hidden things of † dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which beleeve not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

5 For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and our selves your servants for Jesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellencie of the power may be of God, and not of us.

¶ Or, not altogether without help, or means. 8 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but ¶ not in despair;

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

10 Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

12 Sothen death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I * Psal. beleeved, and therefore have I spoken: we also beleeve, and therefore 116.10. speak;

14 Knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace, might through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen, are temporal; but the things which are not seen, are eternal.

CHAP. V.

1 That in his assured hope of immortal glory, 9 & in expectance of it, and of the general judgement, he laboureth to keep a good conscience; 12 not that he may herein boast of himself, 14 but as one that having received life from Christ, endeavoureth to live as a new creature to Christ onely, 18 and by his ministry of reconciliation to reconcile others also in Christ to God.

¶ For we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven:

3 If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For

4 For we that are in *this* tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortalitie might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the self-same thing, is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore *we are* always confident, knowing that whilest we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:

7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight)

8 We are confident, *I say*, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore *we* labour, that whether present or absent we may be accepted of him.

10 * For we must all appear before the judgement-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things *done* in his bodie, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perswade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat to answer them which glory † in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether we be besides our selves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And *that* he died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, || *he is* a new creature: ^b old things are past away, behold, all

things are become new.

18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministerie of reconciliation;

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath † committed unto ^{† Gr.} us the word of reconciliation. ^{put in us.}

20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christs stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

That he hath approved himself a faithfull minister of Christ, both by his exhortations, ³ and by integrity of life, ⁴ and by patient enduring all kinds of affliction and disgraces for the gospel. ¹⁰ of which he speaketh the more boldly amongst them, because his heart is open to them; ¹³ & he expecteth the like affliction from them again: ¹⁴ exhorting to flee the societie and pollution of idolaters, as being themselves temples of the living God.

WE then as workers together with him, beseech you also, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain:

2 (For he saith, * I have heard * ^{12a.} thee in a time accepted, & in the day ^{49.8.} of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation)

3 ^b Giving no offence in any thing, ^b ^{1 Cor.} that the ministerie be not blamed: ^{10.32.}

4 But in all things † approving ^{† Gr.} our selves as the ministers of God, in ^{com-} much patience, in afflictions, in ne- ^{mending.} cessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, || in tumults, in labours, in watchings, || ^{Or,} in fastings, ^{in tossings}

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by ^{to and} long-suffering, by kindness, by the ^{fro.} holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,

|| Or, endeavour.

* Rom. 14.10.

† Gr. in the face.

|| Or, let him be.

^b 12a. 43.19. Revel. 21.5.

212

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true;

9 As unknown, & yet well known; as dying, and behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed;

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway rejoycing; as poor, yet making manie rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the same, (I speak as unto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, ¹ I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 ^e Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean things; and I will receive you,

18 ^f And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

1 He proceedeth in exhorting them to purity of life, 2 and to bear him like affection as he doth to them. 3 Whereof lest he might seem to doubt, he declareth what comfort he took in his afflictions, by the report which Titus gave of their godly sorrow, which his former epistle had wrought in them, 13 and of their loving kindness and obedience towards Titus, answerable to his former boastings of them.

HAVING therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God,

2 Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemn you: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldness of speech toward you: great is my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on everie side; without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus:

7 And not by his coming onely, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me; so that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorrie with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made you sorrie, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made sorrie, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorrie ^{||} after a godly manner, that ye ^{||} Or, might receive damage by us in no- according thing. to God.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this self-same thing that ye sorrowed after a godlie sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge: in all things ye have approved your selves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

13 There-

^e 1 Cor.

3.16.

^f Levit.

26.12.

^e Isa.

52.11.

^f Jerem.

31.1.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort : yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He stirreth them up to a liberal contribution for the poor saints at Jerusalem, by the example of the Macedonians, 7 by commendation of their former forwardness, 9 by the example of Christ, 14 and by the spiritual profit that shall redound to themselves thereby: 16 commending to them the integrity and willingness of Titus, and those other brethren, who upon his request, exhortation, and commendation, were purposely come to them for this business.

Moreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia :

2 How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep povertie, abounded unto the riches of their liberalitie.

3 For to their power (I bear record) yea and beyond their power they were willing of themselves,

4 Praying us with much entreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Inasmuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; see that ye abound in this grace also,

8 I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sinceritie of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his povertie might be rich.

10 And herein I give my advice : for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not onely to do, but also to be † forward a year ago.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as there was a readines to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and you burdened :

14 But by an equalitie, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want, that there may be equalitie,

15 As it is written, * He that had * Exod. gathered much, had nothing over; and 16. 18. he that had gathered little, had no lack.

16 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throughout all the churches :

19 (And not that onely, but who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with this || grace || Or. which is administred by us to the glorie of the same Lord, and declaration of your readie minde)

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administred by us :

21 Providing for honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but

† Gr.
bowels.

† Gr.
willing.

214 but now much more diligent, upon
 || Or, the great confidence which || I have
 he hath. in you.

23 Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glorie of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He yeeldeth the reason why, though he knew their forwardness, yet he sent Titus and his brethren beforehand.

6 And he proceedeth in stirring them up to a bountifull alms, as being but a kinde of sowing of seed, 10 which shall return a great increase to them,

13 and occasion a great sacrifice of thanksgivings unto God.

For as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardness of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was readie a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalfe; that, as I said, ye may be readie:

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you unprepared, we (that we say not, you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your † bountie, || whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be readie, as a matter of bountie, and not as of covetousness.

6 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly: and he which soweth bountifullly, shall reap also bountifullly.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessitie: for God loveth a cheerfull giver.

8 And God is able to make all

grace abound towards you; that ye always having all sufficiencie in all things, may abound to every good work:

9 (As it is written, ^b He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever. ^b Psal. 112.9.

10 Now he that ^c ministrereth seed ^c Isa. to the sower, both minister bread for your food, and multiplie your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness) 55.10.

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifullness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service, not onely supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God;

13 (Whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorifie God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men)

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAP. X.

Against the false apostles, who disgraced the weakness of his person and bodily presence, he setteth out the spiritual might and authority with which he is armed against all adversary powers; 7 assuring them that at his coming he will be found as mighty in word, as he is now in writing being absent: 12 and withall taxing them for reaching out themselves beyond their compass, and vaunting themselves into other mens labours.

Now I Paul my self beseech you, by the meekness, and gentleness of Christ, who || in presence || Or, am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you. ^{in outward appearance.}

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some which || think || Or, of us, as if we walked according to the flesh. ^{reckon.}

3 For though we walk in the flesh,

† Gr. blessing.
 || Or, which hath been so much spoken of before.
 * Prov. 11.25.
 Rom. 12.8.
 Eccles 35.9.

flesh, we do not war after the flesh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mightie through God to the pulling down of strong holds)

5 Casting down || imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivitie everie thought to the obedience of Christ:

6 And having in a readines to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himself, that he is Christs, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authoritie, (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and powerfull, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we be also in deed when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves, || are not wise.

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the || rule, which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you; for we are come as far as to you also, in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be || enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans || line of things made ready to our hand.

17 But he that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

1 Out of his jealousie over the Corinthians, who seemed to make more account of the false apostles, then of him, he entreth into a forced commendation of himself, 5 of his equalitie with the chief apostles, 7 of his preaching the gospel to them freely, & without any their charge: 13 shewing that he was not inferiour to those deceitfull workers, in any legal prerogative; 23 and in the service of Christ, and in all kinde of sufferings for his ministerie, far superiour.

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly; and indeed || bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousie: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtiltie, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jesus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5 For I suppose I was not a whit behinde the very chiefeest apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been thoroughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abasing my self that you might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them, to do you service.

9 And when I was present with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking

F f f f

to

|| Or,
to God.
|| Or,
reasonings.

|| Or,
understand it
not.
|| Or,
line.

Or,
magnified
in you.

rule.

Jerem.
9. 24.

1 Cor.
1. 31.

|| Or,

you do
bear with
me.

Chap.
12. 13.

216 to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, supplied: and in all things I have kept my self from being burdensome unto you, and so will I keep my self.

† Gr. this † no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

shall not 11 Wherefore? because I love be stopped you not? God knoweth. in me.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glorie, they may be found even as we.

13 For such are false apostles, deceitfull workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.

14 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness: whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool || receive me, that I may boast my self a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that manie glorie after the flesh, I will glorie also.

19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye your selves are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit, wherein soever any is bold, (I speak foolishly) I am bold also.

• Phil. 22 Are they Hebrews? • so am I: 3. 5 are they Israelites? so am I: are they the seed of Abraham? so am I:

23 Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more: in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft.

• Deut. 24 Of the Jews five times received I 25. 3. fourtie stripes save one,

25 Thrice was I ^d beaten with ^d A&S rods, ^e once was I stoned, thrice I ^{16. 22.} suffered shipwrack; a night and a ^e A&S day I have been in the deep: ^{14. 19.}

26 In journeying often, in perils ^f A&S of waters, in perils of robbers, in ^{27.} perils by mine own countrey-men, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren;

27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Besides those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, & I burn not?

30 If I must needs glorie, I will glorie of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 ^B In Damascus the governour ^B A&S under Aretas the king, kept the citie ^{24.} of the Damascenes with a garison, desirous to apprehend me:

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 For commending of his apostleship, though he might glory of his wonderfull revelations, 9 yet he rather chooseth to glory of his infirmities, 11 blaming them for forcing him to this vain boasting. 14 He promisetht to come to them again; but yet altogether in the affection of a father, 20 although he feareth he shall to his grief finde many offenders, and publick disorders there.

IT is not expedient for me doubtless to glorie: I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago (whether in the bodie, I cannot tell; or whether out of the bodie, I cannot tell: God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the bodie, or out of the bodie, I cannot tell: God knoweth)

4 How that he was caught up into

Or, possible.

to paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawfull for a man to utter.

5 Of such an one will I glorie: yet of my self I will not glorie, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glorie, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the truth: but now I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glorie in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christs sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behinde the verie chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the signes of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signes, and wonders, and mightie deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other churches, except it be that I my self was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am readie to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you; for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will verie gladly spend and be spent for you, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

16 But be it so, I did not burden

you, nevertheless, being craftie, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Again, think you that we excuse our selves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear lest when I come I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, back-bitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults:

21 And lest when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail manie which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, & lasciviousness which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

He threateneth severity, and the power of his apostleship against obstinate sinners: 5 and advising them to a trial of their faith, 7 and to reformation of their sins before his coming, 11 he concludeth his epistle with a general exhortation and a prayer.

THIS is the third time I am coming to you: In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall everie word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mightie in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: For we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God to-ward you.

5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own

F f f f 2

selves:

See Ezek. 28. 24.

Chap. 11. 9.

Or, your souls.

Or, with him.

218 selves: know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should use sharpness, according to the power which the Lord hath

given me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one minde, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 ^b Greet one another with an holy kiss. ^b Rom. 16. 16.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippi a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 He wondreth that they have so soon left him and the Gospel; 8 and accurseth those that preach any other Gospel then he did. 11 He learned the Gospel not of men, but of God: 13 and sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.



Paul an apostle (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead)

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia

3 Grace be to you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:

5 To whom be glorie for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel, that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel

unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you, then that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now perswade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, how that ^a beyond measure ^a Acts I persecuted the church of God, and 9. 1. wasted it:

14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my [†] equals in [†] Gr. mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions ^{years.} of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers womb, and called me by his grace,

16 To reveal his Son in me, that ^b I might preach him among the ^b Ephel. heathen; immediately I conferred 3. 8. not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were apostles be-

before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

Or, returned.

18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days.

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia;

22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ:

23 But they had heard onely, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth when he went up again to Jerusalem, and for what purpose: and that Titus was not circumcised:

11 and that he resisted Peter, and told him the reason, 14 why he and other, being Jews, do beleve in Christ to be justified by faith, and not by works: 20 and that they live not in sin, who are so justified.

Then fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

Or, severally.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but *¶* privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our libertie, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: *¶* God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to be somewhat, in

conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mightie in me towards the Gentiles)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Onely they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have beleevd in Jesus Christ; that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for *¶* by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

¶ Rom. 3. 20.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my self a transgressor.

320

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ: Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang upon the law.

6 They that beleeve are justified,

9 & blessed with Abraham. And this he sheweth by many reasons.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

|| Or, so great. 4 Have ye suffered || so manie things in vain? if it be yet in vain.

5 He therefore that ministrETH to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

* Gen. 15. 6. God, and it was || accounted to him || Or, imputed. for righteousness.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, ^b In thee shall all nations be blessed.

^b Gen. 12. 3.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as manie as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, ^c Cursed is everie one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

^c Deut. 27. 26.

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evi-

dent: for, ^d The just shall live by faith. ^d Hab.

12 And the law is not of faith: but, ^e 2. 4.

^e The man that doeth them shall live in them. ^f Rom. 1. 17.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made

a curse for us: for it is written, ^g Levit.

^g Cursed is everie one that hangeth

on a tree: ^h Deut. 18. 5.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a mans || covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. || Or, testament.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of manie; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was four hundred and thirtie years after, cannot disannull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

20 Now a mediator is not a mediator of one; but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded ⁱ all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that beleeve. ⁱ Rom. 3. 9.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our school-master to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a school-master.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

Rom. 6. 3.

27 For ^h as manie of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

CHAP. IV.

1 We were under the law till Christ came, as the heir is under his guardian till he be of age. 5 But Christ freed us from the law: 7 therefore we are servants no longer to it. 14 Here-membreth their good will to him, and his to them; 22 and sheweth that we are the sons of Abraham by the free-woman.

NOW I say, that the heir as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all;

2 But is under tutours and governors, untill the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:

Or, rudiments.

4 But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the law,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Rom. 8. 15.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth ^a the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye ^{||} again to the weak and beggerly ^{||} elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

Or, back. Or, rudiments.

10 Ye observe days, and moneths, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain. 221

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are: ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmities of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

15 ^{||} Where is then the blessed- ^{||} Or, nefs you spake of? for I bear you *what was* record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude ^{||} you, that you might affect them. ^{||} Or,

18 But it is good to be zealously *is* affected always in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again untill Christ be formed in you,

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for ^{||} I ^{||} Or, stand in doubt of you. *I am perplexed*

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? *for you.*

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons; the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he *who was* of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman *was* by promise.

24 Which things are an allegorie; for these are the two ^{||} covenants; ^{||} Or, the one from the mount Sinai, *testaments.* which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and ^{||} answereth to Jeru- ^{||} Or, salem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. *is in the same*

26 But Jerusalem which is above, *rank* is free, which is the mother of us all. *with.*

27 For it is written, ^b Rejoyce ^b Ifa. thou barren that bearest not; break *54. 1.* forth and crie, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath manie mo-
children

222 children then she which hath an husband.

^c Rom. 9. 8. 28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are ^c the children of promise.

29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him *that was born after the Spirit*, even so it is now.

^d Gen. 21. 10. 30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? ^d Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the free-woman.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 *He moveth them to stand in their liberty, 3 and not to observe circumcision; 13 but rather love, which is the sum of the law. 19 He reckoneth up the works of the flesh, 22 and the fruits of the Spirit; 25 and exhorteth to walk in the Spirit.*

STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.

^a Acts 15. 1. 2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that ^a if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtour to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

|| Or, 7 Ye did run well, **||** who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the drive you truth? **back.**

8 This perswasion cometh not of him that calleth you.

^b 1 Cor. 5. 6. 9 ^b A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shall bear his judgement, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach

circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto libertie; onely use not libertie for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in this, ^c Thou shalt ^c Levit. 19. 18. love thy neighbour as thy self.

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. ^{Matth. 23. 39. Rom.}

16 *This* I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and **||** ye shall not fulfill the **||** Or, lust of the flesh. *fulfill not.*

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, Adulterie, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit, is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh, with the **||** affections and lusts. **|| Or,** *passions.*

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain glorie, provoking one another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He moveth them to deal mildly with a brother that hath slipped, 2 and to bear one anothers burden, 6 to be liberal to their teachers, 9 and not weary of well-doing. 12 He sheweth what they intend that preach cir-*

Or, although.

circumcision. 14 He glorieth in nothing, save in the cross of Christ.

Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Bear ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.

1 Cor. 3.8. 5 For every man shall bear his own burden.

1 Cor. 9.14. 6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that reacheth, in all good things.

7 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

2 Thes. 3.13. 9 And let us not be wearie in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who

are of the household of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; onely lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glorie save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

Or, whereby.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercie, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear in my bodie the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

The epistle of Paul the Apostle, to the *EPHESIANS*.

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 3 and thanksgiving for the Ephesians, 4 he treateth of our election, 6 and adoption by grace, 11 which is the true and proper fountain of mans salvation. 13 And because the height of this mystery cannot easily be attained unto, 16 he prayeth that they may come 18 to the full knowledge and 20 possession thereof in Christ.



Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: 2 Cor. 1.3. 1 Pet. 1.3

4 According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love: Or, things.

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved:

7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

8 Where-

224

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom & prudence,

9 Having made known unto us the mysterie of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself:

10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in † heaven, and which are on earth, even in him:

† Gr.
the heavens.

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first || trusted in Christ.

|| Or,
hoped.

13 In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye beleaved, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, untill the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glorie, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, || in the knowledge of him:

|| Or,
for the
acknowledgement.

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who beleave, according to the working † of his mightie power;

† Gr.
of the
might of
his power

20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenlie places.

21 Far above all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and everie name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And ^b hath put all things under his feet, and gave him ¹⁰ to be the head over all things to the church,

23 Which is his bodie, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 By comparing what we were by 3 nature, with what we are 5 by grace, 10 he declareth, that we are made for good works; and 13 being brought near by Christ, should not live as 11 Gentiles and 12 foreiners in time past, but as 19 citizens with the saints, and the family of God.

And ^a you hath he quickened who ^a Coloss. were dead in trespasses and sins, 2. 13.

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the desires of the flesh, and of the minde; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

† Gr.
the will.

4 But God who is rich in mercie, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in sins hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)

6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenlie places in Christ Jesus.

7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus.

8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith; and that not of your selves: it is the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast:

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before || or- || Or, dained that we should walk in prepared them.

11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands;

12 That at that time ye were with-

without Christ, being aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us;

15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmitie, even the law of commandments, contained in ordinances, for to make in himself, oftwaile, one new man, so making peace;

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one bodie by the cross, having slain the enmitie || thereby:

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone;

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved, 3 was made known to Paul by revelation: 8 and to him was that grace given, that 9 he should preach it. 13 He desireth them not to faint for his tribulation, 14 and prayeth 19 that they may perceive the great love of Christ toward them.

FOR this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles;

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you-ward:

3 How that by revelation he made

known unto me the myserie, (as I wrote || afore in few words,

4 Whereby when ye read ye may ^{a little} understand my knowledge in the before. myserie of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holie apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same bodie, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the gospel:

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectual working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am less then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that ^a I should preach among the ^a Gal. Gentiles the unsearchable riches of ^{1. 16.} Christ;

9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the myserie, which from the beginning of the world, hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glorie.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole familie in heaven and earth is named,

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glorie, to be strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man;

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye being rooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

19 And to know the love of Christ, which

Or, in himself.

Rom. 5. 1.

226 which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glorie in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth to unitie; 7 and declareth that God therefore giveth divers 11 gifts unto men, that his church might be 13 edified and 16 grown up in Christ 18 He calleth them from the impuritie of the Gentiles, 24 to put on the new man, 25 to cast off lying, and 29 corrupt communication.

|| Or, in the Lord.
a Philip.

1. 27.
Coloss.
1. 10.
1 Theff.
2. 12.

I Therefore the prisoner || of the Lord, beseech you that ye ^a walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love;

3 Endeavouring to keep the unitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

b Mal. 2.
10.

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But unto everie one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

c Psal.
68. 18.
|| Or, a multitude of captives.

8 Wherefore he saith, c When he ascended up on high, he led || captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might || fill all things)

|| Or, fulfill.
d 1 Cor.
12. 28.

11 d And he gave some, apostles: and some, prophets: and some, evangelists: and some, pastours and teachers;

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministerie, for the edifying of the bodie of Christ:

13 Till we all come || in the unitie || Or, of the faith, and of the know- into the ledge of the Son of God, unto a unitie. perfect man, unto the measure of the || stature of the fulness of Christ: || Or,

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with everie winde of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

15 But e || speaking the truth in e Zech. love, may grow up into him in all 8. 16. things, which is the head, even || Or, Christ: being sin.

16 f From whom the whole bodie cere. firly joyned together, and compacted Col. 2. by that which everie joynt supplieth, 19. according to the effectual working in the measure of everie part, maketh increase of the bodie, unto the edifying of it self in love.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk in the vanitie of their minde,

18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the s || blindness of their heart: s Rom.

19 Who being past feeling, have 1. 21. given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with || Or, hardness.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:

22 That ye h put off concerning h Col. the former conversation, the old man, 3. 8. which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And i be renewed in the spirit i Rom. of your minde; 12. 2.

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness, and || true holiness. || Or,

25 Wherefore putting away lying, k speak every man truth with his of truth, neighbour: for we are members one k Zech. of another. 8. 16.

26 l Be ye angry and sin not: let l Psal. not the sun go down upon your 4. 4. wrath:

27 m Neither give place to the m James devil, 4. 7.

28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you, with all malice

32 And be ye kinde one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

CHAP. V.

2 After general exhortations to love, 3 to flee fornication, 4 and all uncleanness, 7 not to converse with the wicked, 15 to walk warily, and to be 18 filled with the Spirit, 22 he descendeth to the particular duties, how wives ought to obey their husbands, 25 and husbands ought to love their wives, 32 even as Christ doth his church.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, & hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named amongst you, as becometh saints:

4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes dark-

ness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness, and righteousness, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are re- proved, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.

14 Wherefore he saith, 'Awake' thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melodie in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;

21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the bodie.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything.

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:

26 That he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word,

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing;

Or, to distribute.

Or, to edifie profitably.

2 Cor. 12, 13.

John 13, 34, and 15, 12.

Col. 3, 5.

1 Thess. 4, 3, & c.

Or, unbelief.

2:7

60, 1.

4 Col.

4, 5.

Col.

3, 18.

Tit. 2, 5.

1 Pet.

3, 1.

1 Cor.

11, 3.

Col.

3, 19.

228 thing; but that it should be holie and without blemish.

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth & cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

30 For we are members of his bodie, of his flesh, and of his bones.

^b Gen. 2. 24. Matth. 19. 5. Mark 10. 7. ⁱ 1 Cor. 6. 16. 31 ^h For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife, and they ⁱ two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great myserie: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless, let everie one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The duty of children toward their parents, 5 of servants toward their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare,

12 not only against flesh and blood, but also spiritual enemies. 13 The complete armour of a Christian, 18 & how it ought to be used. 21 Tychicus is commended.

^a Col. 3. 20.

^b Exod. 20. 12.

Deut. 5. 16.

Ecclus 3. 8.

Matth. 15. 4.

Mark 7. 10.

^c Col. 3. 21.

^d Col. 3. 22.

Tit. 2. 9.

ⁱ Pet. 2. 18.

|| Or,

modera-

ting.

|| Some

read,

both your

and their

master. ^e Wisd. 6. 7. Ecclus 35. 12. Rom. 2. 11.

^a Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 ^o Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)

3 That it may be well with thee, & thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And ^c ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 ^d Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ

6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, do the same things unto them, || forbearing threatening: knowing that || your master also is in heaven, ^e neither is there

respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against || spiritual wickedness in || high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and || having done all to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loyns girt about with truth, & having on the breast-plate of righteousness;

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fierie darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints;

19 ^f And for me, that utterance ^f Col. 4. 3. may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the myserie of the gospel: 2 Thess. 3. 1.

20 For which I am an ambassador || in bonds: that || therein I may || Or, speak boldly, as I ought to speak. in a chain.

21 But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things: || Or, thereof.

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ || in sincerity. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tychicus.

The

The Epistle of Paul the apostle, to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He testifieth his thankfulness to God, and his love toward them, for the fruits of their faith, and fellowship in his sufferings, 9 daily praying to him for their increase in grace. 12 He sheweth what good the faith of Christ had received by his troubles at Rome, 21 and how ready he is to glorifie Christ, either by his life or death: 27 exhorting them to unity, 28 and to fortitude in persecution.



Paul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops & deacons:

2 Grace be unto you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my God upon everie remembrance of you,

4 (Always in everie prayer of mine for you all making request with joy)

5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day untill now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it untill the day of Jesus Christ:

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all judgement;

10 That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ;

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glorie and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things

which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel:

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places;

14 And manie of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envie and strife; and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding everie way, whether in pretense, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supplie of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wot not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better.

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needfull for you,

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith:

26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

27 Onely let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs,

Or, mention.

Or, will finish it.

Or, you have me in your heart.

Or, partakers with me of grace.

Or, sense.

Or, try.

Or, differ.

4.1.

Coloss.

1.10.

1 Thess.

2.12.

affairs,

230 affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striving together for the faith of the gospel;

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not onely to beleve on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

CHAP. II.

He exhorteth them to unitie, and to all humbleness of minde, by the example of Christs humility and exaltation:

22 *to a carefull proceeding in the way of salvation, that they be as lights to the wicked world, 16 and comforts to him their apostle, who is now ready to be offered up to God.*

19 *He hopeth to send Timotly to them, whom he greatly commendeth,*

25 *as Epaphroditus also, whom he presently sendeth to them.*

If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one minde.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vain-glorie, but in lowliness of minde let each esteem other better then themselves.

4 Look not everie man on his own things, but everie man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbérie to be equal with God:

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above everie name:

10 That at the name of Jesus everie knee should bow, of things in hea-

ven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;

11 And that everie tongue should confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glorie of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

14 Do all things without murmurings, and disputings:

15 That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the mids of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world: || Or, sincere, || Or, shine ye.

16 Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoyce in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be offered up on the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all. † Gr. poured forth.

18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoyce with me.

19 || But I trust in the Lord Jesus, || Or, to send Timotheus shortly unto you, more that I also may be of good comfort, over when I know your state.

20 For I have no man like-minded, who will naturally care for your state. || Or, so dear unto m.

21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christs. † 1 Cor. 10.24.

22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord that I also my self shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessarie to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death: but God had mercie on him; and not on him onely, but on me also

|| Or, habit.

also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the less sorrowfull.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supplie your lack of service toward me.

CHAP. III.

1 He warneth them to beware of the false teachers of the circumcision, 4 shewing that himself hath greater cause then they, to trust in the righteousness of the law: 7 which notwithstanding he counsellis as dung & loss, to gain Christ and his righteousness, 12 therein acknowledging his own imperfection. 15 He exhorteth them to be thus minded, 17 and to imitate him, 18 and to decline the ways of carnal Christians.

Finally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh:

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

2 Cor. 5. 22. 5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;

Acts 8. 6. 6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss, for the excellencie of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is

through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death;

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead:

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behinde, & reaching forth unto those things which are before, 14 I press toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us minde the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ.

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their bellie: and whose glorie is in their shame, who minde earthly things.)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for ^c 1 Cor. the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: 1. 7.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself. Titus 2. 13.

CHAP. IV.

1 From particular admonitions 4 he proceedeth to general exhortations, 10 shewing how he rejoyced at the liberality towards him lying in prison, not so much for the supply of his own wants, as for the grace of God in them: 9 and so he concludeth with prayer and salutations.

G g g g

There-

232

Therefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in

^a Revel. ^a the book of life.

3 5. and 4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: and 20. 12. & again I say, Rejoyce.

21. 27. 5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

|| Or, venerable.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

|| Or, is revived.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me || hath flourished again, wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in what-

soever state I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full & to be hungry, both to abound & to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye onely.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But || I have all, and abound: || Or, I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, all a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supplie all your need according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto God and our Father be glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cæsars household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 After salutation, he thanketh God for their faith, 7 confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras, 9 prayeth further for their increase in grace, 14 describeth the true Christ; 21 encourageth them to receive Jesus Christ; and commendeth his own ministry.



Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, & Timothy our brother,

2 To the saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Coloss: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, & the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God, and the Father

Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you:

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints;

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel:

6 Which is come unto you as it is in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-servant, who is for you a faithfull minister of Christ;

8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding:

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitfull in everie good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness;

12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdome of his dear Son:

14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of everie creature:

16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning,

the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulness dwell;

20 And (|| having made peace through the blood of his cross) by him, I say, whether they be things in earth or things in heaven.

21 And you that were sometime alienated, & enemies || in your minde by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holie and unblameable, and unreprouceable in his sight:

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to everie creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the church:

25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, || to fulfill the word of God;

26 Even the mysterie which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glorie of this mysterie among the Gentiles; which is Christ || in you, the hope of glorie:

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man || in all wisdom; that we may present everie man perfect in Christ Jesus:

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 He still exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, 8 to beware of philosophie, and vain traditions, 18 worshipping of angels, 20 and legal ceremonies, which are ended in Christ.

Gr.
the Son
of his
love.
Hebr.
3.

John
3.

1 Cor.
6.
Oh, 1, 3.

233
1 Cor.
15. 20.
Revel.
1. 5.
Or,
among
all.
Or,
making
peace.
Or, by
your
minde in
wicked
works.

Or;
fully to
preach the
word of
God,
Rom. 15.
19.
Rom.
16. 25.
Ephes.

3. 9.
Or,
amongst
you.

234
|| Or,
fear, or
care.

FOR I would that ye knew what great || conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh :

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mysterie of God, and of the Father, & of Christ;

|| Or, wherein. 3 || In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him :

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

|| Or, elements. 8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophic, and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ :

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalities and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ :

• Rom. 6. 4. 12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

• Ephes. 2. 1. 13 And you being dead in your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances, that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross :

15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them || in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you || in meat or in drink, or || in respect of an holy-day, or of the new-moon, or of the sabbath-days : || Or, in himself. || Or, for eating & drinking.

17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. || Or, in part.

18 Let no man || beguile you of your reward, || in a voluntarie humilitie, and worshipping of angels, || Or, judge against you. intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly minde; † Gr. being a voluntary.

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. luntary in humility.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the || rudiments of the world; why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, || Or, elements.

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not :

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men ?

23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worship and humilitie, and || neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh. || Or, to nothing, or not sparing.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ. 5 He exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ; 12 exhorting to charity, humility, and other several duties.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your || affection on things above, not on things on the earth. || Or, minde.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covet- • Ephes. 5. 3.

coverousness, which is idolatrie:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemie, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of minde, meekness, long-suffering;

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

14 And above all these things, put on charitie, which is the bond of perfectness.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one bodie; and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well-pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men;

24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth them to be fervent in prayer, 5 to walk wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ. 10 He saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperity.

Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving;

3 Withall, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mysterie of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments;

236 if he come unto you, receive him)

11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These onely are my fellow-workers unto the kingdome of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always || labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and || complete in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved physician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.

16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministerie which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

The first epistle of Paul the apostle, to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

¶ The Thessalonians are given to understand both how mindfull of them S. Paul was at all times in thanksgiving, and prayer; 5 and also how well he was perswaded of the truth, and sincerity of their faith, and conversion to God.



Aul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

* Phil. 4.

2 * We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our Father:

¶ Or, beloved of God, your election.

4 Knowing, brethren || beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received

the word in much affliction, with joy of the holie Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleve in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to Godward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God,

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus which delivered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 In what manner the gospel was brought and preached to the Thessalonians, and in what sort also they received it. 18 A reason is rendered both why S. Paul was so long absent from them, and also why he was so desirous to see them.

For your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at * Philippi, we were bold in our God to 16. 22. speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile :

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God is witness.

6 Nor of men sought we glorie, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children :

8 So, being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God onely, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travel: for ^b labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that beleve :

11 As you know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged every one of you (as a father doth his children)

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdome and glorie.

13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleve.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrey-men, even as they have of the Jews :

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrarie to all men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the

Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again; but Satan hindred us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of ^{||} rejoicing? are not ^{||} Or, even ye in the presence of our Lord glorifying. Jesus Christ at his coming?

20 For ye are our glorie and joy.

CHAP. III.

1 S. Paul testifieth his great love to the Thessalonians; partly by sending Timothy unto them to strengthen and comfort them; partly by rejoicing in their well-doing; 10 and partly by praying for them, and desiring a safe coming unto them.

W Herefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone :

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith;

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you :

7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith :

8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render

|| Or,
used au-
thoritie.

^b Acts
20. 34.
1 Cor.
4. 12.
2 Theff.
3. 8.

^c Ephes.
4. 1.
Phil. 1.
27.
Coloss.
1. 10.

|| Or,
chased us
out.

238 der to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night & day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

|| Or,
guide.

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ || direct our way unto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you:

* 1 Cor.
1. 8.
Chap.
5. 23.

13 To the end he may ^a stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

CHAP. IV.

He exhorteth them to go on forward in all manner of godliness, 6 to live holily and justly, 9 to love one another, 11 and quietly to follow their own business; 13 and last of all, to sorrow moderately for the dead. 17 And unto this last exhortation is annexed a brief description of the resurrection, and second coming of Christ to judgement.

|| Or,
request.
|| Or,
beseech.

Furthermore then we || beseech you, brethren, and || exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how you ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you, by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour;

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

|| Or,
oppress,
or, over-
reach.
|| Or,
in the
matter.
|| Or,
rejecteth.

6 That no man go beyond and || defraud his brother || in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

8 He therefore that || despiseth, de-

spiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye your selves are ^a taught of God ^a John 13. 34. & to love one another. 15. 12.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, (as we commanded you)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack || of nothing. || Or,

13 But I would not have you to ^{of no} be ignorant, brethren, concerning ^{man,} them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others, which have no hope.

14 For if we beleeve that Jesus died, and rose again, even so ^b them ^b 1 Cor. 15. 23. also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with ^c the trump of God: and the dead ^c 1 Cor. 15. 52. in Christ shall rise first:

17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, || comfort one another with these words. || Or, exhort.

CHAP. V.

1 He proceedeth in the former description of Christs coming to judgement, 16 and giveth divers precepts, 23 and so concludeth the epistle.

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I ^a Matth. 24. 43. write unto you.

2 For your selves know perfectly that ^a the day of the Lord so cometh ² Pet. 3. 10. as a thief in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace Revel 3. and safetie; then sudden destruction ³ and cometh upon them, as travail upon a ¹⁶ 15. woman

woman with childe; and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep as do others; but let us watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast-plate of faith and love, and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath; but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

11 Wherefore || comfort your selves together, and edifie one another, even as also ye do.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;

13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. And be at peace among your selves.

14 Now we || exhort you, brethren, warn them that are || unruly, com-

fort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.

16 Rejoyce evermore.

17 Pray without ceasing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the spirit.

20 Despise not prophesyings.

21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and bodie be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Faithfull is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

25 Brethren, pray for us.

26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kiss.

27 I || charge you by the Lord, || Or, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren. *adure.*

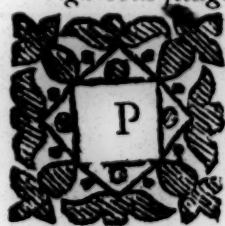
28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you Amen.

¶ The first epistle unto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

The II. epistle of Paul the apostle, to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 S. Paul certifieth them of the good opinion which he had of their faith, love, and patience; 11 and therewithall useth divers reasons for the comforting of them in persecution, whereof the chiefest is taken from the righteous judgement of God.



Aul, and Silvanus, & Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God

always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charitie of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth:

4 So that we ourselves glorie in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.

5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthie of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer:

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;

7 And to you who are troubled, rest

¶ Isa.
59.17.
Ephes. 6.
16, 17.

¶ Or,
exhort.

¶ Heb.
13.17.

¶ Or,
beseech.
¶ Or,
disorderly.

¶ 1 Thess.
1.2, 3.

240 rest with us, when ^b the Lord Jesus
^b 1 Thes. shall be revealed from heaven, with
 4.16. † his mightie angels,
 † Gr. 8 In flaming fire, † taking ven-
 the angels geance on them that know not God,
 of his and that obey not the gospel of our
 power. Lord Jesus Christ:
 † Or, 9 Who shall be punished with
 yeelding. everlasting destruction from the pre-
 sence of the Lord, and from the glo-
 rie of his power;

10 When he shall come to be glo-
 rified in his saints, and to be admi-
 red in all them that beleve (because
 our testimonie among you was be-
 lieved) in that day.

† Or,
 vouch-
 safe.

11 Wherefore also we pray al-
 ways for you, that our God would
 † count you worthy of *this* calling,
 and fulfill all the good pleasure of
 his goodness, and the work of faith
 with power:

12 That the name of our Lord Je-
 sus Christ may be glorified in you,
 and ye in him, according to the
 grace of our God, and the Lord Je-
 sus Christ.

CHAP. II.

1 He willet them to continue st^dfast
 in the truth received; 3 sheweth that
 there shall be a departure from the
 faith, 9 and a discovery of anti-
 christ, before the day of the Lord
 come: 15 and thereupon repeateth
 his former exhortation, and prayeth
 for them.

NOW we beseech you, brethren,
 by the coming of our Lord Jesus
 Christ, and by our gathering together
 unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in
 minde, or be troubled, neither by
 spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as
 from us, as that the day of Christ is
 at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by a-
 ny means: for *that day shall not come*
 except there come a falling away
 first, and that man of sin be revealed,
 the son of perdition:

4 Who opposeth and exalteth
 himself above all that is called
 God, or that is worshipped; so
 that he as God sitteth in the temple
 of God, shewing himself that he is
 God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I
 was yet with you, I told you these
 things?

6 And now ye know what † with- † Or,
 holdeth, that he might be revealed holdeth
 in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie
 doth already work: onely he who
 now letteth, *will let*, untill he be ta-
 ken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be
 revealed, whom the Lord shall con-
 sume ^a with the spirit of his mouth,
 and shall destroy with the brightness
 of his coming: ^{11.4. Hof.}

9 *Even him* whose coming is after ^{6.5. Rev.}
 the working of Satan, with all
 power, and signes, and lying won- ^{2.16.}
 ders,

10 And with all deceiveableness
 of unrighteousness, in them that pe-
 rish; because they received not the
 love of the truth, that they might be
 saved.

11 And for this cause God shall
 send them strong delusion, that they
 should beleve a lie:

12 That they all might be dam-
 ned, who beleved not the truth, but
 had pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 But we are bound to give thanks
 alway to God for you, brethren,
 beloved of the Lord, because God
 hath from the beginning chosen you
 to salvation, through sanctifica-
 tion of the Spirit, and belief of the
 truth:

14 Whereunto he called you by
 our gospel, to the obtaining of the
 glorie of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand
 fast, and hold the traditions which
 ye have been taught, whether by
 word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ
 himself, and God even our Father,
 which hath loved us, and hath given
 us everlasting consolation, and good
 hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and sta-
 blish you in every good word and
 work.

CHAP. III.

1 He craveth their prayers for himself,
 3 testifieth what confidence he hath
 in them, 5 maketh request to God in
 their behalf, 6 giveth them di-
 vers precepts, especially to shun idle-
 ness and ill company; 16 and last of
 all, concludeth with prayer and sa-
 lutation.

Finally

Ephes. **F**inally brethren,^a pray for us, that the word of the Lord † may have free course, and be glorified even as it is with you;

2 And that we may be delivered from † unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into ‖ the patient waiting for Christ.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you,

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought; but wrought with labour and travel night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

9 Not because we have not pow-

er, but to make our selves an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busie-bodies.

12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, ‖ be not ^b Gal. wearie in well-doing. 69.

14 And if any man obey not our word ‖ by this epistle, note that man, faint not. Or, and have no companie with him, ‖ Or, that he may be ashamed. signifie

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. by an e-

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always, by all means. The Lord be with you all. pistle.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write;

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

The first epistle of Paul the apostle, to TIMOTHIE.

C H A P. I.

1 Timothy is put in minde of the charge which was given unto him by Paul, at his going to Macedonia. 5 Of the right use and end of the law. 11 Of S. Pauls calling to be an apostle: 20 and of Hymeneus and Alexander.



And an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;

2 Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, Chap. and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather then godly edifying, which is in faith: so do. 4.7. and 6.4.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned: Tit. 1.14. and 3.9.

6 From which some ‖ having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling; Or, not aiming at.

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for man-slayers,

242

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankinde, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministerie;

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutour, and injurious. But I obtained mercie, because I did it ignorantly, in unbelief:

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthie of all acceptation, that

• Matth. 9. 13.

Mark 2.

17.

Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercie, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter beleve on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glorie, for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothie, according to the propheties which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare,

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwrack.

• 1 Cor. 5. 5.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 That it is meet to pray and give thanks for all men, and the reason why. 9 How women should be attired. 12 They are not permitted to teach. 15 They shall be saved notwithstanding the testimonies of Gods wrath in child-birth, if they continue in faith.

• Or, desire.

I Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessi-

ons, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

2 For kings, and for all that are in || authoritie; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honestie. || Or, eminent place.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour:

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

6 Who gave himself a rancome for all, || to be testified in due time. || Or, a testi-

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie. a 2 Tim. 1. 11.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting:

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefastness and sobriety: not with || broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; • 1 Pet. 3. 3.

10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works. || Or, p'aited.

11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authoritie over the man, but to be in silence. • 1 Cor. 14. 34.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charitie, and holiness with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

How bishops, and deacons, and their wives should be qualified; 14 and to what end S Paul wrote to Timothy of these things. 15 Of the church, and the blessed truth therein taught and professed.

This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, • Tit. 1. 6, &c.

Or, *modest.* 1 1ant, sober, || of good behaviour, given to hospitalitie, apt to teach;

Or, *not ready to quarrel and offer wrong, as one in wine.* 3 || Not given to wine, no striker, not greedie of filthie lucre, but patient, not a brauler, not covetous;

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravitie;

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)

Or, *one newly come to the faith.* 6 Not || a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedie of filthie lucre,

9 Holding the myserie of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well.

Or, *mini-fired.* 13 For they that have || used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:

15 But if I tarrie long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar & || ground of the truth.

Or, *stay.* 16 And without controversie great is the myserie of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, beleaved on in the world, received up into glorie.

CHAP. IV.

He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 And to the end that Timothy might not fail in doing his duty, he furnisheth him with divers precepts belonging thereto.

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that ²⁴³ in the latter times ^{2 Tim.} some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; ^{3.1.}

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which beleve and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self rather unto godliness.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth || little: but godliness is profitable || Or, unto all things, having promise of *for a* the life that now is, and of that *little* which is to come. *time.*

9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptance.

10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that beleve.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophesie, with the laying on of the hands of the presbyterie.

15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear || to all. || Or,

6 Take heed unto thy self, and in all unto thy doctrine; continue in them: *things.* for in doing this thou shalt both save thy self, and them that hear thee.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

- 1 Rules to be observed in reprov-
 3 Of widows. 17 Of elders. 23 A
 precept for Timothies health. 24 Some
 mens sins go before unto judgement,
 and some mens do follow after.

Rebuke not an elder, but intreat
 him as a father, and the younger
 men as brethren;

2 The elder women as mothers,
 the younger as sisters, with all purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows
 indeed.

4 But if any widow have children
 or nephews, let them learn first to
 shew || piety at home, and to requite
 || Or, kindness, their parents: for that is good and
 acceptable before God.

5 Now she that is a widow in-
 deed, and desolate, trusteth in God,
 and continueth in supplications and
 prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth || in pleasure,
 || Or, delicately is dead while she liveth.

7 And these things give in charge,
 that they may be blameless.

8 But if any provide not for his
 own, and specially for those of his
 own || house, he hath denied the
 || Or, kindred, faith, and is worse then an infidel.

9 Let not a widow be || taken in-
 || Or, chosen, to the number, under threescore
 years old, having been the wife of
 one man,

10 Well reported of for good
 works; if she have brought up chil-
 dren, if she have lodged strangers, if
 she have washed the saints feet, if she
 have relieved the afflicted, if she
 have diligently followed every good
 work.

11 But the younger widows refuse:
 for when they have begun to wax
 wanton against Christ, they will
 marry;

12 Having damnation, because
 they have cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learn to be
 idle, wandering about from house
 to house; and not onely idle, but tat-
 tlers also, and busie-bodies, speaking
 things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the younger
 women marry, bear children, guide
 the house, give none occasion to the
 adversary || to speak reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned
 || Gr. for their railing, aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that be-
 leeveth have widows, let them re-
 lieve them, and let not the church be
 charged; that it may relieve them
 that are widows indeed.

17 Let the elders that rule well, || 1 Cor.
 be counted worthy of double honour, || 9.14.
 especially they who labour in the || Gal. 6.6,
 word and doctrine.

18 For the scripture saith, || Thou || Deut.
 shalt not muzzle the ox that tread- || 25.4.
 eth out the corn: and, || The labourer || Matth.
 is worthy of his reward. || 10.10.

19 Against an elder receive not
 an accusation, but || before two or || Or,
 three witnesses. || under,

20 Them that sin rebuke before
 all, that others also may fear.

21 I charge thee before God and
 the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect
 angels, that thou observe these things
 || without preferring one before an- || Or,
 other, doing nothing by partiality. || without
 prejudice,

22 Lay hands suddenly on no
 man, neither be partaker of other
 mens sins: keep thy self pure.

23 Drink no longer water, but
 use a little wine for thy stomachs
 sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sins are open be-
 forehand, going before to judge-
 ment; || some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works
 of some are manifest beforehand; and
 they that are otherwise cannot be
 hid.

CHAP. VI.

- 1 Of the duty of servants. 3 Not to
 have fellowship with new-fangled
 teachers. 6 Godliness is great gain:
 10 and love of money the root of all
 evil. 11 What Timothy is to flee, and
 what to follow; 17 and whereof to
 admonish the rich. 20 To keep the
 purity of true doctrine, and to avoid
 profane janglings.

Let as many servants as are under
 the yoke, count their own ma-
 sters worthy of all honour; that the
 name of God, and his doctrine be
 not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing
 masters, let them not despise them,
 because they are brethren: but ra-
 ther do them service, because they
 are || faithfull and beloved, partakers || Or,
 of the benefit. These things teach || Or,
 and exhort, || believing,

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

4 He is *||* proud, knowing nothing, but *|* doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envie, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

5 *||* Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thy self.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into *this* world, and it is certain we can carrie nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have *||* erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with manie sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the fight

of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilare witnessed a good *||* confession;

14 That thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unrebukeable, untill the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and onely Potentate, *^* the King of kings, and *^* Lord of lords;

16 Who onely hath immortalitie, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, *^* whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour & power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in *this* world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in *†* uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy:

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, *||* willing to communicate; *||* Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: 21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacatiana.

The second epistle of Paul the apostle, to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Pauls love to Timothy, and the unfeigned faith which was in Timothy himself, his mother, and grandmother. 6 He is exhorted to stir up the gift of God which was in him, 8 to be stedfast and patient in persecution, 13 and to persist in the form and truth of that doctrine which he had learned of him. 15 Phygellus and Hermogenes, and such like are noted, & Onesiphorus is highly commended.

Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus;

2 To Timothy my dearly beloved son: Grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from my fore-fathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy:

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother

Lois,

|| Or, a fool.
|| Or, sick.
|| Or, gallings one of another.

|| Or, been seduced.

|| Or, profession.

^ Rev. 17. 4. & 19. 16.

^ John 1. 18.

† John 4. 12.

† Gr. *uncertain*

rainy of riches.

|| Or, sociable.

^ Matth. 6. 20.

Luke 12. 33.

246 Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound minde.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God;

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, ^a not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, ^b before the world began,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the gospel:

11 ^c Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have ^d believed, and I am perswaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercie unto the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may finde mercie of the Lord in that day: And in how many things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well,

CHAP. II.

1 He is exhorted again to constancy and perseverance, and to do the duty of a faithfull servant of the Lord, in dividing the word aright, and staying profane and vain babblings. 17 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 19 The foundation of the Lord is sure. 22 He is taught whereof to beware, and what to follow after, and in what sort the servant of the Lord ought to behave himself.

Thou therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me ^e among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also. ^f Or, by.

3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good souldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned except he strive lawfully.

6 ^g The husbandman that labour- ^h Or, The husband-
eth must be first partaker of the man labouring

7 Consider what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all things. ⁱ first, must be partaker of the

8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel: ^j fruits.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil-doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory.

11 It is a faithfull saying. For ^k if ^l Rom. 6.
we be dead with him, we shall also 5, 8.
live with him:

12 ^m If we suffer, we shall also ⁿ Rom.
reign with him: ^o if we deny him, 8 17.
he also will deny us: ^p Matth.

13 ^q If we beleeve not, yet he a- 10 33.
bideth faithfull; he cannot denie Mark
himself. 8 38.

14 Of these things put them in re- ^r Rom.
membrance, charging them before 3. 3.
the Lord, that they strive not about words.

^a Tit.
3. 5.

^b Ephes.
1. 4.
Tit. 1. 2.

^c 1 Tim.
2. 7.

^d Or,
trusted.

words, to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

15 Studie to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

16 But shun profane and vain babblings; for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

|| Or, gangrene. 17 And their word will eat as doth a || canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus;

18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

|| Or, steady. 19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth || sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquitie.

* Rom. 9. 21. 20 But in a great house there are not onely vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto everie good work.

22 Flee also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord, out of a pure heart.

* 1 Tim. 1. 4. Tit. 3. 9. 23 But || foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

|| Or, forbearing. 24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, || patient,

25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;

† Gr. awake. † Gr. taken alive. 26 And that they may || recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are || taken captive by him at his will

CHAP. III.

1 He adviseth him of the times to come, 6 describeth the enemies of the truth, 10 propoundeth unto him his own example, 16 and commendeth the holy scriptures.

THIS know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. 247 1 Tim. 4. 1.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankfull, unholy,

3 Without natural affection, trucebreakers, || false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, || Or, makes.

4 Traitours, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more then lovers of God;

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, || reprobate concerning the faith. || Or, of

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, as theirs also was. no judgement.

10 But || thou hast fully known || Or, thou hast my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience, || been a diligent follower of.

11 Persecutions, afflictions which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 * All scripture is given by inspiration. 2. Per. 1. 21. H h h h

248 *piration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:*

|| Or, perfected. || That the man of God may be perfectly, || thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

CHAP. IV.

1 *He exhorteth him to do his duty with all care and diligence; 6 certifieth him of the nearness of his death; 9 willeth him to come speedily unto him, and to bring Marcus with him, and certain other things which he wrote for; 14 warneth him to beware of Alexander the smith; 16 informeth him what had befallen him at his first answering: 19 and soon after he concludeth.*

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdom:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.

4 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

|| Or, fulfill. || 5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, || make full proof of thy ministerie.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Judge shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministry.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper-smith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood || our || *Or, our preaching.* words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ The second epistle unto Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

The epistle of Paul to **TITUS**.

CHAP. I.

1 For what end Titus was left in Crete.
6 How they that are to be chosen ministers, ought to be qualified. **11** The monethes of evil teachers to be stopped: **12** and what manner of men they be.



PAUL a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which

is after godliness:

2 || In hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie, promised ^a before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus mine own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, & the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are || wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee.

6 ^b If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithfull children not accused of riot, or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of || good men, sober, just, holy, temperate;

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, || as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gain-sayers.

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witness is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be found in the faith;

14 ^c Not giving heed to Jewish ^d fables, and commandments of men, ^e that turn from the truth.

15 ^d Unto the pure all things are ^e pure: but unto them that are defiled, ^f and unbelieving, is nothing pure; but even their minde and conscience is defiled.

16 They profess that they know || God; but in works they denie him, ^g void of being abominable, and disobedient, & ^h judgment. unto every good work || reprobate.

CHAP. II.

1 Directions given unto Titus both for his doctrine and life. **9** Of the duty of servants, and in general of all Christians.

But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men be || sober, || Or, ⁱ grave, temperate, sound in faith, in ^j diligent. charitie, in patience:

3 The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh || holiness, not || ^k false accusers, or given to ^l much wine, teachers of good things; || Or, ^m women.

4 That they may teach the young women to be || sober, to love their ⁿ husbands, to love their children, || Or, ^o wise

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, ^p obedient to their own ^q husbands, that the word of God be ^r 5. 23. not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be || sober-minded. || Or, ^s discreet.

7 In all things shewing thy self a pattern of good works: in doctrine ^t shewing uncorruptness, gravitie, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the ^u contrary part, may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you. ^v 6. 5.

9 Exhort ^w servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please ^x them well in all things: not || answering again, ^y 3. 22. 2. 18.

10 Not purloining; but shewing ^z gain saying. all good fidelity; that they may adorn ^{aa} the

250 the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

|| Or, 11 For the grace of God || that
that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to
bringeth all men;

salvation 12 Teaching us, that denying un-
to all men godliness and worldly lusts, we
hath ap- should live soberly, righteously, and
peared. godly in this present world;

1 Cor. 13 Looking for that blessed hope,
1. 7. & the glorious appearing of the great
Phil. 3. God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:
20.

14 Who gave himself for us, that
he might redeem us from all iniqui-
tie, and purifie unto himself a pecu-
liar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort,
and rebuke with all authoritie. Let
no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is yet further directed by Paul,
both concerning the things he should
teach, and not teach. 10 He is wil-
led also to reject obstinate hereticks:
12 which done, he appointeth him
both time and place, wherein he
should come unto him; and so con-
cludeth.

* Rom. Put them in minde * to be subject
13. 1. to principalities and powers, to
1 Pet. 2. obey magistrates, to be readie to
13. every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be
no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all
meekness unto all men.

* 1 Cor. 3 For ^b we our selves also were
6. 11. sometimes foolish, disobedient, de-
ceived, serving divers lusts and plea-
sures, living in malice and envie,
hatefull, and hating one another.

|| Or, 4 But after that the kindness and
pity. || love of God our Saviour toward
man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but ac- 2 Tim.
cording to his mercy he saved us by 1. 9.
the washing of regeneration, and re-
newing of the holy Ghost;

6 Which he shed on us abundant-† Gr.
ly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour: richly.

7 That being justified by his
grace, we should be made heirs, ac-
cording to the hope of eternal life.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and
these things I will that thou affirm
constantly, that they which have
beleaved in God, might be carefull
to maintain good works: these
things are good and profitable unto
men.

9 But ^d avoid foolish questions, ^d 1 Tim.
and genealogies, and contentions, 1. 4.
and strivings about the law; for they 2 Tim.
are unprofitable and vain. 2. 23.

10 A man that is an heretick, after
the first & second admonition, reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such,
is subverted, and sinneth, being con-
demned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas un-
to thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to
come unto me to Nicopolis: for I
have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and
Apollon on their journey diligently,
that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to
|| maintain good works for necessary || Or,
uses, that they be not unfruitfull. profess

15 All that are with me salute ^{honest}
thee. Greet them that love us in the trades.
faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained
the first bishop of the church of
the Cretians, from Nicopolis of
Macedonia.

The Epistle of Paul to PHILEMON.

4 He rejoiceth to hear of the faith and
love of Philemon: 9 whom he desireth
to forgive his servant Onesimus, and
lovingly to receive him again.



Paul a prisoner of
Jesus Christ, and
Timothie our bro-
ther, unto Phile-
mon our dearly be-
loved, & fellow-la-
bourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia and
Archippus our fellow-souldier, and

to the church in thy house:

3 Grace to you, and peace from
God our Father and the Lord Jesus
Christ.

4 I thank my God, making men- 1 Thes.
tion of thee always in my prayers, 1. 2.

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, 2 Thes.
which thou hast toward the Lord Je- 1. 3.
sus, and toward all saints;

6 That the communication of thy
faith may become effectual by the
acknowledging of every good thing,
which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love; because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoy thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

Coloss. 4. 9. 10 I beseech thee for my son ^b Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds:

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing; that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldst receive him for ever;

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved,

specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus;

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *HEBREWS*.

C H A P. I.

1 Christ in these last times coming to us from the Father, ⁴ is preferred above the angels, both in person and office.



OD who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

3 Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:

4 Being made so much better ^{2. 7.} then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent ^{Acts 13. 33.} name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels ^{5. 5.} said he at any time, ^b Thou art my ^c Son, this day have I begotten thee? ^{2 Sam. 7. 14.} And again, ^c I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? ^{1 Chron. 22. 10.}

6 And again, when he bringeth ^{Psal. 89. 26, 27.} in the first-begotten into the world, ^d he saith, ^d And let all the angels of ^{Psal. 97. 7.} God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, ^e Who maketh his angels spirits, and ^{104. 4.} his ministers a flame of fire. ^f Psal.

8 But unto the Son he saith, ^f Thy ^{45. 6, 7.} throne, O God, is for ever and ever; [†] Gr. a sceptre of [†] righteousness is the right-sceptre of thy kingdome: ^{neß, or}

9 Thou hast loved righteousness, ^{straight-} and hated iniquity; therefore God ^{neß.}

252 *even* thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladness above thy fellows.

Psalm. 10 And, *Thou* Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment;

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

Psalm. 110. 1. he at any time, *Sit* on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy footstool?

Matth. 22. 44. 14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

CHAP. II.

1 We ought to be obedient to Christ Jesus, 5 and that because he vouchsafed to take our nature upon him, 14 as it was necessary.

Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should *†* let them slip.

† Gr. run out as leaking vessels. 2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward;

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

† Or, distributions. 4 God also bearing them witness, both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and *||* gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his own will?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

Psalm. 8. 4, &c. 6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, *What* is man that thou art mindfull of him? or the son of man that thou visitest him?

† Or, a little while in serious. 7 Thou madest him *||* a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

1 Cor. 15. 27. 8 *Thou* hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in

that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing *that* is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, *||* for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. *† Or, by.*

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, & they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, *I* will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. *Psalm.* 22. 22.

13 And again, *I* will put my trust in him. And again, *Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.* *Psalm.* 18. 2. *Isa.* 8. 18.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same: that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their life-time subject to bondage.

16 For verily *†* he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham. *† Gr. he taketh not hold of angels, but of the seed of Abraham he taketh hold.*

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren; that he might be a mercifull & faithfull high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy than Moses: 7 therefore if we beleve not in him, we shall be more worthy punishment than hard-hearted Israel.

Wherefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;

2 Who was faithfull to him that *†* appointed

† Gr. made, 1 Sam. 12. 6. * Num. 12. 7. † appointed him, as also * Moses was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glorie then Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man; but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithfull in all his house as a servant, for a testimonie of those things which were to be spoken after;

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house: whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoycing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, To day if ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourtie years.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in their heart; and they have not known my ways.

11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called, To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end;

15 While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved fourtie years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleaved not?

19 So we see that they could not

enter in because of unbelief.

CHAP. IV.

1 The rest of Christians is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word.

14 By our high priest Jesus the Son of God, subject to infirmities, but not sin, 16 we must and may go boldly to the throne of grace.

Let us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but

† the word preached did not profit them, || not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have beleaved do enter into rest, as he said, * As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, * And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom || it was first preached,

7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

8 For if || Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a || rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of || unbelief.

12 For the word of God is quick, and powerfull, and sharper then any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but

† Psal. 95. 7. Chap. 4. 7.

† Gr. if they shall enter.

* Num. 14. 29, &c.

† Gr. the word of hearing.

|| Or, because they were not united by faith to.

* Psal. 95. 11. * Gen. 2. 2.

the gospel was first preached.

|| That is, Joshua.

|| Or, keeping of a sabbath.

|| Or, disobedience.

254 all things are naked, and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast *our* profession.

15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercie, and finde grace to help in time of need.

CH AP. V.

1 The authority and honour of our Saviours priesthood. 11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reprov'd.

For every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins:

¶ Or, can reasonably bear with.

2 Who ¶ can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmities:

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

2 Chr. 26. 18.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron:

¶ Psal. 2. 7. Chap.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, * Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

1. 5.

¶ Psal.

110. 4.

Chap.

7. 17.

6 As he saith also in another place, * Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, ¶ in that he feared;

¶ Or, for his pietie.

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have many things

to say, and hard to be uttered; seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the ^d 1 Cor. first principles of the oracles of God; 3. 2. and are become such as have need ¶ Gr. of ^d milk, and not of strong meat. *bath no*

13 For every one that useth milk, *experi-* ¶ is unskillfull in the word of righte- *ence.* ousness: for he is a babe. ¶ Or,

14 But strong meat belongeth to *perfect.* them that are ¶ of full age, *even those* ¶ Or, of who by reason ¶ of use have their *an habis,* senses exercised to discern both good or *perfe-* and evil. *tion.*

CH AP. VI.

1 He exhorteth, not to fall back from the faith, 11 but to be stedfast, 12 diligent and patient to wait upon God, 13 because God is most sure in his promise.

Therefore leaving ¶ the principles ¶ Or, of the doctrine of Christ, let us *the word* go on unto perfection; not laying a- *of the* gain the foundation of repentance *beginning* from dead works, and of faith to- *of Christ.* wards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For ^a it is impossible for those ^a Chap. who were once enlightened, & have ^{10. 26.} tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them ¶ by whom it is dressed, receiveth ¶ Or, for, blessing from God:

8 But that which beareth thorns & briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloved, we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompanie salvation, though we thus speak,

10 For God is not unrighteous, to forget your work & labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints and do minister.

11 And we desire, that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, ^b he sware by himself,

^b Gen.
22.16,
17.

14 Saying, Surely, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater: and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutabilitie of his counsel, [†] confirmed it by an oath:

[†] Gr.
interpo-
sed him-
self by
an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us:

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entrencheth into that within the vail,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

C H A P. VII.

1 Christ Jesus is a priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 and so far more excellent then the priests of Aarons order.

^a Gen.
14.18,
&c.

FOr this ^a Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also, king of Salem, which is king of peace;

3 Without father, without mo-

ther, [†] without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of [†] Gr. life; but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually. ^{pedegree.}

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily ^b they that are of ^b Num. the sons of Levi, who receive the of- 18.21.

fice of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loyns of Abraham:

6 But he whose ^{||} descent is not ^{||} Or, counted from them, received tithes ^{pedegree.} of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loyns of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life. ^c Psal.

17 For he testifieth, ^c Thou art 110.4.

256 a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disanulling of the commandment going before, for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

|| Or, but it was the bringing in.

|| Or, without swearing of an oath. ^a Psal. 110.4.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, || but the bringing in of a better hope *did*; by the which we draw nigh unto God.

20 And in as much as not without an oath *he was made priest*,

21 (For those priests were made || without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, ^a The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec)

22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death:

|| Or, which passeth not from one to another. || Or, evermore.

24 But this *man*, because he continueth ever, hath an || unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them || to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners; and made higher then the heavens;

^a Levit. 9.7. and 16.6.

27 Who needeth not daily, as ^a those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmitie; but the word of the oath which was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is [†] consecrated for evermore.

[†] Gr. perfected.

CHAP. VIII.

1 By the eternal priesthood of Christ, the Levitical priesthood of Aaron is abolished; 7 and the temporal covenant with the fathers, by the eternal covenant of the gospel.

NOW of the things which we have spoken, *this is* the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majestie in the heavens;

|| Or, of holy things.

2 A minister || of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which

the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore *it is* of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that || there are priests that offer gifts according to the law:

|| Or, they are priests.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. ^a For see (saith he) *that* ^a Exod. 25.40. thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount. 7.44.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministerie, by how much also he is the mediator of a better || covenant, which was established upon better promises.

|| Or, testament.

7 For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, ^b Behold, the days come ^b Jer. 31. 31, 32, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: 33, 34.

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this *is* the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will [†] put my laws into their minde, [†] Gr. and write them || in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they || Or, shall be to me a people. upon.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new *covenant*, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 The description of the rites and bloody sacrifices of the law, 11 far inferiour to the dignity and perfection of the blood and sacrifice of Christ.

Then verily the first covenant had also || ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuarie.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, 2 the first wherein was the candlestick and the table and the shewbread; which is called || the sanctuarie.

3 And after the second vail, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was 1 the golden pot that had manna, and 2 Aarons rod that budded, and 3 the tables of the covenant;

5 And 6 over it the cherubims of glorie shadowing the mercie-seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God:

7 But into the second went the high priest alone 1 once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him what did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience,

10 Which stood onely in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal || ordinances imposed on them untill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater & more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building;

12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood

he entred in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

15 For if 2 the blood of bulls, and 3 Levit. of goats, and 4 the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctified to the purifying of the flesh; 16.14. 19.17. &c.

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit, offered himself without || spot || Or, to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessity || be the death || Or, be of the testatour. brought in.

17 For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the testatour liveth.

18 Whereupon, neither the first testament was || dedicated without || Or, blood. purified.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and || scarlet wooll, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people. || Or, purple.

20 Saying, 1 This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you. 24.8.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministerie.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessarie that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: 1 John 2.1.

|| Or, ceremonies.

Exod. 40.

|| Or, holy.

Exod. 16.34.

Num. 17.10.

Deut. 10.5.

1 Kings 8.9.

2 Chron. 5.10.

Exod. 25.22.

Exod. 30.10.

Levit. 16.2.

|| Or, rites, or ceremonies.

258

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place, every year with blood of others:

26 (For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world) but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement:

1 Pet.
3.18.

28 So¹ Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakness of the law-sacrifices.

10 The sacrifice of Christs body once offered, 14 for ever hath taken away sins. 19 An exhortation to hold fast the faith, with patience and thanksgiving.

FOR the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins.

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats, should take away sins.

* Psal.
40.6.&c.
|| Or,
thou hast
fitted me.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body || hast thou prepared me:

6 In burnt-offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Lo, I come (In the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein (which are offered by the law;)

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second

10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which can never take away sins:

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God;

13 From henceforth expecting^b till his enemies be made his foot-^b stool. Psal.
110.1.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. 1 Cor.
15.25.
Chap.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also¹ is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, 1.13.

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord; I will ^cput my laws into their hearts, and in their minds^c will I write them: Jer.
31.33.

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now, where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

19 Having therefore, brethren, || boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, || Or,
liberty.

20 By a new and living way which he hath || consecrated for us through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; || Or,
new
made.

21 And having an high priest over the house of God:

22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he is faithful that promised)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works:

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

26 For^d if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins. d Chap.
6.4.

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgement, and fiery indigna-

dignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

Deut. 28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, ^e under two or three witnesses:

Matth. 23.16. 29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant where-with he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

Deut. 32.35. 30 For we know him that hath said, *Vengeance belongeth unto me*, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, ^b The Lord shall judge his people.

Deut. 32.36. 31 *It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

Psal. 50. 32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whilest ye were made a gazing stock, both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly whilest ye became companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience; that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

Hab. 3.4. 37 For ^b yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry.

Rom. 17. Gal. 3. 38 Now ⁱ the just shall live by faith: but if *any man* draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that beleeve, to the saving of the soul.

CHAP. XI.

ⁱ *What faith is.* 6 *Without faith we cannot please God.* 7 *The worthy fruits thereof in the fathers of old time.*

Or, *ground, or confidence.* Now faith is the *||* substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

2 For by it the elders obtained *259* a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that ^a the worlds were framed by the ^a Gen. word of God, so that things which ^{i.1.} are seen were not made of things which do appear.

4 By faith ^b Abel offered unto ^b Gen. God a more excellent sacrifice then ^{4.4.} Cain, by which he obtained witness, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, *||* yet speaketh. *||* Or,

5 By faith ^c Enoch was translated *is yet* that he should not see death; and was *spoken of.* not found, because God had trans- ^c Gen. lated him: for before his translation ^{5.24.} he had this testimonie, that he pleased God. ^{4.10.}

6 But without faith *it is impossi.* Ecclus ble to please *him*: for he that cometh ^{44 16.} to God, must beleeve that he is, and ^{& 49.14.} that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By faith ^d Noah being warned ^d Gen. of God of things not seen as yet, ^{6.13.} *||* moved with fear, prepared an ark *||* Or, to the saving of his house; by the *being* which he condemned the world, and *wary.* became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

8 By faith ^e Abraham when he ^e Gen. was called to go out into a place ^{12.4.} which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also ^f Sara her ^f Gen. self received strength to conceive ^{17.19.} seed, and was delivered of a childe ^{& 21.2.} when she was past age, because she judged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *so* many as the stars of the skie in multitude, and ^a the sand which is by the sea-shore innumerable.

13 These all died [†] in faith, not [†] Gr. having received the promises, but *according* having seen them afar off, and were *to faith.* per-

160 persuaded of them, and embraced
 Gen. them, and ⁸ confessed that they were
 23.4. strangers and pilgrims on the earth.
 and 47.9. 14 For they that say such things,
 1 Chron. declare plainly that they seek a
 29.15. countrey.

Psal. 39. 15 And truly if they had been
 12. and mindfull of that countrey, from
 119.19. whence they came out, they might
 have had opportunity to have re-
 turned:

16 But now they desire a better
 countrey, that is, an heavenly: where-
 fore God is not ashamed to be cal-
 led their God: for he hath prepared
 for them a citie.

Gen. 17 By faith ^b Abraham when he
 22.9. was tried, offered up Isaac: and he
 that had received the promises, of-
 fered up his onely begotten son:

Or, 10. 18 || Of whom it was said, ⁱ That
 Gen. in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

21.12. 19 Accounting that God was able
 Rom. to raise him up, even from the dead;
 2.7. from whence also he received him
 in a figure.

Gen. 20 By faith ^k Isaac blessed Jacob
 27.27, and Esau concerning things to come.

39. 21 By faith Jacob when he was a
 Gen. dying, ⁱ blessed both the sons of Jo-
 48.15. seph; and ^m worshipped leaning upon
 Gen. the top of his staff.

47.31. 22 By faith ⁿ Joseph when he di-
 Gen. ed, || made mention of the departing
 50.24, of the children of Israel; and gave
 25. commandment concerning his bones

Or, 23 By faith ^o Moses when he was
 remem- born, was hid three moneths of his
 bred. parents, because they saw he was a
 Gen. proper childe; and they were not a-
 2.2. fraid of the kings ^p commandment.

Acts 7. 24 By faith ^q Moses when he was
 20. come to years, refused to be called
 Exod. the son of Pharaohs daughter;

1.16. 25 Choosing rather to suffer af-
 Exod. fliction with the people of God, then
 2.11. to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a
 season;

Or, 26 Esteeming the reproach || of
 for Christ. Christ greater riches then the trea-
 sures in Egypt: for he had respect
 unto the recompense of the reward.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not
 fearing the wrath of the king: for he
 endured as seeing him who is invi-
 sible.

Exod. 28 Through faith ^r he kept the
 12.21, pass-over, & the sprinkling of blood,

lest he that destroyed the first-born,
 should touch them.

29 By faith ^t they passed through ^r Exod.
 the Red Sea, as by drie land: which 14.22.
 the Egyptians assaying to do, were
 drowned.

30 By faith ^t the walls of Jericho ^r Josh.
 fell down, after they were compassed 6.20.
 about seven days.

31 By faith ^u the harlot Rahab ^u Josh.
 perished not with them || that be- 6.23.
 lieved not, when ^x she had received || Or,
 the spies with peace. ^{what were}

32 And what shall I more say? ^{disobe-}
 for the time would fail me to tell of ^{dient.}
 Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Sam- ^x Josh.
 son, and of Jephthae, of David also 2.1.
 and Samuel, and of the prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued
 kingdoms, wrought righteousness,
 obtained promises, stopped the
 mouthes of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire,
 escaped the edge of the sword, out
 of weakness were made strong,
 waxed valiant in fight, turned to
 flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead
 raised to life again: and others were
 tortured, not accepting deliver- ^y 2. Mac.
 ance; that they might obtain a bet- 7.7.
 ter resurrection.

36 And others had trial of cruel
 mockings, and scourgings, yea more-
 over, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were
 sawn asunder, were tempted, were
 slain with the sword: they wandred
 about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins,
 being destitute, afflicted, tormented:

38 (Of whom the world was not
 worthy) they wandred in deserts,
 and in mountains, and in dens and
 caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained
 a good report through faith, received
 not the promise:

40 God having || provided some || Or,
 better thing for us, that they without ^{foreseeing}
 us should not be made perfect.

CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to constant faith, pa-
 tience, and goaline ^{β.2} A commen-
 dation of the new testament above
 the old.

Wherefore, seeing we also are
 compassed about with so great
 a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside
 every

every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,

¶ Or,
beginner.

2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

Job
5.17.
Prov.
3.11.
Rev.
3.19.

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

10 For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness, unto them which are exercised thereby.

Isa.
35.3.

12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.

¶ Or,
even.

13 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

Rom.
12.18.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

¶ Or,
fall
from.

15 Looking diligently, lest any man shall fail of the grace of God; lest

any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled: 261

16 Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birth- 25.33. right.

17 For ye know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. ¶ Or, way to change

18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, 19.12, 19.12,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which they that heard, intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: 18.19, 20.19.

20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart. 1 Exod. 19.13.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake)

22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the citie of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

23 To the general assembly and church of the first-born which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men, made perfect. ¶ Or, enrolled.

24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel. ¶ Or, testament.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: For if they escaped not who refused him, that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven: 1 Pet. 1.2.

26 Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth onely, but also heaven. 1 Hagg. 2.6.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain. ¶ Or, shaken.

28 Wherefore

262

28 Wherefore we receiving a
kingdome which cannot be moved,
|| Or, let us have grace, whereby we may
bold fast, serve God acceptably, with reve-
^mDeut. rence and godly fear.

4.24. and 29 For ^mour God is a consuming
9.3. fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Divers admonitions, as to charity,
4 to honest life, 5 to avoid covet-
tousness, 7 to regard Gods preachers,
9 to take heed of strange doctrines,
10 to confesse Christ, 16 to give alms,
17 to obey governours, 18 to pray
for the apostle. 20 The conclusion.

^aRom. L Et ^a brotherly love continue.

12.10. 2 ^b Be not forgetfull to enter-
^bRom. tain strangers: for thereby ^c some
12.13. have entertained angels unawares.

1 Pet. 4.9 3 Remember them that are in
^cGen. bonds, as bound with them; and
18.3. and them which suffer adversitie, as be-
19.2. ing your selves also in the body.

4 Marriage is honourable in all,
and the bed undefiled: but whore-
mongers and adulterers God will
judge.

5 Let your conversation be with-
out covetousness; and be content
with such things as ye have: for he
hath said, ^d I will never leave thee,
nor forsake thee.

^dDeut. 31.8.

Josh. 6 So that we may boldly say,
1.5. ^e The Lord is my helper, and I will

^ePsal. not fear what man shall do unto me.

56.4. 11. 7 Remember them which || have
and 118. the rule over you, who have spoken
6. unto you the word of God: whose

|| Or, faith follow, considering the end of
are the their conversation.

guides. 8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday,
and to day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with di-
vers and strange doctrines: for it is
a good thing that the heart be esta-
blished with grace, not with meats,
which have not profited them that
have been occupied therein.

^fLev. 14. 10 We have an altar whereof
11. 12. they have no right to eat, which
and 6. serve the tabernacle.

30. and 11 For ^f the bodies of those
16.27. beasts, whose blood is brought into

the sanctuary by the high priest for
sin, are burnt without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he
might sanctifie the people with his
own blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto
him without the camp, bearing his
reproich.

14 ^g For here have we no conti- ^g Mic. 2.
nuing city, but we seek one to come. 10.

15 By him therefore let us offer
the sacrifice of praise to God con-
tinually, that is, ^h the fruit of our ^h Hos.
lips, [†] giving thanks to his name. 14.2.

16 But to do good, and to com- [†] Gr.
municate, forget not: for ⁱ with confess-
such sacrifices God is well pleased. [†] sing 10.

17 ^k Obey them that || have the ⁱ Phil.
rule over you, & submit your selves: 4.18.

for they watch for your souls, as they ^k 1 Thess.
that must give account: that they 5.12.
may do it with joy, and not with || Or,
grief: for that is unprofitable for you. ^{guide}.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we
have a good conscience, in all things
willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather
to do this, that I may be restored
to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace that
brought again from the dead our
Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of
the sheep, through the blood of the
everlasting || covenant,

21 Make you perfect in everie [†] Or,
good work to do his will, || working [†] testa-
in you that which is well-pleasing in [†] ment.
his sight, through Jesus Christ; to [†] Or,
whom be glorie for ever and ever. [†] doing.

Amen. 22 And I beseech you, brethren,
suffer the word of exhortation; for I
have written a letter unto you in few
words.

23 Know ye, that our brother Ti-
mothie is set at libertie; with whom,
if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the
rule over you, and all the saints.
They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from
Italie, by Timothie.

The general epistle of JAMES.

CHAP. I.

We are to rejoyce under the cross, 5 to ask patience of God, 13 and in our trials not to impute our weaknes, or sins unto him, 19 but rather to hearken to the word, to meditate in it, and to do thereafter: 26 otherwise men may seem, but never be truly religious.



James a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations;

^a Rom. 5. 3. 3 ^a Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

^b Matth. 7. 7. 5 If any of you lack wisdom, ^b let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the winde, and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.

9 Let the brother of low degree **||** rejoyce in that he is exalted:

^c Or, glory. ^d Isa. 40. 6. 10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because ^c as the flower of the grafs he shall pass away.

^e Pet. 1. 24. 11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grafs, and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

^f Job 5. 7. 12 ^d Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for

God cannot be tempted with **||** evil, **||** Or, evils, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not err, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kinde of first-fruits of his creatures

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, ^e slow to speak, ^e slow to wrath. ^e Prov.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God. 17. 27.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthiness, and superfluitie of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

22 But ^f be ye doers of the word, ^f Matth. 7. 21. and not hearers onely, deceiving your own selves. ^g Rom. 2. 13.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glasse:

24 For he beholdeth himself and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his **||** deed. **||** Or, doing.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this mans religion is vain.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

It is not agreeable to Christian profession to regard the rich, and to despise the

poor brethren: 13 rather we are to be loving and mercifull; 14 and not to boast of faith where no deeds are: 17 which is but a dead faith, 19 the faith of devils, 21 not of Abraham, 25 and Rahab.

MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glorie, with ^a respect of persons.

* Levit. 19. 15.

Deut. 1.

17. and

16. 19.

Prov. 24.

23.

† Gr.

syna-

gogue.

|| Or,

well, or

seemly.

|| Or,

that.

2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man, in vile raiment;

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here || in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:

4 Are ye not then partial in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

5 Harken my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of || the kingdome, which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgement-seats

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthie name, by the which ye are called?

* Levit.

19. 18.

Rom.

13. 9.

8 If ye fulfill the royal law, according to the scripture, ^b Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, ye do well.

9 But if ye have respect to persons ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, & yet offend in one point, he is guiltie of all.

|| Or,

that law

which

said.

11 For || he that said, Do not commit adultery; said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adulterie, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the law.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of libertie.

|| Or,

glorieth.

13 For he shall have judgement without mercie, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy || rejoyceth against judgement.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food;

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needfull to the bodie; what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being [†] alone.

† Gr.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith || without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. ^{by it self.} || Some copies reade, by thy works.

19 Thou beleevest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also beleeve, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father, justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

22 || Seest thou how faith wrought || with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? ^{|| Or, thou seest}

23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, ^c Abraham beleeved God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God. ^{Gen. 15. 6. Rom. 4. 3.}

24 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith onely. ^{Gal. 3. 6.}

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the bodie without the || spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. ^{|| Or, breath.}

CHAP. III.

1 We are not rashly or arrogantly to reprove others: 5 but rather to bridle the tongue, a little member, but a powerfull instrument of much good, and great harm. 13 They who be truly wise, be milde, and peaceable, without envying, and strife.

MY brethren, be not manie masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater || condemnation. ^{|| Or,}

2 For in manie things we offend all. ^{judge-} ^{ment.} ^a If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole bodie. ^a Eccles. 14. i. & 19. 16. &

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouthes, that they may obey us; 25. 8, and

and we turn about their whole bodie.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governour listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold how great || a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquitie: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole bodie, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For every † kinde of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of † mankinde:

8 But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.

9 Therewith blest we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same || place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive-berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yeeld salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glorie not, and lie not against the truth.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, || sensual, devilish.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is † confusion, and everie evil work.

17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, || without partiality, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIIII.

1 We are to strive against covetousness, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction and rash judgement of others: 13 and not to be confident in the good success of worldly business; but mindfull ever of the uncertainty of this life, to commit our selves and all our affairs to Gods providence.

From whence come wars and || fightings among you? come they || Or, not hence, even of your || lusts, that war in your members? *brav- lings.*

2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, || Or, and desire to have, and cannot ob- *pleasures.* tain: ye fight and war yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your || lusts.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, *pleasures.* know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmitie with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth || to envie?

6 But he giveth more grace: *enviously.* wherefore he saith, ^a God resisteth ^a Prov. the proud, but giveth grace unto the *3. 34.* humble. *1 Pet.*

7 Submit your selves therefore to *5. 5.* God; ^b resist the devil, and he will *b* Ephes. flee from you: *4. 27.*

8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purifie your hearts, ye double-minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, & weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness.

10 Humble yourselves in the sight *1 Pet.* of the Lord, and he shall lift you up. *5. 6.*

11 Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: ^d who ^d Rom. art thou that judgest another? *14. 4.*

13 ^e Go to now, ye that say, To ^e Prov. day or to morrow we will go into *27. 1,* such a citie, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:

I i i i

14 Where-

|| Or, wood.

† Gr. nature. † Gr. nature of man.

|| Or, hole.

|| Or, natural. † Gr. tumult, or unquietness.

|| Or, without wrangling.

266

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow : For what is *Or, for your life ?* *It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time , and then vanisheth away.*

1 Cor.

4. 19.

15 For that ye ought to say , ' If the Lord will, we shall live , and do this, or that.

16 But now ye rejoyce in your boastings : all such rejoycing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good , and doeth it not , to him it is sin.

CHAP. V.

1 Wicked rich men are to fear Gods vengeance. 7 We ought to be patient in afflictions, after the example of the prophets, and Job; 12 to forswear swearing; 13 to pray in adversity, to sing in prosperity; 16 to acknowledge mutually our several faults, to pray one for another; 19 and to reduce a straying brother to the truth.

GO to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you , and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth : and the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts , as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just; and he doth not resist you.

Or, be long patient, or suffer with long patience.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it , untill he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts : for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 || Grudge not one against another, brethren lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord : that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, ^a swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath : but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, ^b anointing him with oyl in the name of the Lord :

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed : The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and ^c he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six moneths.

18 And ^d he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, ^e if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

The first epistle general of **PETER**.

CHAP. I.

1 He bleſſeth God for his manifold ſpiritual graces, 10 ſhewing that the ſalvation in Chriſt is no news, but a thing propheſied of old: 13 and exhorteth them accordingly to a godly converſation, forasmuch as they are now born anew by the word of God.



eter an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, to the ſtrangers ſcattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Aſia, and Biſthynia,

2 Eleſt according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through ſanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and ſprinkling of the blood of Jeſus Chriſt: Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

Hebr.
12. 24.

2 Cor.
1. 3.
Ephes.
1. 3.
† Gr.
much.

3 Blessed be the God, and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, which according to his † abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that faſteth not away, reſerved in heaven || for you

|| Or,
for us.

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto ſalvation, ready to be revealed in the laſt time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoyce, though now for a ſeaſon (if need be) ye are in heavineſs through manifold temptations.

7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious then of gold that periſheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praiſe, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jeſus Chriſt:

8 Whom having not ſeen, ye love; in whom though now ye ſee him not, yet beleeving, ye rejoyce with joy unſpeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the ſalvation of your ſouls.

10 Of which ſalvation the prophets have enquired, and ſearched diligently, who propheſied of the grace that ſhould come unto you:

11 Searching what, or what man-

ner of time the Spirit of Chriſt which was in them did ſignifie, when it teſtified beforehand the ſufferings of Chriſt, and the glory that ſhould follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themſelves, but unto us they did miniſter the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the goſpel unto you, with the holy Ghoſt ſent down from heaven; which things the angels deſire to look into

13 Wherefore gird up the loyns of your minde, be ſober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to † Gr. be brought unto you at the revelation of Jeſus Chriſt; perfectly.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your ſelves according to the former luſts, in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, ſo be ye holy in all manner of converſation;

16 Becauſe it is written, ^c Be ye holy, for I am holy. ^c Levit. 11. 44.

17 And if ye call on the Father, ^d who without reſpect of perſons judgeth according to every mans work, paſs the time of your ſojourn- ^d & 12. 2. & 20. 7. ^d Deut. 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11.

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as ſilver and gold, from your vain converſation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Chriſt, as of a Lamb without blemiſh and without ſpot:

20 ^e Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was maniſeſt in theſe laſt times for you; ^e Rom. 16. 25. Coloff. 1. 26.

21 Who by him do beleve in God that raiſed him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God. 1 Tim. 1. 10. Tit. 1. 2.

22 Seeing ye have purified your ſouls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned ^f love of the brethren; ſee that ye love another with a pure heart ſervently. ^f Rom. 12. 10. Chap. 2. 17.

268

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

|| Or, for
that.
Isa.
40.6.
James
1.10.

24 || For ² all flesh is as grass, and all the glorie of man, as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away :

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

He deborteth them from the breach of charity; 4 shewing that Christ is the foundation whereupon they are built.

11 He beseecheth them also to abstain from fleshly lusts, 13 to be obedient to magistrates; 18 and teacheth servants how to obey their masters, 20 patiently suffering for well-doing, after the example of Christ.

Wherefore laying aside all malice and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil-speakinges,

2 As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby :

3 Ifso be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

|| Or, be
ye built.
Isa.
28.16.
Rom 9.
33.

5 Ye also as lively stones, || are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

|| Or, as
honour.
Psal.
118.22.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, ^a Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious: and he that beleeveth on him shall not be confounded.

Matth.
23.42.
Acts.4.
11.
Isa. 8.
34.
Rom. 9.
33.
Exod.
19.6.

7 Unto you therefore which beleeve he is || precious: but unto them which be disobedient, ^b the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

8 ^c And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

Rev.1.6.
& 5.10.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, ^d a royal priesthood, an holy nation,

on, || a peculiar people; that ye || Or, a should shew forth the || praises of purchase him, who hath called you out of ^{sed} people darkness into his marvellous light: || Or,

10 ^e Which in time past were not ^{vertues}, a people, but are now the people of ^e Hos. 1. God: which had not obtained mercie, but now have obtained mercie. Rom. 23.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, ^f abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul; ^f Rom. 13.14. Gal. 5.

12 ^g Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that ^g Chap. || whereas they speak against you as 3.16. evil-doers, ^h they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation. ^h Matth. 5.16.

13 ⁱ Submit your selves to everie ordinance of man for the Lords sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; ⁱ Rom. 13.1.

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not [†] using your [†] Gr. liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

17 || Honour all men. Love the || Or, brotherhood. Fear God. Honour [†] the king.

18 ^k Servants be subject to your ^k Ephes. masters with all fear, not onely to 6.5. the good and gentle, but also to the froward. 3.22.

19 For this is || thank-worthy, if Tit.2.9. a man for conscience toward God || Or, endure grief, suffering wrongfully. [†] thank.

20 For what glorie is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well and suffer for it, ye take it patiently; this is || acceptable || Or, with God. [†] thank.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered || for || Some us, leaving us an example, that ye reade, should follow his steps: [†] for you.

22 ^l Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: ^l Isa. 53.9.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again: when he suffered, he threatened not; but || committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: cause.

34 ^m Who

Isa. 53. 24 ^m Who his own self bare our
4,5,6. sins in his own bodie || on the tree,
Matth. that we being dead to sin, should
8. 17. live unto righteousness: by whose
|| Or, 10. stripes ye were healed.

25 For ye were as sheep going a-
stray; but are now returned unto the
Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

CHAP. III.

1 He teacheth the dutie of wives and
husbands to each other; 8 exhorting
all men to unitie and love, 14 and to
suffer persecution. 19 He declareth
also the benefits of Christ toward the
old world.

Ephes. 5. 22: **Coloff.** 3. 18. **L**ikewise, ye wives, be in subje-
tion to your own husbands;
that if any obey not the word,
they also may without the word be
won by the conversation of the
wives,

2 While they behold your chaste
conversation coupled with fear.

1 Tim. 2. 9. 3 ^b Whose adorning, let it not be
that outward adorning, of plaiting
the hair, and of wearing of gold, or
of putting on of apparel:

4 But let it be the hidden man of
the heart, in that which is not corru-
ptible, even the ornament of a meek
and quiet spirit, which is in the sight
of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old
times, the holy women also who trust-
ed in God adorned themselves, be-
ing in subjection unto their own hus-
bands;

Gen. 18. 12. **† Gr.**
children. 6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham,
calling him lord: whose † daugh-
ters ye are as long as ye do well,
and are not afraid with any amaze-
ment.

|| Or,
loving to the bre-
thren. 7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell
with them according to knowledge,
giving honour unto the wife as unto
the weaker vessel, and as being heirs
together of the grace of life; that
your prayers be not hindred.

Prov. 17. 13. **& 20.**
21. **Rom.** 12. 17. 8 Finally, be ye all of one minde,
having compassion one of another,
|| love as brethren, be pitifull, be
courteous:

1 Thess. 5. 15. **† Psal.**
34. 12, **&c.** 9 ^d Not rendring evil for evil, or
railing for railing: but contrariwise,
blessing; knowing that ye are there-
unto called, that ye should inherit a
blessing.

10 For he that will love life, and

see good days, let him refrain his
tongue from evil, and his lips that
they speak no guile.

11 Let him [†]eschew evil, and do ^f Isa.
good; let him seek peace, & ensue it. 1. 16.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are
over the righteous, and his ears are
open unto their prayers: but the face
of the Lord is [†] against them that do [†] Gr.
evil. upon.

13 And who is he that will harm
you, if ye be followers of that which
is good?

14 ^b But and if ye suffer for righ- ^b Matth.
teousness sake, happie are ye: and 5. 10.
^b be not afraid of their terrour, nei- ^b Isa. 8.
ther be troubled; 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in
your hearts: and be readie alwaies to
give an answer to everie man that
asketh you a reason of the hope
that is in you, with meekness and
|| fear.

16 ⁱ Having a good conscience; ^{verence.}
that whereas they speak evil of you, ^{1 Chap.}
as of evil doers, they may be asha- 2. 12.
med that falsly accuse your good
conversation in Christ.

17 For it is better if the will of
God be so, that ye suffer for well-
doing, then for evil-doing.

18 For Christ also hath ^b once ^b Rom.
suffered for sins, the just for the un- 5. 6.
just, (that he might bring us to God) Heb. 9.
being put to death in the flesh, but 38.
quickened by the Spirit:

19 By which also he went and
preached unto the spirits in prison;

20 Which sometime were diso-
bedient, ¹ when once the long-suffer- ^{1 Gen. 6.}
ing of God waited in the days of
Noah, while the ark was a prepa-
ring, wherein few, that is, eight souls,
were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto,
even baptism, doth also now save us,
(not the putting away of the filth of
the flesh, but the answer of a good
conscience towards God) by the re-
surrection of Jesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heaven, and
is on the right hand of God, angels,
and authorities, and powers being
made subject unto him.

CHAP. IV.

1 He exhorteth them to cease from sin
by the example of Christ, & the consi-
deration of the general end that now

approacheth: 12. and comforteth them
against persecution.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath
suffered for us in the flesh, arm
your selves likewise with the same
minde; for he that hath suffered in
the flesh, hath ceased from sin;

2 That he no longer should live
the rest of his time in the flesh, to the
lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may
suffice us to have wrought the will
of the Gentiles, when we walked in
lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine,
revellings, banquetings, and abo-
minable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that
you run not with them to the same
excess of riot, speaking evil of you:

5 Who shall give account to him
that is ready to judge the quick and
the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the go-
spel preached also to them that are
dead, that they might be judged ac-
cording to men in the flesh, but live
according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at
hand: be ye therefore sober and
watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fer-
vent charity among your selves: for
charity || shall cover the multitude
of sins.

9 Use hospitalitie one to ano-
ther without grudging.

10 As every man hath received
the gift, even so minister the same
one to another, as good stewards of
the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, let him speak
as the oracles of God; if any
man minister, let him do it as of the
abilitie which God giveth: that
God in all things may be glori-
fied through Jesus Christ; to whom
be praise and dominion for ever and
ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange
concerning the fierie trial, which is
to trie you, as though some strange
thing happened unto you:

13 But rejoyce, in as much as ye
are partakers of Christs sufferings;
that when his glory shall be reveal-
ed, ye may be glad also with exceed-
ing joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the

name of Christ, happy are ye; for
the spirit of glory, and of God rest-
eth upon you: on their part he is
evil spoken of, but on your part he
is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a
murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil-
doer, or as a bawle-body in other
mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Chri-
stian, let him not be ashamed; but
let him glorifie God on this behalf.

17 For the time is come that judge-
ment must begin at the house of
God: and if it first begin at us, what
shall the end be of them that obey
not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarce-
ly be saved, where shall the ungodly
and the sinner appear? Prov. 11. 31.

19 Wherefore let them that suffer
according to the will of God, com-
mit the keeping of their souls to him
in well-doing as unto a faithfull
Creatour.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth the elders to feed their
flocks; 5 the younger, to obey; 8 and
all, to be sober, watchfull, and con-
stant in the faith; 9 to resist the cruel
adversary the devil.

THe elders which are among you,
I exhort, who am also an elder,
and a witness of the sufferings of
Christ, and also a partaker of the
glorie that shall be revealed:

2 Feed the flock of God || which
is among you, taking the oversight
thereof, not by constraint, but wil-
lingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a
ready minde; Or, as much as in you is.

3 Neither as || being lords over
Gods heritage, but being ensamples
to the flock. Or, over-ruling.

4 And when the chief Shepherd
shall appear, ye shall receive a
crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger, submit
your selves unto the elder: yea, all
of you be subject one to another, and
be clothed with humilitie: for God
resisteth the proud, and giveth grace
to the humble. James 4. 6. James 4. 10.

6 Humble your selves therefore
under the mighty hand of God, that
he may exalt you in due time: Psal. 55. 22.

7 Casting all your care upon
him, for he careth for you. Matth. 6. 25.

^a Prov.
10. 12.

|| Or,
will.

^b Rom.

12. 13.

Hebr.

13. 2.

^c Rom.

12. 6.

^d Matth.

5. 11.

8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversarie the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about seeking whom he may devour.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glorie and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus a faithfull brother unto you, (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my son.

14 ^d Greet ye one another with a ^d Rom. kifs of charitie. Peace be with you 16.16. all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

The second epistle general of **PETER**.

CHAP. I.

1 Confirming them in hope of the increase of Gods graces, 5 he exhorteth them by faith and good works, 10 make their calling sure: 12 whereof he is carefull to remember them, knowing that his death is at hand: 16 and warneth them to be constant in the faith of Christ, who is the true Son of God by the eye-witness of the apostles beholding his majesty, and by the testimony of the Father and the prophets.



Imon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us ^{||} 10 glorie and vertue:

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises; that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness;

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charitie.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdome of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as ^a our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed ^b John me. 21.18.

15 Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able after my decease to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed ^b cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power & coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majestie. ^b 1 Cor. 1.17. and 2.1.

17 For

272

^c Matth.
27.5.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glorie, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glorie, ^c This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophesie; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, untill the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

^d 2 Tim.

3.16.

|| Or,
at any
time.

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

21 For ^d the prophesie came not || in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake *as they were moved by the holy Ghost.*

CHAP. II.

1 *He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the impietie and punishment both of them and their followers; 7 from which the godly shall be delivered, as Lot was out of Sodom: 10 and more fully describeth the manners of those profane and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better known, and avoided.*

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

|| Or,
lascivi-
ous ways,
as some
copies
read.

2 And many shall follow their || pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgement now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

^a Job 4.
18.
Jude 6.

4 For if God spared not ^a the angels that sinned, but cast *them* down to hell, & delivered *them* into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement;

^b Gen.
7.1.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved ^b Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

6 And ^c turning the cities of So- ^c Gen.
dom and Gomorrha into ashes, con- 19.24.
demned *them* with an overthrow, making *them* an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked;

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day, with *their* unlawfull deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise || government: || Or, ^d Presumptuous *are they*, self-willed, ^{dominion} they are not afraid to speak evil of ^d Jude 8.
dignities:

11 Whereas angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation || against them || Some
before the Lord. read,

12 But these, as natural brute ^{against}
beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that *they* ^{themselves.}
understand not, and shall utterly per-
ish in their own corruption;

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, *as they* that count it pleasure to riot in the day-time: spots *they are* and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of [†] adulterie [†] Gr.
and that cannot cease from sin; be- ^{an adul-}
guiling unstable souls: an heart they ^{teress.}
have exercised with covetous pra-
ctises; cursed children:

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of ^c Balaam the son of Bo- ^c Num.
for, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; 22.23.
Jude 11.

16 But was rebuked for his iniquitie: the dumb ass speaking with mans voice, forbad the madness of the prophet.

17 ^c These are wells without wa- ^c Jude
ter, clouds that are carried with a 12,13.
tempest, to whom the mist of dark-
ness is reserved for ever.

18 For

Or, for a little, or a while, as some read. 8. John 8.34. Rom. 6.16. Matth. 12.45. Heb. 6.4.

Prov. 26.11.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanitie, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome; the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and, The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

He assureth them of the certaintie of Christ's coming to judgement, against those scorers who dispute against it; 8 warning the godly for the long patience of God, to hasten their repentance. 10 He describeth also the manner how the world shall be destroyed: 11 exhorting them from the expectation thereof, to all holiness of life; 15 and again, to think the patience of God to tend to their salvation, as Paul wrote to them in his epistles.

THis second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things conti-

nue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness,

12 Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless:

15 And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you;

1 Tim. 4.1. 2 Tim. 3.1. Jude 18.

Gr. consisting.

90.4.

8 & 33.11.

1 Tim. 2.4.

1 Thes. 5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

5.2.

272

* Matth.
27.5.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glorie, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glorie, ^c This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophesie; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, untill the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

* 2 Tim.

3.16.

|| Or,
at any
time.

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

21 For ^d the prophesie came not || in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the impietie and punishment both of them and their followers; 7 from which the godly shall be delivered, as Lot was out of Sodom: 10 and more fully describeth the manners of those profane and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better known, and avoided.

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

|| Or,
lascivi-
ous ways,
as some
copies
read.

2 And many shall follow their || pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgement now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

* Job 4.

18.

Jude 6.

4 For if God spared not ^a the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, & delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement;

* Gen.

7.1.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved ^b Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

6 And ^c turning the cities of So- ^c Gen.
dom and Gomorrha into ashes, con- 19.24.
demned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthie conversation of the wicked;

8 (For that righteous man dwel-
ling among them, in seeing and hear-
ing, vexed his righteous soul from
day to day, with their unlawfull
deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deli-
ver the godly out of temptations, and
to reserve the unjust unto the day of
judgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walk
after the flesh in the lust of unclean-
ness, and despise || government: || Or,
^d Presumptuous are they, self-willed, ^{dominion}
they are not afraid to speak evil of ^d Jude 8.
dignities:

11 Whereas angels which are
greater in power and might, bring
not railing accusation || against them || Some
before the Lord. read,

12 But these, as natural brute
beasts, made to be taken and destroy-
ed, speak evil of the things that they ^{against}
understand not, and shall utterly pe- ^{them-}
rish in their own corruptions. selves.

13 And shall receive the reward
of unrighteousness, as they that
count it pleasure to riot in the day-
time: spots they are and blemishes,
sporting themselves with their own
deceivings, while they feast with
you;

14 Having eyes full of [†] adulterie [†] Gr.
and that cannot cease from sin; be- ^{an adul-}
guiling unstable souls: an heart they ^{teress.}
have exercised with covetous pra-
ctises; cursed children:

15 Which have forsaken the right
way, and are gone astray, following
the way of ^e Balaam the son of Bo- ^e Num.
for, who loved the wages of unright- 22.23.
eousness; Jude 11.

16 But was rebuked for his ini-
quitie: the dumb ass speaking with
mans voice, forbad the madness of
the prophet.

17 ^f These are wells without wa- ^f Jude
ter, clouds that are carried with a 12,13.
tempest, to whom the mist of dark-
ness is reserved for ever.

18 For

Or, for a little, or a while, as some read. John 8.34. Rom. 6.16. Matth. 13.45. Heb. 6.4.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanitie, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome; the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and, The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

He assureth them of the certaintie of Christ's coming to judgement, against those scorner who dispute against it; 8 warning the godly for the long patience of God, to hasten their repentance. 10 He describeth also the manner how the world shall be destroyed: 11 exhorting them from the expectation thereof, to all holiness of life; 15 and again, to think the patience of God to tend to their salvation, as Paul wrote to them in his epistles.

THis second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things conti-

nue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness,

12 Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless:

15 And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written unto you;

16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things: in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing

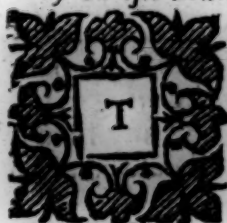
ye know these things before, beware lest ye also being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

The first epistle general of JOHN.

CHAP. I.

- 1 He describeth the person of Christ, in whom we have eternal life by a communion with God: 5 to which we must adjoyn holiness of life, to testify the truth of that our communion and profession of faith, as also to assure us of the forgiveness of our sins by Christ's death.



THAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life;

2 (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that ^a God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth:

7 But if we walk in the light as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and ^b the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive our selves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confess our sins, he is

faithfull, and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

- 1 He comforteth them against the sins of infirmity. 3 Rightly to know God, is to keep his commandments, 9 to love our brethren, 15 and not to love the world. 18 We must beware of seducers: 20 from whose deceits the godly are safe preserved by perseverance in faith and holiness of life.

MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, ^a we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus ^{Heb.} Christ the righteous. ^{2. 24.}

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours onely, but also for the sins of the whole world.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

7 Brethren, ^b I write no new ^{2 John} commandment unto you, but an old ^{5.} commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.

^a John
8.12.

^b Hebr.
9.14.
Rev. 1.5.
^c 1 King.
8.46.
Prov.
20.9.
Eccles
7.20.

Chap.
3.14.
Gr.
scandal.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even untill now.

10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his names sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning, shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.

26 These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But, as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him; that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness, is born of him.

|| Or, it.

|| Or, know ye.

CHAP. III.

1 He declareth the singular love of God towards us, in making us his sons: 3 who therefore ought obediently to keep his commandments, 11 as also brotherly to love one another.

BEhold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested

276 manifested ^a to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

6, &c. 6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: He that doeth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous:

• John 8.44. 8 ^b He that committeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: Whosoever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

¶ Or, commandment. 11 For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, ^c that we should love one another.

12 Not as ^d Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

• Luke 3.11. 17 But ^e who so hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

† Gr. persuade 19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then* have we confidence towards God.

22 And ^f whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And ^g this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And ^h he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IV.

1 He warneth them not to believe all teachers who boast of the Spirit, but to try them by the rules of the catholic faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth to brotherly love.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: ^a he that knoweth God, heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love.

9 ^b In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son

Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

1 Tim. 6.16. 12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen and do testify, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

† Gr. love with us. 17 Herein is † our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are we in this world.

18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him; because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

John 13.34. and 15.12. 21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

CHAP. V.

He that loveth God, loveth his children, and keepeth his commandments; 3 which to the faithfull are light, and not grievous. 9 Jesus is the Son of God, able to save us, 14 and to hear our prayers, which we make for our selves, and for others.

WHosoever beleeveth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is olcogotten of him.

277 2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. Math. 11.30.

4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that beleeveth that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came by water and bloud, even Jesus Christ; not by water onely, but by water and bloud: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the bloud: and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God, which he hath testified of his Son.

10 He that beleeveth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself: he that beleeveth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeveth not the record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life: and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that beleeve on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may beleeve on the name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask in his will, he concern- ing him.

15 And if we know that he hear Chap. 3.22. us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinning

sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death.

• Matth. 12.31. • There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

Mark 3.29. 17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.

18 We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

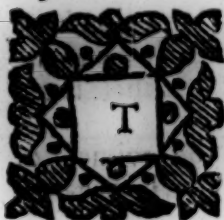
19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

The second epistle of JOHN.

He exhorteth a certain honourable matrone with her children, to persevere in Christian love and belief, 8 lest they lose the reward of their former profession; 10 and to have nothing to do with those seducers that bring not the true doctrine of Christ Jesus.



He elder unto the elect ladie, and her children, whom I love in the truth; & not I onely, but also all they that have known the truth;

2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever:

3 Grace be with you, mercie, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

• 1 John 2.7. • 5 And now I beseech thee, ladie, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to your selves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink; but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

|| Or, gained.

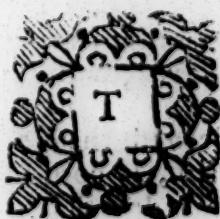
Some copies read, which ye have

gained, but that ye receive, &c.

† Cr. month mouth.

The third epistle of JOHN.

He commendeth Gaius for his piety, 5 and hospitalitie 7 to true preachers; 9 complaining of the unkinde dealing of ambitious Diotrephes on the contrary side, 11 whose evil example is not to be followed: 12 and giveth special testimony to the good report of Demetrius.



HE elder unto the welbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

|| Or, truly.

2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

|| Or, pray.

3 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers;

6 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

7 Because that for his names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God: but he that doeth evil, hath not seen God.

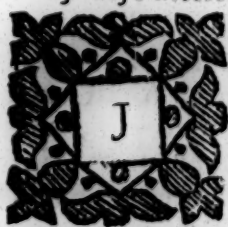
12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee:

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face. † Gr. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name. month to month.

The general epistle of *J U D E*.

He exhorteth them to be constant in the profession of the faith. 4 False teachers are crept in to seduce them; for whose damnable doctrine and manners, horrible punishment is prepared: 20 whereas the godly by the assistance of the holy Spirit, and prayers to God, may persevere, and grow in grace, and keep themselves, and recover others out of the snares of those deceivers.



Jude the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercie unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation: it was needfull for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of

our God into lasciviousness, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that beleevd not. Num. 14. 37.

6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgement of the great day. 2 Pet. 2. 4. Or, principallie.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. Gen. 19. 24. † Gr. other.

8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. 2 Pet. 2. 10, 11.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the bodie of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. Zech. 3. 2.

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what

380 what they know naturally, as brute beasts; in those things they corrupt themselves. in admiration because of advantage.

11 Wo unto them; for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gain-saying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charitie, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having mens persons

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodlie lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.

20 But ye beloved, building up yourselves on your most holie faith, praying in the holie Ghost,

21 Keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glorie with exceeding joy,

25 To the onely wise God our Saviour, be glorie and majestie, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

The Revelation of S. JOHN the Divine.

CHAP. I.

4 John writeth his revelation to the seven churches of Asia, signified by the seven golden candlesticks. 7 The coming of Christ. 14 His glorious power and majestie.

THE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimonie of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophesie, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.



John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be unto you, and peace, from him

which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven spirits which are before his throne;

5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithfull witness, and the first-begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glorie and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

7 Behold, he cometh with clouds; and

¹ Zech. 12, 10. and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen.

¹ Chap. 21, 6. & 22, 13. ⁸ I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

⁹ I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

¹⁰ I was in the Spirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice, as of a trumper,

¹¹ Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

¹² And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks;

¹³ And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, *one* like unto the Son of man ^b clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

¹⁴ His head and his hairs were white like wooll as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire;

¹⁵ And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters

¹⁶ And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

¹⁷ And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; ¹ I am the first and the last:

¹⁸ *I am* he that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

¹⁹ Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter,

²⁰ The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven churches.

CHAP. II.

What is commanded to be written to the angels (that is, the ministers) of the churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos, 18 Thyatira: and what is commended, or found wanting in them.

U Nto the angel of the church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

² I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not; and hast found them liars:

³ And hast born, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

⁴ Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

⁵ Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent; and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

⁶ But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

⁷ He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

⁸ And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive;

⁹ I know thy works, and tribulation, and povertie, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, & are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

¹⁰ Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall

282 shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write, These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges,

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *even* where Satans seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, *even* in those days wherein Antipas *was* my faithfull martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

• Num. 25. 14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, & will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brasse;

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last *to be* more then the first.

• 1 King. 16. 31. 20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezabel, which calleth her self a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adulterie with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which ^{Psalm} searcheth the reins and hearts: and I ^{Jer. 11.} will give unto every one of you according to your works. ^{20. and 17. 10.}

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, As many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have *already*, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (^{Psalm} And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers) ^{2. 9.} even as I received of my Father.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

2 The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved, 3 exhorted to repent, and threatened if he do not repent. 8 The angel of the church of Philadelphia 10 is approved for his diligence and patience. 15 The angel of Laodicea is rebuked, for being neither hot nor cold, 19 and admonished to be more zealous. 20 Christ standeth at the door, and knocketh.

And unto the angel of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchfull, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ^{1 Thess.} readie to die: for I have not found ^{5. 2.} thy works perfect before God. ^{2 Pet.}

3 Remember therefore how thou ^{3. 10.} hast received and heard, and hold ^{Chap.} fast and repent. ^{16. 15.} If therefore thou shalt

thalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthie.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the ^b book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holie, he that is true, he that hath ^c the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth:

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church || of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 ^d As manie as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: If any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. IV.

2 *John seeth the throne of God in heaven. 4 The four and twenty elders. 6 The four beasts full of eyes before and behinde. 10 The elders lay down their crowns, and worship him that sat on the throne.*

After this I looked, and behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbowe round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were four and twentie seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twentie

K k k k 3

elders

^b Phil.
4. 3.
Chap.
20. 12.

^c Isa. 22.
22.

Or, in
Laodi-
ca.

282 shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write, These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges,

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *even* where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas *was* my faithfull martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of ^a Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, & will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brass;

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last *to be* more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman ^b Jezabel, which calleth her self a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adulterie with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that ^c I am he which ^d Psal. searcheth the reins and hearts: and I ^e 7. 9. will give unto every one of you according to your works. ^f Jer. 11. 20. and

24 But unto you I say, and unto ^g 17. 10. the rest in Thyatira, As many as have not this doctrine; and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have *already*, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (^h And he shall rule them with ⁱ Psal. a rod of iron: as the vessels of a pot- ^j 2. 9. ter shall they be broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

2 The angel of the church of Sardis is reprov'd, 3 exhorted to repent, and threatened if he do not repent. 8 The angel of the church of Philadelphia 10 is approved for his diligence and patience. 15 The angel of Laodicea is rebuked, for being neither hot nor cold, 19 and admonished to be more zealous. 20 Christ standeth at the door, and knocketh.

ANd unto the angel of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchfull, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ^k 1 Thel. readie to die: for I have not found ^l 5. 2. thy works perfect before God. ^m 2 Pet.

3 Remember therefore how thou ⁿ 3. 10. hast received and heard, and hold Chap. fast and repent. ^o If therefore thou ^p 16. 15. shalt

• Num.
25.

• 1 King.
26. 31.

thalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthie.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the ^b book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holie, he that is true, he that hath ^c the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth:

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church || of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.

19 ^d As manie as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: If any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. IV.

2 John seeth the throne of God in heaven. 4 The four and twenty elders. 6 The four beasts full of eyes before and behinde. 10 The elders lay down their crowns, and worship him that sat on the throne.

After this I looked, and behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbowe round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were four and twentie seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twentie

K k k k 3

elders

^b Phil.
4. 3.
Chap.
20. 12.

^c Isa. 22.
22.

^d Prov.
3. 11.
Hebr.
12. 5.

hel.

Or, in
Laodi-
ca.

5.

284

elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voices: And *there were* seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

6 And before the throne *there was* a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast *was* like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast *was* like a flying eagle.

† Gr.
they have
no rest.
‡ Isa. 6. 3.

8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him, and *they were* full of eyes within; and † they rest not day and night, saying, ^b Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

¶ Chap.
3. 12.

11 ^b Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glorie, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

CHAP. V.

1 The book sealed with seven seals: 9 which *only* the Lamb that was slain is worthy to open. 12 Therefore the elders praise him, 9 and confess that he redeemed them with his blood.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within and on the back-side, sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthie to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

4 And I wept much because no

man was found worthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, ^a the Li-^a Gen. on of the tribe of Juda, the root of 49. 9. David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four beasts, and four *and* twentie elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, & golden vials full of ^{||}odours, ^{||} Or, incense.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

10 ^b And hast made us unto our ^b 1 Pet. God kings and priests: and we shall 2. 9. reign on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of manie angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders: and the number of them was

^c ten thousand times ten thousand, ^c Dan. and thousands of thousands; 7. 10.

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glorie, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and* twentie elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon; containing a prophecie to the end of the world.

And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bowe, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come, and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, || A measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barley for a peny; and see thou hurt not the oyl and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse; and his name that sat on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was given || unto them, over the fourth part of the earth to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they held.

10 And they cryed with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was

said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, untill their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as bloud;

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her || untimely figs when she || Or, is shaken of a mightie winde: ^{green}

14 ^a And the heaven departed as ^{figs} a scrowl when it is rolled together; ^{Isa.} and every mountain and island were ^{34. 4.} moved out of their places:

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mightie men, and everie bond-man, and everie free-man ^b hid themselves in ^{Isa. 2.} the dens, and in the rocks of the ^{19.} mountains;

16 ^c And said to the mountains and ^{Hof.} rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from ^{10. 8.} the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the ^{23. 30.} Lamb:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 An angel sealeth the servants of God in their foreheads. 4 The number of them that were sealed: of the tribes of Israel a certain number, 9 of all other nations an innumerable multitude, which stand before the throne, clad in white robes, and palms in their hands. 14 Their robes were washed in the blood of the Lamb.

And after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the winde should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we

|| The word chanix signifieth a measure containing one wine-quart, and the twelfth part of a quart. || Or, to him.

286 have sealed the servants of our
• Ezek. God in their foreheads.

9. 4. 4 And I heard the number of them
which were sealed: *and there were*
sealed; an hundred and fourtie and
four thousand, of all the tribes of the
children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Juda were sealed
twelve thousand. Of the tribe of
Reuben were sealed twelve thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Gad were seal-
ed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed
twelve thousand. Of the tribe of
Nephthalim were sealed twelve
thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses
were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were
sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe
of Levi were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed
twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were
sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe
of Joseph were sealed twelve thou-
sand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were
sealed twelve thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a
great multitude, which no man could
number, of all nations, and kindreds,
and people, and tongues, stood be-
fore the throne, & before the Lamb,
clothed with white robes, and palms
in their hands;

10 And cried with a loud voice,
saying, Salvation to our God which
sitteth upon the throne, and unto the
Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round
about the throne, and about the el-
ders, and the four beasts, and fell
before the throne on their faces, and
worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and
glorie, and wisdom, and thanksgi-
ving, and honour, and power, and
might be unto our God for ever and
ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answer-
ed, saying unto me, What are these
which are arrayed in white robes?
and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou
knowest. And he said to me, These
are they which came out of great
tribulation, and have washed their
robes, and made them white in the
blood of the Lamb,

15 Therefore are they before the
throne of God, and serve him day
and night in his temple: and he that
sitteth on the throne shall dwell a-
mong them. ^{b Chap. 21. 3.}

16 They shall hunger no more, ^{c Isa. 49. 10.}
neither thirst any more, neither
shall the sun light on them, nor any
heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the
midst of the throne, shall feed them,
and shall lead them unto living ^{d Isa. 25. 8.}
fountains of waters: and God shall
wipe away all tears from their ^{Chap. 21. 4,}
eyes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seal,
2 seven angels had seven trumpets
given them. 6 Four of them sound
their trumpets, and great plagues fol-
low. 3 Another angel putteth incense
to the prayers of the saints on the
golden altar.

And when he had opened the
seventh seal, there was silence
in heaven about the space of half an
hour.

2 And I saw the seven angels
which stood before God; and to them
were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and
stood at the altar, having a golden
censer; and there was given unto
him much incense, that he should
offer it with the prayers of all
saints upon the golden altar, which
was before the throne. <sup>Or, add to the pray-
ers.</sup>

4 And the smoke of the incense
which came with the prayers of the
saints, ascended up before God, out
of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the censer,
and filled it with fire of the altar,
and cast it into the earth: and there
were voices, and thundrings, and
lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels which
had the seven trumpets, prepared
themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and
there followed hail and fire mingled
with blood, and they were cast up-
on the earth: and the third part of
trees were burnt up, and all green
grafs was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded,
and as it were a great mountain
burning with fire was cast into the
sea

sea; and the third part of the sea became blood:

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

CHAP. IX.

1 At the sounding of the fifth angel, a star falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomless pit.

2 He openeth the pit, and there come forth locusts like scorpions, 12 The first wo past. 13 The sixth trumpet soundeth. 14 Four angels are let loose, that were bound.

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

2 And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth; and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass

of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five moneths: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not finde it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. *2. 19. Chap. 6. 16.*

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battel; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

9 And they had breast-plates, as it were breast-plates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battel.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

12 One wo is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a moneth, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the armie of the horse-men were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them,

|| That is to say, a destroyer.

|| Or, at.

288 them, having breast-plates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; & out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, ^b and idols of gold and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

A mighty strong angel appeareth with a book open in his hand. 6 He sweareth by him that liveth for ever, that there shall be no more time. 9 John is commanded to take and eat the book.

And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbowe was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, ^a lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that

therein are, and the sea and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

7 But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystrie of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, ^b Take ^b Ezek. it, and eat it up; and it shall make ^{2. 8. &} thy bellie bitter, but it shall be in thy ^{3. 3.} mouth sweet as honey.

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP. XI.

3 The two witnesses prophesie. 6 They have power to shut heaven, that it rain not. 7 The beast shall fight against them, and kill them. 8 They lie unburied, 11 and after three days and an half rise again. 14 The second wo is past. 15 The seventh trumpet soundeth.

And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple [†] leave out, and measure [†] Gr. cast out. it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy citie shall they tread under foot fourtie and two ^{||} Or, moneths. I will

3 And ^{||} I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and ^{two wit-} threescore days clothed in sack- ^{nesses} cloth. that they

4 These are the ^a two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. ^{may pro-} phesie.

5 And if any man will hurt them, ^a Zech. 3, 11, 14. fire

^b Psal.

115. 4.

and 135.

15.

^a Dan.

12. 7.

ders which sat before God on their 289
seats, sell upon their faces, and wor-
shipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee thanks,
O Lord God almighty, which art,
and wast, and art to come; because
thou hast taken to thee thy great
power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry,
and thy wrath is come, and the time
of the dead that they should be
judged, and that thou shouldest give
reward unto thy servants the pro-
phets, and to the saints, and them
that fear thy name, small and great,
and shouldest destroy them which
|| destroy the earth.

|| Or,

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

1 A woman clothed with the sun tra-
uaileth. 4 The great red dragon stand-
eth before her, ready to devour her
childe. 6 When she was delivered she
fleeth into the wilderness. 7 Micha-
el and his angels fight with the dra-
gon, and prevail. 13 The dragon
being cast down into the earth, perse-
cuteth the woman.

ANd there appeared a great || won- || Or-
der in heaven, a woman clothed *figne.*
with the sun, and the moon under her
feet, and upon her head a crown of
twelve stars:

2 And she being with childe, cry-
ed, travailling in birth, and pained
to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another
|| wonder in heaven, and behold, a || Or,
great red dragon, having seven *signe*.
heads, and ten horns, and seven
crowns upon his heads.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her childe as soon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man-
childe who was to rule all nations
with a rod of iron: and her childe
was caught up unto God, and to his
throne.

6 And

16 And the four and twentie el-

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

7 And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels:

8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-child.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place: where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman; that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed,

which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 A beast riseth out of the sea with seven heads and ten horns, to whom the dragon giveth his power. 11 Another beast cometh up out of the earth; 14 causeth an image to be made of the former beast, 15 and that men should worship it, 16 and receive his mark.

And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, & upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

|| Or, names.

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were † wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

† Gr. slain.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies; and power was given unto him || to continue forty and two months.

|| Or, to make war.

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity: He that killeth with the sword, must be killed.

• Matth. 26. 52.

led

led with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of these miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give [†] life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, [†] to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIV.

1 The Lamb standing on mount Sion with his company; 6 an angel preacheth the gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harvest of the world, and putting in of the sickle. 20 The vintage and wine-press of the wrath of God.

And I looked, and lo, a Lamb, stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters,

and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these [†] were redeemed from among [†] Gr. men, being the first fruits unto God, were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel lie in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, & tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgement is come: and ^a Psal. worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea and the fountains of waters. ^{146.5,6.} Acts 14. 15.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, ^b Babylon is fallen, is ^b Isa. fallen, that great city, because she ^{21.9.} made all nations drink of the wine ^{Jer. 51.8.} of the wrath of her fornication. Chap.

9 And the third angel followed ^{18.2.} them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast & his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of the Lamb.

292

commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

¶ Or,
from
hence-
forth
saith the
Spirit,
Tea.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat, like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

¶ Joel
3.13.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

¶ Or,
dried.

16 And he that sat on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle & gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great wine-press of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-press, even unto the horse-bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The seven angels with the seven last plagues. 3 The song of them that overcome the beast: 7 The seven vials full of the wrath of God.

¶ And I saw another signe in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, in them is filled up the wrath of God.

¶ And I saw as it were a sea of glass, mingled with fire; and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image,

and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing * the song of * Exod. Moses the servant of God, and 15.1. the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God almighty; * just and * Psal. true are thy ways, thou King of 145.17. saints.

4 * Who shall not fear thee, O * Jer. Lord, and glorifie thy name? for 10.7. thou onely art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The angels pour out their vials full of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ cometh as a thief. Blessed are they that watch.

¶ And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your ways and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his

his vial upon the rivers & fountains of waters; and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were || scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not, to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great day of God almighty.

15 Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked and they see his shame.

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple

of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake & so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3, 4 A woman arrayed in purple and scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth upon the beast, which is great Babylon the mother of all abominations. 9 The interpretation of the seven heads, 12 and the ten horns. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lamb.

And there came one of the seven Angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgement of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet-coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arrayed in purple, and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stone and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And

cod.

sal.

17.

er.

7.

Or, burned.

Matth. 24.43. Chap. 3.3.

Gr. gilded.

Or, fornications.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the

beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her.

9 The kings of the earth, 11 with the merchants and mariners, lament over her. 20 The saints rejoyce for the judgements of God upon her.

And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, ^a Babylon the ^a Chap. great is fallen, is fallen, and is be- 14.8. come the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. Or, power.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, ^b Come out of her ^b Jer. my people, that ye be not partakers 51.6. of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues:

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am now widow, and shall see no sorrow. Isa. 47.8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, & lived deliciously with her, ^a shall ^a Ezek. bewail her, and lament for her, 26.17. when

1 Tim. 6.15. Chap. 12.16.

when they shall see the smoke of her burning,

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city: for in one hour is thy judgement come.

Ezek.
27.27.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merchandise any more:

Or,
sweet.

12 The merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,

Or,
bodies.

13 And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyl, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls:

17 For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

18 And cryed when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costliness: for in one hour is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and pro-

phets, for God hath avenged you on her. 195

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy forceries were all nations deceived:

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God is praised in heaven for judging the great whore, and avenging the blood of his saints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb. 10 The angel will not be worshipped. 17 The fowls called to the great slaughter.

And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgements; for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen; Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of

296 of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

^a Matth. 22.2. And he saith unto me, Write, ^a Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

^b Chap. 22.9. And I fell at his feet to worship him: And he said unto me, ^b See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie.

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called faithful and true, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself:

^c Isa. 63.2. 13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood: and his name is called, The Word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

^d Chap. 17.14. 16 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather your selves together unto the supper of the great God;

18 That ye may eat the flesh of

kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mightie men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand years.

5 The first resurrection: 6 They blessed that have part therein. 7 Satan let loose again. 8 Gog and Magog. 10 The devil cast into the lake of fire and brimstone. 12 The last and general resurrection.

And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand.

1 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that, he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their fore-heads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

5 But

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again untill the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four quarters of the earth, ^a Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battel: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved citie: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; ^b and the books were opened: and another ^c book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: This is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth.

10 The heavenly Jerusalem, with a

full description thereof. 23 She needeth no sun, the glorie of God is her light. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches unto her.

And I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

4 ^b And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

5 And he that sat upon the throne, said, ^c Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithfull.

6 And he said unto me, It is done. ^d I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: ^e I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and forcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;

^a Ezek.
38.2. &
39.1.

^b Dan.
7.10.
^c Chap.
3.5.

Or,
the grave

297

^a Isa.
65.17.
² Per.
3.13.

^b Chap.
7.17.

^c Isa.
43.19.
² Cor.

^d Chap.
1.8. &
22.13.
^e Isa.
55.1.

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east, three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and fourty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper; and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedonie, the fourth, an emerald;

20 The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it.

23 ^f Isa. 60. 19. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

24 ^s Isa. 60. 3. And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the

light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

25 ^h And the gates of it shall not ^h Isa. 60. 11. be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, ¹ Phil. 4 3. neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lambs ^{Chap. 3. 5. and 20. 12.} book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The river of the water of life. 2 The tree of life. 3 The light of the city of God is himself. 4 The angel will not be worshipped. 5 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads.

5 ^a And there shall be no night ^a Chap. 21. 23. there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then

^b Chap. 9 Then saith he unto me, ^b See 19. 10. *thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God.*

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophesie of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

^c Rom. 12. 6. 12 And behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, ^c to give every man according as his work shall be.

^d Chap. 1. 8. and 21. 6. 13 I am Alpha and Omega, ^d the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

^e Isa. 41. 4. and 44. 6. 14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without are dogs, and forcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel 299 to testifie unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the off-spring of David, and the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the bride, say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. ^e And let him that is athirst, come: And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. ^e Isa. 55. 1.

18 For I testifie unto every man that heareth the words of the prophesie of this book, ^f If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: ^f Deut. 4. 2. Prov. 30. 6.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophesie, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy citie, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.





(2)

THE
WHOLE BOOK
OF
PSALMS:

Collected into English metre

BY THOMAS STERNHOLD,

JOHN HOPKINS,

and others.

Set forth and allowed to be sung in all churches, of all the people together, before and after morning and evening prayer, and also before and after sermons: and moreover in private houses, for their godly solace and comfort, laying apart all ungodly songs and ballads, which tend onely to the nourishment of vice, and corrupting of youth.

JAMES 5.13.

If any be afflicted, let him pray: and if any be merry, let him sing psalms.

COLOSSIANS. 3.16.

Let the word of God dwell plenteously in you, in all wisdom, teaching and exhorting one another in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs, singing unto the Lord in your hearts.

CAMBRIDGE,
Printed by John Field, Printer to the
Universitie. Ann. Dom. 1661.

A.C.12

THE
WHEEL
OF
FORTUNE
BY
J. H. WATSON

The Psalms of *DAVID* in metre.

Beatus vir. Psal. i. T. S.

- T**He man is blest that hath not bent,
to wicked read his ear :
Nor led his life as sinners do,
nor sat in scorn's chair,
2 But in the law of God the Lord
doth set his whole delight :
And in that law doth exercise
himself both day and night.
3 He shall be like the tree that grows
fast by the rivers side,
Which bringeth forth most pleasant fruit
in her due time and tide.
Whose leaf shall never fade nor fall,
but flourish still and stand :
Even so all things shall prosper well,
that this man takes in hand.
4 So shall not the ungodly men,
they shall be nothing so :
But as the dust which from the earth
the winde drives to and fro.
5 Therefore shall not the wicked men
in judgement stand upright :
Nor yet the sinners with the just
shall come in place or sight.
6 For why ? the way of godly men
unto the Lord is known :
And eke the way of wicked men
shall quite be overthrown.

Quare fremuerunt. Psal. ii. T. S.

- W**Hy did the Gentiles tumult raise ?
what rage was in their brain ?
Why did the Jewish people muse,
seeing all is but vain ?
2 The kings and rulers of the earth
conspire and are all bent
Against the Lord and Christ his Son,
which he among us sent.
3 Shall we be bound to them, say they ?
let all their bonds be broke :
And of their doctrine and their law
let us reject the yoke.
4 But he that in the heaven dwells,
their doings will deride :
And make them all as mocking-stocks,
throughout the world so wide.
5 For in his wrath the Lord will say
to them upon a day :
And in his fury trouble them,
and then the Lord will say,
6 I have anointed him my king
upon my holy hill :

I will therefore (Lord) preach thy law,
and eke declare thy will.

- 7 For in this wise the Lord himself
did say to me I wor,
Thou art my dear and onely Son,
to day I thee begor.
8 All people I will give to thee,
as heirs at thy request :
The ends and coasts of all the earth
by thee shall be possesst.
9 Thou shalt them bruise even with a mace,
as men under foot trod :
And as the potters sheards, shalt break
them with an iron rod.
10 Now ye, O kings and rulers all,
be wise therefore and learn'd,
By whom the matters of the world
be judged and discern'd.
11 See that ye serve the Lord above
in trembling and in fear :
See that with reverence ye rejoyce
to him in like manner.
12 See that ye kiss and eke embrace
his blessed Son, I say,
Lest in his wrath ye suddenly
perish in the mid-way.
13 If once his wrath never so small
shall kindle in his breast :
O then all they that trust in Christ
shall happy be and blest.

Domine quid. Psal. iii. T. S.

- O** Lord, how are my foes increast,
which vex me more and more ?
2 They kill my heart when as they say,
God can him not restore.
3 But thou, O Lord, art my defence,
when I am hard bestead :
My worship and mine honour both,
and thou hold'st up my head.
4 Then with my voice upon the Lord
I did both call and cry :
And he out of his holy hill
did hear me by and by.
5 I laid me down, and quietly
I slept and rose again :
For why ? I know assuredly
the Lord will me sustain.
6 If ten thousand had hem'd me in,
I could not be afraid :
For thou art still my Lord and God,
my Saviour and mine aid.

Rise up therefore, save me, my God,
for now to thee I call:
7 For thou hast broke the cheeks and teeth
of these wicked men all.

8 Salvation onely doth belong
to thee, O Lord above:
Thou dost bestow upon thy folk
thy blessing and thy love.

Cum inuocarem. Psal. iv. T. S.

O God that art my righteousness,
Lord hear me when I call:
Thou hast set me at libertie,
when I was bound and thrall.
2 Have mercy (Lord) therefore on me,
and grant me my request:
For unto thee unceasingly
to crie I will not rest.

3 O mortal men, how long will ye
my glory thus despise?
Why wander ye in vanity,
and follow after lies?
4 Know ye that good and godly men
the Lord doth take and chuse:
And when to him I make my plaint,
he doth me not refuse.

5 Sin not but stand in awe therefore,
examine well your heart:
And in your chamber quietly
See you your selves convert.

6 Offer to God the sacrifice
of righteousness, I say,
And look that in the living Lord
you put your trust alway.

7 The greater sort crave worldly goods,
and riches do embrace:
But, Lord, grant us thy countenance,
thy favour and thy grace.

8 For thou thereby shalt make my heart,
more joyfull and more glad,
Then they that of their corn and wine
full great increase have had.

9 In peace therefore lie down will I,
taking my rest and sleep:
For thou onely wilt me, O Lord,
alone in safetie keep.

Verba mea auribus. Psal. v. T. S.

I Ncline thine ears unto my words,
O Lord, my plaint consider:
2 And hear my voice, my King, my God,
to thee I make my prayer.
3 Hear me betime, Lord, tarry not,
for I will have respect,
My prayer early in the morn
to thee for to direct.

4 And I will trust through patience
in thee my God alone:

Thou art not pleas'd with wickedness,
and ill with thee dwells none.

5 And in thy sight shall never stand
these furious fools, O Lord:
Vain workers of iniquitie
thou hast always abhor'd.

6 The liars and the flatterers,
thou shalt destroy them than:
And God will hate the bloud-thirstie,
and the deceitfull man.

7 Therefore will I come to thine house,
trusting upon thy grace:
And reverently will worship thee
toward thine holy place.

8 Lord, lead me in thy righteousness,
for to confound my foes:
And eke the way that I shall walk
before my face disclose.

9 For in their mouths there is no truth,
their heart is foul and vain:
Their throat an open sepulchre,
their tongues doglose and fain.

10 Destroy their false conspiracies,
that they may come to nought:
Subvert them in their heaps of sin,
which have rebellion wrought.

11 But those that put their trust in thee,
let them be glad always:
And render thanks for thy defence,
and give thy name the praise.

12 For thou with favour wilt increase,
the just and righteous still:
And with thy grace, as with a shield,
defend him from all ill.

Domine, ne in furore. Psal. vi. T. S.

L Ord, in thy wrath reprove me not,
though I deserve thine ire:
Ne yet correct me in thy rage,
O Lord, I thee desire.

2 For I am weak, therefore, O Lord,
of mercy me forbear,
And heal me Lord, for why? thou know'st
my bones do quake for fear.

3 My soul is troubled very sore,
and vexed vehemently:
But, Lord, how long wilt thou delay
to cure my misery!

4 Lord, turn thee to thy wonted grace,
my silly soul up take:
O save me not for my deserts,
but for thy mercies sake.

5 For why? no man among the dead
remembereth thee one whit:
Or who shall worship thee, O Lord,
in the infernal pit?

6 So grievous is my plaint and moan,
that I wax wondrous faint :
All the night long I wash my bed
with tears of my complaint.
7 My sight is dim and waxeth old
with anguish of my heart,
For fear of those that be my foes,
and would my soul subvert.
8 But now away from me all ye
that work iniquitie :
For why ? the Lord hath heard the voice
of my complaint and cry.
9 He heard not onely the request
and prayer of my heart ;
But it received at my hands,
and took it in good part.
10 And now my foes that vexed me
the Lord will soon defame :
And suddenly confound them all,
to their rebuke and shame.

Domine Deus meus. Psal. vii. T.S.

O Lord my God, I put my trust
and confidence in thee :
Save me from them that me pursue,
and eke deliver me.
2 Lest like a lion he me tear
and rend in pieces small,
While there is none to succour me
and rid me out of thrall.
3 O Lord my God, if I have done
the thing that is not right,
Or else if I be found in fault,
or guilty in thy sight :
4 Or to my friend rewarded ill,
or left him in distress
Which me pursu'd most cruelly,
and hated me causeless :
5 Then let my foes pursue my soul,
and eke my life down thrust
Unto the earth, and also lay
mine honour in the dust.
6 Start up, O Lord, now in thy wrath,
and put my foes to pain
Perform the kingdome promised
to me which wrong sustain.
7 Then shall great nations come to thee,
and know thee by this thing,
If thou declare for love of them,
thy self as Lord and King.
8 And as thou art of all men judge,
O Lord, now judge thou me
According to my righteousness,
and mine integritie.

The second part.

9 Lord, cease the hate of wicked men,
and be the just mans guide :

10 By whom the secrets of all hearts
are searched and descride.
11 I take my help to come of God,
in all my pain and smart,
That doth preserve all those that be
of pure and perfect heart.
12 The just man and the wicked both
God judgeth by his power:
So that he feels his mighty hand
even every day and hour.
13 Except he change his minde, I die ;
for even as he should smite,
He whets his sword, his bowe he bends
aiming where he may hit :
14 And doth prepare his mortal darts,
his arrows keen and sharp,
For them that do me persecute,
whiles he doth mischief warp.
15 But lo, though he in travail be
of his devilish forecast,
And of his mischief once conceiv'd,
yet brings forth nought at last.
16 He digs a ditch and delves it deep,
in hope to hurt his brother:
But he shall fall into the pit
that he digg'd up for other.
17 Thus wrong returneth to the hurt
of him in whom it bred,
And all the mischief that he wrought
shall fall upon his head.
18 I will give thanks to God therefore
that judgeth righteously.
And with my song will praise the name
of him that is most high.

Domine Deus noster. Psal. viii. T.S.

O God our Lord how wonderfull
are thy works every where,
Whose fame surmounts in dignitie
above the heavens clear !
2 Even by the mouth of sucking babes.
thou wilt confound thy foes:
For in those babes thy might is seen,
thy graces they disclose.
3 And when I see the heavens high,
the works of thine own hands;
The sun, the moon, and all the stars,
in order as they stand ?
4 What thing is man, Lord, think I then,
that thou dost him remember ?
Or what is mans posterity,
that thou dost it consider ?
5 For thou hast made him little less
then angels in degree ?
And thou hast crowned him also
with glory and dignity.

- 6 Thou hast prefer'd him to be lord
of all thy works of wonder :
And at his feet hast set all things,
that he should keep them under.
- 7 As sheep, and neat, and all beasts else
that in the fields do feed :
- 8 Fowls of the air, fish in the sea,
and all that therein breed.
- 9 Therefore must I say once again,
O God that art our Lord,
How famous and how wonderfull
are thy works through the world !

Confitebor tibi, Domine. Psal. ix. T. S.

- W**ith heart and mouth unto the Lord
will I sing laud and praise :
And speak of all thy wondrous works,
and them declare always.
- 2 I will be glad and much rejoyce
in thee, O God most high :
And make my songs extoll thy name
above the starry skie.
- 3 For that my foes are driven back
and turned unto flight :
They fall down flat and are destroy'd
by thy great power and might.
- 4 Thou hast revenged all my wrong,
my grief and all my grudge :
Thou dost with justice hear my cause,
most like a righteous judge.
- 5 Thou dost rebuke the heathen folk,
and wicked so confound,
That afterward the memory
of them cannot be found.
- 6 My foes thou hast made good dispatch,
and all their towns destroy'd :
Thou hast their fame with them defac'd,
through all the world so wide.
- 7 Know thou, that he which is above
for evermore shall reign,
And in the seat of equity
true judgement will maintain.
- 8 With justice he will keep and guide,
the world and every wight :
And so will yeeld with equity
to every man his right.
- 9 He is protectour of the poor
what time they be oppress'd :
He is in all adversitie
their refuge and their rest.
- 10 And they that know thy holy name,
therefore shall trust in thee :
For thou forsakest not their suit
in their necessity.

The second part.

- 11 Sing psalms therefore unto the Lord
that dwells in Sion hill:

- Publish among all nations
his noble acts and will.
- 12 For he is mindfull of the bloud
of those that be oppress'd :
Forgetting not the afflicted heart
that seeks to him for rest.
- 13 Have mercy, Lord, on me poor wretch
whose enemies still remain,
Which from the gates of death art wont
to raise me up again.
- 14 In Sion that I might set forth
thy praise with heart and voice,
And that in thy salvation, Lord,
my soul might still rejoyce.
- 15 The heathen stick fast in the pit
that they themselves prepar'd,
And in the net that they did set
their own feet fast are snar'd.
- 16 God shews his judgements which were good
for every man to mark,
When as ye see the wicked man
lie trapt in his own wark.
- 17 The wicked and deceitfull men
go down to hell for ever,
And all the people of the world,
that will not God remember.
- 18 But sure the Lord will not forget
the poor mans grief and pain :
The patient people never look
for help of God in vain.
- 19 O Lord arise, lest men prevail
that be of worldly might :
And let the heathen folk receive
their judgement in thy sight.
- 20 Lord strike such terrour, fear, and dread
into the hearts of them,
That they may know assuredly
they be but mortal men.

Ut quid, Domine. Psal. x. T. S.

- W**hat is the cause that thou, O Lord,
art now so far from thine,
And keepest close thy countenance
from us this troublous time ?
- 2 The poor do perish by the proud
and wicked mens desire :
Let them be taken in the craft
that they themselves conspire.
- 3 For in the lust of his own heart
th' ungodly doth delight :
So doth the wicked praise himself,
and doth the Lord despight.
- 4 He is so proud that right and wrong
he setteth all apart :
Nay, nay, there is no God, saith he,
for thus he thinks in heart.

- Because his ways do prosper still,
he doth thy laws neglect,
And with a blast doth puff against
such as would him correct.
- 6 Tush, tush, saith he, I have no dread,
lest mine estate should change:
And why? for all adversitie
to him is very strange.
- 7 His mouth is full of cursedness,
of fraud, deceit, and guile:
Under his tongue doth mischief sit,
and travail all the while.
- 8 He lieth hid in ways and holes
to slay the innocent:
Against the poor that pass him by
his cruel eyes are bent.
- 9 And like a lion privily
lies lurking in his den,
If he may snare them in his net,
to spoil poor simple men.
- 10 And for the nonce full craftily
he croucheth down, I say:
- 11 So are great heaps of poor men made
by his strong power, his prey.

The second part.

- 12 Tush, God forgetteth this, saith he,
therefore I may be bold:
His countenance is cast aside,
he doth it not behold.
- 13 Arise, O Lord, O God in whom
the poor mans hope doth rest:
Lift up thy hand, forget not, Lord,
the poor that be oppressed.
- 14 What blasphemy is this to thee,
Lord, dost thou not abhor it,
To hear the wicked in their heart
say, Tush thou canst not for it?
- 15 But thou seest all their wickedness,
and well dost understand
- 16 That friendless and poor fatherless
are left into thy hand.
- 17 Of wicked and malicious men
then break the power forever,
That they with their iniquity
may perish altogether.
- 18 The Lord shal reign for evermore
as King and God alone,
And he will chase the heathenfolk
out of the land each one.
- 19 Thou hear'st, O Lord, the poor mens plaint,
their prayers and request:
Their hearts thou wilt confirm, untill
thine eares hear be prest:
- 20 To judge the poor and fatherless,
and help them to their right;
That they may be no more oppressed
by men of worldly might.

In Domino confido. Psal. xi. T. S.

- I** Trust in God, how dare ye then
say thus my soul untill,
Flie hence as fast as any fowl,
and hide you in your hill?
- 2 Behold, the wicked bend their bowes,
and make their arrows prest
To shoot in secret, and to hurt
the sound and harmless breast.
- 3 Of worldly hope all stays were shrunk,
and clearly brought to nought:
Alas, the just and righteous man,
what evil hath he wrought?
- 4 But he that in his temple is
most holy and most high,
And in the heavens hath his seat,
of royal majestie:
- The poor and simple mans estate
considereth in his minde,
And searcheth out full narrowly
the manners of mankinde,
- 5 And with a chearfull countenance
the righteous man will use:
But in his heart he doth abhor
all such as mischief use:
- 6 And on the sinners casteth snares
as thick as any rain,
Fire and brimstone, & whirlwinds thick,
appointed for their pain.
- 7 Ye see then how a righteous God
doth righteousness embrace,
And to the just and upright men
shews forth his pleasant face.

Salvum me fac. Psal. xii. T. S.

- H**elp, Lord, for good and godly men
do perish and decay:
And faith and truth from worldly men
is parted clean away.
- 2 Whoso doth with his neighbour talk,
his tak is all but vain:
For every man bethinketh how
to flatter, lie, and feign.
- 3 But flattering and deceitfull lips,
and tongues that be so stout
To speak proud words and make great brags,
the Lord soon cuts them out.
- 4 For they say still, We will prevail,
our tongues shall us extoll:
Our tongues are ours, we ought to speak;
what Lord shall us controll?
- 5 But for the great complaint and crie
of poor and men oppressed,
Arise will I now saith the Lord,
and them restore to rest.
- 6 Gods word is like to silver pure,
that from the earth is tride,

And hath no lessthen seven times
in fire been purifide.

7 Now sith thy promise is to help,
Lord, keep thy promise then :

And save us now and evermore
from this ill kinde of men.

8 For now the wicked world is full
of mischiefs manifold,

When vanitie with worldly men
so highly is extold.

Usquequo Domine. Psal. xiii. T. S.

How long wilt thou forget me, Lord ?
shall I ne're be remembred ?

How long wilt thou thy visage hide,
as though thou wert offended ?

2 In heart and minde how long shall I
with care tormented be ?

How long eke shall my deadly foes
thus triumph over me ?

3 Behold me now, my Lord my God,
and hear me sore opprest :

Lighten mine eyes, lest that I sleep
as one by death possesse :

4 Lest that mine enemy say to me,
Behold I do prevail :

Lest they also that hate my soul,
rejoyce to see me quail.

5 But from thy mercy and goodnes
my hope shall never start :

In thy relief and saving health
right glad shall be my heart.

6 I will give thanks unto the Lord,
and praises to him sing :

Because he hath heard my request,
and granted my wishing.

Dixit insipiens. Psal. xiv. T. S.

There is no God, as foolish men
affirm in their mad mood :

Their drifts are all corrupt and vain,
not one of them doth good.

2 The Lord beheld from heaven high
the whole race of mankinde,

And saw not one that sought indeed
the living God to finde.

3 They went all wide and were corrupt,
and truly there was none

That in the world did any good :
I say there was not one.

4 Is all their judgement so far lost,
that all work mischief still,

Eating my people even as bread,
not one to seek Gods will ?

5 When they thus rage, then suddenly
great fear on them shall fall :

For God doth love the righteous men,
and will maintaine them all.

6 Ye mock the doings of the poor,
to their reproach and shame :

Because they put their trust in God,
and call upon his name.

7 But who shall give thy people health ?
and when wilt thou fulfill

Thy promise made to Israel
from out of Sion hill ?

8 Even when thou shalt restore again
such as were captive led :

Then Jacob shall therein rejoyce,
and Israel shall be glad.

Domine quis. Psal. xv. T. S.

O Lord, within thy tabernacle
who shall inhabit still ?

Or whom wilt thou receive to dwell
in thy most holy hill ?

2 The man whose life is uncorrupt,
whose works are just and straight :
Whose heart doth think the very truth,
whose tongue speaks no deceit.

3 Nor to his neighbour doth none ill
in body, goods, or name,

Nor willingly doth move false tales
which might impair the same :

4 That in his heart regardeth not
malicious wicked men :

But those that love and fear the Lord
he maketh much of them.

5 His oath and all his promises
that keepeth faithfully,
Although he make his covenant so,
that he doth lose thereby.

6 That putteth not to usury
his money and his coyn,
Ne for to hurt the innocent
doth bribe or else purloyn.

7 Whoso doth all things as you see
that here is to be done,
Shall never perish in this world,
nor in the world to come.

Conserua me. Psal. xvi. T. S.

Lord, keep me, for I trust in thee,
and do confesse indeed,

Thou art my God, and of my goods,
O Lord, thou hast no need.

2 I give my goods unto the saints
that in the world do dwell,
And namely to the faithfull flock
in vertue that excell.

3 They shall heap sorrows on their heads,
which run as they were mad,
To offer to the idol gods :
alas it is too bad.

4 As for their bloody ſacrifice
and offerings of that ſort,
I will not touch, nor yet thereof
my lips ſhall make report.

5 For why? the Lord the portion is
of mine inheritance:

And thou art he that doſt maintain
my rent, my lot, my chance.

6 The place wherein my lot did fall,
in beautie did excell:

Mine heritage aſſign'd to me
doth pleaſe me wondrous well.

7 I thank the Lord that cauſed me
to underſtand the right:
For by his means my ſecret thoughts
do teach me every night.

8 I ſet the Lord ſtill in my ſight,
and truſt him over all:
For he doth ſtand on my right hand,
therefore I ſhall not fall.

9 Wherefore my heart and tongue alſo
do both rejoyce together:

My fleſh and body reſt in hope,
when I this thing conſider.

10 Thou wilt not leave my ſoul in grave,
for, Lord, thou loveſt me:

Nor yet wilt give thy holy One
corruption for to ſee.

11 But wilt me teach the way to life;
for all treasure and ſtore

Of perfect joy are in thy face,
and power for evermore,

Exaudi Domine. Pſal. xvii. T. S.

O Lord, give ear to my juſt cauſe,
attend when I complain:

And hear the prayer that I put forth
with lips that do not ſain.

2 And let the judgement of my cauſe
proceed always from thee:

And let thine eyes behold and clear
this my ſimplicitie.

3 Thou haſt well try'd me in the night,
and yet couldſt nothing finde

That I have ſpoken with my tongue
that was not in my minde.

4 As for the works of wicked men
and paths perverſe and ill.

For love of thy moſt holy name,
I have refrained ſtill.

5 Then in thy paths that be moſt pure
ſtay me, Lord, and preſerve:

That from the way wherein I walk
my ſteps may never ſwerve.

6 For I do call to thee, O Lord,
ſurely thou wilt me aid:

Then hear my prayer, and weigh right well
the words that I have ſaid.

7 O thou the Saviour of all them
that put their truſt in thee,
Declare thy ſtrength on them that ſpurn
againſt thy majeſtie.

8 O keep me as thou wouldeſt keep
the apple of thine eye:

And under covert of thy wings
defend me ſecretly.

The ſecond part.

9 From wicked men that trouble me
and daily me annoy,

And from my foes that go about
my ſoul for to deſtroy:

10 Which wallow in their worldly wealth,
ſo full and eke ſo fat,

That in their pride they do not ſpare
to ſpeak they care not what.

11 They lie in wait where I ſhould paſs,
with craft me to confound:

And muſing miſchief in their minds,
to caſt me to the ground,

12 Much like a lion greedily
that would his prey embrace:

Or larking like a lions whelp
within ſome ſecret place.

13 Up Lord in haſte, prevent my foe,
and caſt him at thy feet:

Save thou my ſoul from the ill man,
and with thy ſword him ſmite.

14 Deliver me, Lord, by thy power
out of theſe tyrants hands:

Which now ſo long time reigned have,
and kept us in their bands.

15 I mean from worldly men to whom
all wordly goods are riſe,

That have no hope nor part of joy
but in this preſent life.

16 Thou of thy ſtore their bellies fill'ſt
with pleaſure to their minde:

Their children have enough, and leave
to theirs the reſt behinde.

17 But I ſhall with pure conſcience
behold thy gracious face:

So when I wake I ſhall be full
of thine image and grace.

Diligam te Dom. Pſal. xviii. T. S.

O God my ſtrength and fortitude,
of force I muſt love thee:

Thou art my caſtle and defence
in my neceſſity.

2 My God, my rock, in whom I truſt,
the worker of my wealth:

My refuge, buckler, and my ſhield,
the horn of all my health.

3 When I sing laud unto the Lord,
most worthy to be served,
Then from my foes I am right sure
that I shall be preserved.

4 The pangs of death did compass me,
and bound me every where :
The flowing waves of wickedness
did put me in great fear.

5 The slie and subtil snares of hell
were round about me set :
And for my death there was prepar'd
a deadly trapping net.

6 I thus beset with pain and grief,
did pray to God for grace :
And he forthwith did hear my plaint
out of his holy place.

7 Such is his power that in his wrath
he made the earth to quake,
Yea, the foundation of the mount
of Basan for to shake.

8 And from his nostrils came a smoke
when kindled was his ire :
And from his mouth came kindled coals
of hot consuming fire.

9 The Lord descended from above,
and bow'd the heavens high
And underneath his feet he cast
the darkness of the skie.

10 On cherubs and on cherubims
full royally he rode :
And on the wings of all the winds
came flying all abroad.

The second part.

11 And like a den most dark he made
his hid and secret place :
With waters black and airie clouds
environed he was.

12 But when the presence of his face
in brightness shall appear,
Then clouds consume, and in their stead
come hail and coals of fire.

13 The fierie darts and thunderbolts
disperse them here and there :
And with his often lightnings
he puts them in great fear.

14 Lord, at thy wrath and threatenings,
and at thy chiding chear,
The springs and the foundations
of all the world appear.

15 And from above the Lord sent down
to fetch me from below,
And pluckt me out of waters gear,
that would me overflow.

16 And me delivered from my foes
that would have made me thrall,
Yea from such foes as were too strong
for me to deal withall.

17 They did prevent me to oppress
in time of my great grief :
But yet the Lord was my defence,
my succour and relief.

18 He brought me forth in open place,
whereas I might be free,
And kept me safe, because he had
a favour unto me.

19 And as I was an innocent,
so did he me regard,
And to the cleanness of my hands
he gave me my reward :

20 For that I walked in his ways,
and in his paths have trod,
And have not wavered wickedly
against my Lord and God.

The third part.

21 But evermore I have respect
to his law and decree :
His statutes and commandments
I cast not out from me.

22 But pure, and clean, and uncorrupt
appear'd before his face,
And did refrain from wickedness
and sin in any case.

23 The Lord therefore will me reward,
as I have done aright :
And to the cleanness of my hands,
appearing in his sight.

24 For, Lord, with him that holy is
wilt thou be holy too,
And with the good and vertuous men
right vertuously wilt do.

25 And to the loving and eleet
thy love thou wilt reserve :
And thou wilt use the wicked men
as wicked men deserve.

26 For thou dost save the simple folk
in trouble when they lie,
And dost bring down the countenance
of them that look full high.

27 The Lord will light my candle so
that it shall shine full bright :
The Lord my God will make also
my darkness to be light.

28 For by thy help an host of men
discomfit, Lord, I shall:
By thee I scale and overleap
the strength of any wall.

29 Unspotted are the ways of God,
his word is purely true :
He is a sure defence to such
as in his faith abide.

30 For who is God except the Lord ?
for other there is none:
Or else who is omnipotent,
saying our God alone ?

The fourth part.

- 31 The God that gitderth me with strength,
is he that I do mean,
That all the ways wherein I walk
did evermore keep clean.
32 That made my feet like to the harts
in swiftnes of my pace,
And for my surety brought me forth
into an open place.
33 He did in order put my hands
to battel and to fight :
To break in sunder bars of brass
he gave mine arms the might.
34 Thou teacheſt me thy ſaving health;
thy right hand is my tower :
Thy love and familiarity
doth ſtill increaſe my power.
35 And under me thou makeſt plain
the way where I ſhould walk,
So that my feet ſhall never ſlip,
nor ſtumble at a balk.
36 And fiercely I purſue and take
my foes that me annoy'd :
And from the field do not return,
till they be all deſtroy'd.
37 So I ſuppreſs and wound my foes,
that they can riſe no more :
For at my feet they fall down flat,
I ſtrike them all ſo ſore.
38 For thou doſt gird me with thy ſtrength
to war in ſuch a wiſe,
That they be all ſcattered abroad
that up againſt me riſe.
39 Lord thou haſt put into my hands
my mortal enemies yoke :
And all my foes thou doſt divide
in ſunder with thy ſtroke.
40 They call'd for help, but none gave ear,
nor help them with relief :
Yea, to the Lord they call'd for help,
yet heard he not their grief.

The fifth part.

- 41 And ſtill like duſt before the winde
I drive them under feet,
And ſweep them out like filthy clay
that ſticketh in the ſtreet.
42 Thou keep'ſt me from ſeditious folk,
that ſtill in ſtriſe are led :
And thou doſt of the heathen folk
appoint me to be head.
43 A people ſtrange to me unknown,
and yet they ſhall me ſerve:
And at the firſt obey my word,
whereas mine own will ſerve.
44 I ſhall be irkſome to mine own,
they will not ſee my light :

- But wander wide out of the way,
and hide them out of ſight.
45 But bleſſed be the living Lord,
moſt worthy of all praiſe,
That is my rock and ſaving health :
praiſed be he always.
46 For God it is that gave me power
revenged for to be :
And with his holy word ſubdu'd
the people unto me.
47 And from my foe delivered me,
and ſet me higher then thoſe
That cruel and ungodly were,
and up againſt me roſe.
48 And for this cauſe, O Lord my God,
to thee give thanks I ſhall,
And ſing out praiſes to thy name
among the Gentiles all.
49 That gav'ſt great proſperity
unto the king, I ſay,
To David thine anointed king,
and to his ſeed for aye.

Cæli enarrant. Pſal. xix. T. S.

- T**He heavens and the firmament
do wondrously declare
The glory of God omnipotent,
his works and what they are.
2 The wondrous works of God appear
by every days ſucceſs :
The nights likewise which their race run,
the ſelf ſame thing expreſs.
3 There is no language, tongue, or ſpeech,
where their ſound is not heard :
In all the earth and coaſts thereof
their knowledge is conſerr'd.
4 In them the Lord made for the ſun
a place of great renown,
Who like a bridegroom ready trimm'd
doth from his chamber come.
5 And as a valiant champion,
who ſor to get a priſe,
With joy doth haſte to take in hand
ſome noble enterpriſe.
6 And all the ſkie from end to end
he compaſſeth about:
Nothing can hide it from his heat,
but he will finde it out.
7 How perfect is the law of God,
how is his covenant ſure,
Converting ſouls, and making wiſe
the ſimple and obſcure !
8 Juſt are the Lords commandements
and glad both heart and minde :
His precepts pure and giveth light
to eyes that be full blinde,

M m m m

9 The

9 The fear of God is excellent,
and doth endure for ever :
The judgements of the Lord are true
and righteous altogether :
10 And more to be embrac'd alway
then fined gold, I say :
The honey and the honey-comb
are not so sweet as they.

11 By them thy servant is forewarn'd
to have God in regard :
And in performance of the same
there shall be great reward.
12 But, Lord, what earthly man doth know
the errours of his life ?
Then cleanse me from my secret sins,
which are in me most rife.
13 And keep me that presumptuous sins
prevail not over me ;
And so shall I be innocent,
and great offences flee.
14 Accept my mouth and eke my heart,
my words and thoughts each one :
For my redeemer and my strength,
O Lord, thou art alone.

Exaudiat te Dom. Psal. xx. T. S.

IN trouble and adversitie
the Lord God hear thee still,
The majestie of Jacobs God
defend thee from all ill ;
2 And send thee from his holy place
his help at every need :
And so in Sion stablish thee,
and make thee strong indeed.
3 Remembring well the sacrifice
that now to him is done :
And so receive right thankfully
thy burnt-offrings each one.
4 According to thy hearts desire
the Lord grant unto thee,
And all thy counsel and device
full well perform may he.
5 We shall rejoyce when thou us sav'st,
and our banners display
Unto the Lord which thy requests
fulfilled hath alway.
6 The Lord will his anointed save,
I know well by his grace,
And send him help by his right hand,
out of his holy place.
7 In chariots some put confidence,
and some in horses trust :
But we remember God our Lord,
that keepeth promise just.
8 They fall down flat, but we do rise
and stand up stoutly,

9 Now save and help us Lord and King,
on thee when we do crie.

Domine, in virtute. Psal. xxi. T. S.

O Lord, how joyfull is the king
in thy strength and thy power
How vehemently doth he rejoyce
in thee his Saviour ?
2 For thou hast given unto him
his godly hearts desire :
To him nothing thou hast deni'd
of that he did require.
3 Thou didst prevent him with thy gifts
and blessings manifold,
And thou hast set upon his head
a crown of perfect gold.
4 And when he asked life of thee,
thereof thou mad'st him sure,
To have long life yea such a life
as ever shall endure.
5 Great is his glory by thy help,
thy benefit and aid :
Great worship and great honour both
thou hast upon him laid
6 Thou wilt give him felicitie
that never shall decay,
And with thy chearfull countenance
wilt comfort him alway.
7 For why the king doth strongly trust
in God for to prevail :
Wherefore his goodness and his grace
will not that he shall quail.
8 But let thine enemies feel thy force,
and those that thee withstand :
Finde out thy foes and let them feel
the power of thy right hand.
9 And like an oven burn them Lord,
in fierie flame and fume :
Thine anger shall destroy them all,
and fire shall them consume.
10 And thou shalt root out of the earth
their fruit that should increase :
And from the number of thy folk
their seed shall end and cease.
11 For why? much mischief did they muse
against thy holy name :
Yet did they fail, and had no power
for to perform the same.
12 But as a mark thou shalt them set
in a most open place,
And charge thy bowe-strings readily
against thine enemies face.
13 Be thou exalted, Lord, therefore
in thy strength every hour :
So shall we sing right solemnly,
praising thy mighty power.

O God my God, wherefore dost thou forsake me utterly,
And helpest not when I do make
my great complaint and cry?
To thee my God even all day long
I do both crie and call,
I cease not all the night; and yet
thou hearest not at all.

3 Even thou that in thy sanctuarie
and holy place dost dwell,
Thou art the comfort and the joy
and glorie of Israel.

4 And he in whom our fathers old
had all their hope for ever:
And when they put their trust in thee;
thou didst them aye deliver

5 They were delivered ever when
they called on thy name:
And for the faith they had in thee
they were not put to shame.

6 But I am now become a worm
more like then any man:
An out-cast whom the people scorn,
with all the spight they can.

7 All men despise as they behold
me walking on the way:
They grin, they mow, they nod their heads,
and on this wise they say,

8 This man did glory in the Lord,
his favour and his love,
Let him redeem and help him now,
his power if he will prove.

9 But, Lord, out of my mothers womb
I came by thy request:
Thou didst preserve me still in hope
while I did suck her breast.

10 I was committed from my birth
with thee to have abode:
Since I was in my mothers womb,
thou hast been e're my God.

The second part.

11 Then, Lord, depart not now from me
in this my present grief,
Since I have none to be my help,
my succour and relief.

12 So many bulls do compass me
that be full strong of head:
Yea bulls so fat as though they had
in Basan field been fed.

13 They gape upon me greedily,
as though they would me slay:
Much like a lion roaring out
and ramping for his prey.

14 But I drop down like water shed,
my joynts in sunder break,
My heart doth in my bodie melt
like wax against the heat.

15 And like a potsherd drieth my strength,
my tongue it cleaveth fast
Unto my jaws, and I am brought
to dust of death at last.

16 And many dogs do compass me;
and wicked counsel eke
Conspire against me cursedly,
they pierce my hands and feet.

17 I was tormented, so that I
might all my bones have told:
Yet still upon me they do look,
and still they me behold.

18 My garments they divided eke
in parts among them all:
And for my coat they did cast lots
to whom it might befall.

19 Therefore, I pray thee, be not far
from me at my great need:
But rather sith thou art my strength,
to help me Lord make speed.

20 And from the sword, Lord, save my soul
by thy might and thy power;
And keep my soul thy darling dear,
from dogs that would devour.

21 And from the lions mouth, that would
me all in sunder shiver,
And from the horns of unicorns,
Lord safely me deliver.

22 Then shall I to my brethren all
thy majestic record:
And in thy church shall praise the name
of thee the living Lord.

The third part.

23 All ye that fear him praise the Lord;
thou Jacob honour him:
And all ye seed of Israel
with reverence worship him.

24 For he despiseth not the poor;
he turneth not awry.
His countenance when they do call,
but granteth to their crie.

25 Among the folk that fear the Lord
I will therefore proclaim
Thy praise; and keep my promise made
for setting forth thy name.

26 The poor shall eat and be suffic'd
and those that do their deaver
To know the Lord, shall praise his name,
their hearts shall live for ever.

- 27 All coasts of th' earth shall praise the
and turn to him for grace :
The heathen folk shall worship him
before his blessed face.
- 28 The kingdome of the heathen folk
the Lord shall have therefore :
And he shall be their governour
and king for evermore.
- 29 The rich men of his goodly gifts
shall feed and taste also :
And in his presence worship him
and bow their knees full low.
- 30 And all that shall go down to dust,
of life by him shall taste :
My seed shall serve and praise the Lord
while any world shall last.
- 31 My seed shall plainly shew to them
that shall be born hereafter,
His justice and his righteousness,
and all his works of wonder.

Dominus regit me. Psal. xxiii. W. W.

- T**He Lord is onely my support,
and he that doth me feed :
How can I then lack any thing
whereof I stand in need ?
- 2 He doth me fold in coats most safe
the tender grass fast by :
And after drives me to the streams
which run most pleasantly.
- 3 And when I feel my self near lost,
then doth he me home take,
Conducting me in his right paths
even for his own names sake.
- 4 And though I were even at deaths door,
yet would I fear none ill :
For with thy rod and shepherds crook
I am comforted still.
- 5 Thou hast my table richly deckt
in despite of my foe :
Thou hast my head with balm refresht,
my cup doth overflow.
- 6 And finally while breath doth last
thy grace shall me defend :
And in the house of God will I
my life for ever spend.

Another of the same, by T. S.

- M**Y shepherd is the living Lord,
nothing therefore I need ;
In pastures fair with waters calm
he sets me forth to feed.
- 2 He did convert and glad my soul,
and brought my minde in frame
To walk in paths of righteousness,
for his most holy name.
- 3 Yea though I walk in vale of death,
yet will I fear none ill :

- Thy rod, thy staff doth comfort me,
and thou art with me still.
- 4 And in the presence of my foes
my table thou shalt spread :
Thou shalt, O Lord, fill full my cup,
and eke anoint my head.
- 5 Through all my life thy favour is
so frankly shew'd to me :
That in thy house for evermore
my dwelling place shall be.

Domini est terra. Psal. xxiv. J. H.

- T**He earth is all the Lords, with all
her store and furniture :
Yea his is all the world, and all
that therein doth endure.
- 2 For he hath fastly founded it
above the seas to stand,
And laid alow the liquid fouds,
to flow beneath the land.
- 3 For who is he, O Lord, that shall
ascend into thy hill,
Or pass into thy holy place,
there to continue still ?
- 4 Whose hands are harmles, and whose heart
no spot there doth defile :
His soul not set on vanity,
who hath not sworn to guile.
- 5 Him that is such a one, the Lord
shall place in blisfull plight,
And God his God and Saviour
shall yeeld to him his right.
- 6 This is the brood of travellers,
in seeking of his grace :
As Jacob did the Israelite,
in that time of his race.
- 7 Ye princes ope your gates, stand ope
the everlasting gate :
For there shall enter in thereby
the king of glorious state.
- 8 Who is the king of glorious state ?
the strong and mighty Lord,
The mighty Lord in battel stout,
and trial of the sword.
- 9 Ye princes ope your gates, stand ope
the everlasting gate :
For there shall enter in thereby
the king of glorious state.
- 10 Who is the king of glorious state ?
the Lord of hosts it is :
The kingdome and the royalty
of glorious state is his.

Ad te Domine. Psal. xxv. T. S.

- I**Lift my heart to thee,
my God and guide most just :
Now suffer me to take no shame,
for in thee do I trust,

Let not my foes rejoyce,
nor make a scorn of me :
And let them not be overthrown
that put their trust in thee.
But shame shall them befall
which harm them wrongfully :
Therefore thy paths, and thy right ways
unto me, Lord, descrie.
Direct me in thy truth,
and teach me, I thee pray :
Thou art my God and Saviour,
on thee I wait alway.
Thy mercies manifold
I pray thee, Lord, remember,
And eke thy pitie plentifull,
for they have been for ever.
Remember not the faults
and frailty of my youth :
Remember not how ignorant
I have been of thy truth.
Nor after my deserts
let me thy mercie finde :
But of thine own benignity,
Lord have me in thy minde.
His mercie is full sweet,
his truth a perfect guide :
Therefore the Lord will sinners teach,
and such as go aside,
The humble he will teach
his precepts for to keep :
He will direct in all his ways
the lowly and the meek.
For all the ways of God
are truth and mercy both,
To them that keep his testament,
the witness of his troth.

The second part.

Now for thy holy name,
O Lord, I thee intreat
To grant me pardon for my sin,
for it is wondrous great.
Who so doth fear the Lord
the Lord will him direct
To lead his life in such a way
as he doth best accept.
His soul shall evermore
in goodness dwell and stand :
His seed and his posterity
inherit shall the land.
All those that fear the Lord
know his secret intent :
And unto them he doth declare
his will and testament.
Mine eyes and eke my heart
to him I will advance,

That pluck'd my feet out of the snare
of sin and ignorance.
15 With mercie me behold,
to thee I make my mone :
For I am poor and desolate,
and comfortless alone.
16 The troubles of my heart
are multipli'd indeed :
Bring me out of this misery,
necessity and need.
17 Behold my poverty,
mine anguish and my pain :
Remit my sin and mine offence,
and make me clean again.
18 O Lord, behold my foes,
how they do still increase,
Pursuing me with deadly hate
that fain would live in peace.
19 Preserve and keep my soul,
and eke deliver me :
And let me not be overthrown,
because I trust in thee.
20 Let my simple pureness
me from mine enemies shend :
Because I look as one of thine,
that thou shouldst me defend.
21 Deliver, Lord, thy folk,
and send them some relief,
I mean thy chosen Israel,
from all their pain and grief.

Judica me Domine. Psal. xxvi. T. S.

Lord, be my judge, and thou shalt see
my paths be right and plain :
I trust in God and hope that he
will strength me to remain.
2 Prove me, my God, I thee desire
my ways to search and trie :
As men do prove their gold with fire,
my reins and heart espie.
3 Thy goodness laid before my face
I durst behold always :
For of thy truth I tread the trace,
and will do all my days.
4 I do not lust to haunt or use
with men whose deeds are vain :
To come in house I do refuse
with the deceitfull train.
5 I much abhor the wicked sort
their deeds I do despise :
I do not once to them resort
that hurtfull things devise.
6 My hands I wash, and do proceed
in works to walk upright :
Then to thine altar I make speed,
to offer there in sight.

- 7 That I may speak and preach the praise
that doth belong to thee,
And so declare how wondrous ways
thou hast been good to me.
- 8 O God, thy house I love most dear,
to me it doth excell:
I have delight and would be near
whereasthy grace doth dwell.
- 9 O shut not up my soul with them
in sin that take their fill.
Nor yet my life among those men
that seek much bloud to spill.
- 10 Whose hands are heapt with craft & guile,
their lives thereof are full:
And their right hand with wretch and wile
for bribes doth pluck and pull.
- 11 But I in righteousness intend
my time and days to serve.
Have mercie, Lord, and me defend,
so that I do not swerve.
- 12 My foot is stay'd for all assaies,
it standeth well and right:
Wherefore to God will I give praise
in all the peoples sight.

Dominus illuminatio. Psal. xxvii. J. H.

- T**He Lord is both my health and light;
shall man make me dismayd?
Sith God doth give me strength and might,
why should I be afraid?
- 2 While that my foes with all their strength
begin with me to brawl,
And think to eat me up, at length
themselves have caught the fall.
- 3 Though they in camp against me lie,
my heart is not afraid:
In battel pight if they will trie,
I trust in God for aid.
- 4 One thing of God I do require
that he will not denie:
For which I pray and will desire
till he to me apply:
- 5 That I within his holy place
my life throughout may dwell,
To see the beautie of his face,
and view his temple well.
- 6 In time of dread he shall me hide
within his place most pure,
And keep me secret by his side,
as on a rock most sure.
- 7 At length I know the Lords good grace
shall make me strong and stout,
My foes to foil and clean deface,
that compass me about.
- 8 Therefore within his house will I
give sacrifice of praise,

With psalms and songs I will apply
to laud the Lord always.

The second part.

- 9 Lord hear the voice of my request,
for which to thee I call:
Have mercie Lord, on me oppress,
and send me help withall.
- 10 My heart doth knowledge unto thee,
I sue to have thy grace:
Then seek my face, saist thou to me,
Lord, I will seek thy face.
- 11 In wrath turn not thy face away,
nor suffer me to slide:
Thou art my help still to this day,
be still my God and guide.
- 12 My parents both their son forsook,
and cast me off at large:
And then the Lord himself yet took
of me the care and charge.
- 13 Teach me, O Lord, the way to thee,
and lead me on forth right,
For fear of such as watch for me,
to trap me if they might.
- 14 Do not betake me to the will
of them that be my foes:
For they surmise against me still
false witness to depose.
- 15 My heart would faint but that in me
this hope is fixed fast,
The Lord Gods good grace shall I see
in life that aye shall last.
- 16 Trust still in God whose whole thou art,
his will abide thou must?
And he shall ease and strength thy heart
if thou in him do trust.

Ad te Dom. clamabo. Psal. xxviii. T. S.

- T**Hou art, O Lord, my strength and stay,
the succour which I crave:
Neglect me not, lest I be like
to them that go to grave.
- 2 The voice of thy suppliant hear,
that unto thee doth crie:
When I lift up my hands unto
thy holy ark most high.
- 3 Repute me not among the sort
of wicked and pervert,
That speak right fair unto their friends
and think full ill in heart.
- 4 According to their handie-work,
as they deserve indeed,
And after their inventions
let them receive their meed.
- 5 For they regard nothing Gods works,
his law ne yet his lore:
Therefore will he them and their seed
destroy for evermore.

6 To render thanks unto the Lord
how great a cause have I,
My voice, my prayer, and my complaint
that heard so willingly!

7 He is my shield and fortitude,
my buckler in distress:
My hope, my help, my hearts relief,
my song shall him confess.

8 He is our strength and our defence,
our enemies to resist:
The health and the salvation
of his elect by Christ.

9 Thy people and thine heritage,
Lord, bless, guide, and preserve:
Increase them, Lord, and rule their hearts,
that they may never swerve.

Afferte Domino. Psal. xxix. T. S.

Give to the Lord, ye potentates,
ye rulers of the world,
Give ye all praise, honour and strength
unto the living Lord.

2 Give glory to his holy name
and honour him alone:
Worship him in his majestie,
within his holy throne.

3 His voice doth rule the waters all,
even as himself doth please:
He doth prepare the thunder-claps,
and governs all the seas.

4 The voice of God is of great force,
and wondrous excellent:
It is most mighty in effect,
and most magnificent.

5 The voice of God doth rend and break
the cedar-trees so long:

The cedar-trees of Lebanon,
which are most high and strong.

6 And makes them leap like a calf,
or else the unicorn:

Not onely trees but mountains great,
whereon the trees are born.

7 His voice divides the flames of fire,
and shakes the wilderness:

8 It makes the desert quake for fear,
that called is Cades.

9 It makes the hinds for fear to calve,
and makes the coverts plain:

Then in his temple every man
his glory doth proclaim.

10 The Lord was set above the fouds,
ruling the raging sea:

So shall he reign as Lord and King
for ever and for aye.

11 The Lord will give his people power
in vertue to increase:

The Lord will bless his chosen flock
with everlasting peace.

Exaltabo te, Domine. Psal. xxx. 7. H.

All laud and praise with heart and voice,
O Lord, I give to thee,
Which didst not make my foes rejoyce,
but hast exalted me.

2 O Lord my God, to thee I cri'd
in all my pain and grief:
Thou gav'st an ear and didst provide
to ease me with relief.

3 Of thy good will thou hast call'd back
my soul from hell to save,
Thou didst revive when strength did lack,
and keptst me from the grave.

4 Sing praise, ye saints, that prove and see
the goodness of the Lord:
In memorie of his majestie
rejoyce with one accord.

5 For why? his anger but a space
doth last, and slack again:
But in his favour and his grace
always doth life remain.
Though gripes of grief and pangs full sore
shall lodge with us all night,
The Lord to joy shall us restore
before the day be light.

6 When I enjoy'd the world at will,
thus would I boast and say,
Tush, I am sure to feel none ill,
this wealth shall not decay.

7 For thou, O Lord, of thy good grace,
hadst sent me strength and aid:
But when thou turn'dst away thy face,
my minde was sore dismay'd.

8 Wherefore again yet did I crie
to thee, O Lord of might:
My God with plaints I did apply,
and pray'd both day and night.

9 What gain is in my blood, said I,
if death destroy my days,
Doth dust declare thy majestie
or yet thy truth doth praise?

10 Wherefore, my God, some pitie take,
O Lord, I thee desire:
Do not this simple soul forsake,
of help I thee require:

11 Then didst thou turn my grief and wo
into a cheerfull voice:
The mourning weed thou tookst me fro,
and mad'st me to rejoyce.

12 Wherefore my soul uncessantly
shall sing unto thy praise:
My Lord, my God, to thee will I
give laud and thanks always.

- O** Lord, I put my trust in thee,
let nothing work me shame:
As thou art just, deliver me,
and set me quite from blame.
- 2 Hear me, O Lord, and that anon,
to help me make good speed:
Be thou my rock and house of stone,
my fence in time of need.
- 3 For why? as stones thy strength is ride,
thou art my fort and tower:
For thy names sake be thou my guide,
and lead me in thy power.
- 4 Pluck thou my feet out of the snare
which they for me have laid:
Thou art my strength, and all my care
is for thy might and aid.
- 5 Into thy hands, Lord, I commit
my spirit, which is thy due:
For why thou hast redeemed it,
O Lord my God most true.
- 6 I hate such folk as will not part
from things to be abhorr'd:
When they on trifles set their heart,
my trust is in the Lord.
- 7 For I will in thy mercie joy,
I see it doth excell:
Thou see'st when ought would me annoy,
and knowest my soul full well.
- 8 Thou hast not left me in their hand
that would me overcharge:
But thou hast set me out of band,
to walk abroad at large.

The second part.

- 9 Great grief, O Lord, doth me assail,
some pitie on me take:
Mine eyes wax dim, my sight doth fail,
my womb for wo doth ache.
- 10 My life is worn with grief and pain,
my years in wo are past,
My strength is gone, and through disdain
my bones corrupt and waste.
- 11 Among my foes I am a scorn,
my friends are all dismayd:
My neighbours and my kinsmen born
to see me are afraid.
- 12 As men once dead are out of minde,
so am I quite forgot:
As small effect in me they finde
as in a broken pot.
- 13 I heard the brags of all the rout,
their threats my minde did fray:
How they conspir'd and went about
to take my life away.
- 14 But, Lord, I trust in thee for aid,
not to be overtrod:

For I confesse and still have said,
thou art my Lord and God.

- 15 The length of all my life and age,
O Lord, is in thy hand:
Defend me from the wrath and rage
of them that me withstand:
- 16 To me thy servant, Lord, express
and shew thy joyfull face:
And save me, Lord, for thy goodness,
thy mercie and thy grace.

The third part.

- 17 Lord, let me not be put to blame,
for that on thee I call:
But let the wicked bear the shame,
and in the grave to fall.
- 18 O Lord, make dumb their lips outright,
which are addict to lies,
And cruelly with pride and spight
against the just devise.
- 19 O how great good hast thou in store
laid up full safe for them
That fear and trust in thee therefore,
before the sons of men!
- 20 Thy presence shall them fence and guide
from all proud brags and wrongs:
Within thy place thou shalt them hide
from all the strife of tongues.
- 21 Thanks to the Lord that hath declar'd
on me his grace so far,
Me to defend with watch and ward,
as in a town of war.
- 22 Thus did I say both day and night,
when I was sore oppress'd;
Lo, I was clean cast out of sight,
yet heardst thou my request.
- 23 Ye saints; love ye the Lord, I say,
the faithfull he doth guide:
And to the proud he doth repay
according to their pride.
- 24 Be strong, and God shall stay your heart,
be bold and have a lust:
For sure the Lord will take your part,
sith ye on him do trust.

Beati quorum. Psal. xxxii. T. S.

THe man is blest whose wickedness
the Lord hath clean remitted:
And he whose sin and wickedness
is hid and also covered.

2 And blest is he to whom the Lord
imputeth not his sin:
Which in his heart hath hid no guile,
nor fraud is found therein.

- 3 For whilest that I kept close my sin
in silence and constraint,

My bones did wear and waste away
with daily moan and plaint.
For night and day thy hand on me
so grievous was and smart,
That all my bloud and humours moist
to driness did convert.
I did therefore confess my fault,
and all my sins discover:
Then thou, O Lord, didst me forgive,
and all my sins pass over.
The humble man shall pray therefore,
and seek thee in due time:
So that the floods of waters great
shall have no power on him.
When trouble and adversitie
do compass me about,
Thou art my refuge and my joy,
and thou dost rid me out.
Come hither and I will thee teach
how thou shalt walk aright:
I will thee guide as I my self
have learn'd by proof and sight.
Be not so rude and ignorant
as is the horse and mule,
Whose mouth without a rein or bit
from harm thou canst not rule.
The wicked man shall manifold
sorrows and griefs sustain:
But unto him that trusts in God
his goodness shall remain.
Be merrie therefore in the Lord,
ye just lift up your voice:
And ye of pure and perfect heart,
be glad and eke rejoyce.

Exultate iusti. Psal. xxxiii. J. H.

YE righteous in the Lord rejoyce;
it is a seemly sight,
That upright men with thankfull voice
should praise the Lord of might.
Praise ye the Lord with harp and song,
in psalms and pleasant things:
With lute and instrument among
that soundeth with ten strings.
Sing to the Lord a song most new,
with courage give him praise:
For why? his word is ever true,
his works and all his ways.
To judgement equitie, and right
he hath a great good will:
And with his gifts he doth delight
the earth throughout to fill.
For by the word of God alone
the heavens all were wrought:
Their hosts and powers every one
his breath to pass hath brought.

7 The waters great gathered hath he
on heaps within the shore:
And hid them in the depth to be,
as in an house of store.
8 All men on earth both least and most,
fear God and keep his law:
Ye that inhabit in each coast,
dread him and stand in aw.
9 What he commanded wrought it was
at once with present speed:
What he doth will is brought to pass
with full effect indeed.
10 The counsels of the nations rude
the Lord doth bring to nought:
He doth defeat the multitude
of their device and thought.
11 But his decrees continue still,
they never slack nor swage:
The motions of his minde and will
take place in every age.

The second part.

12 And blest are they to whom the Lord
as God and guide is known:
Whom he doth choose of meer accord
to take them as his own.
13 The Lord from heaven cast his sight
on men mortal by birth:
14 Considering from his seat of might
the dwellers of the earth.
15 The Lord, I say, whose hand hath wrought
mans heart and doth it frame:
For he alone doth know the thought
and working of the same.
16 A king that trusteth in his host,
shall nought prevail at length:
The man that of his might doth boast,
shall fall for all his strength.
17 The troupes of horse-men eke shall fall,
their sturdy steeds shall serve:
The strength of horse shall not prevail
the rider to preserve.
18 But lo, the eyes of God intend
and watch to aid the just:
With such as fear him to offend,
and on his goodness trust:
19 That he of death and great distress
may set their souls from dread:
And if that dearth their land oppress,
in hunger them to feed.
20 Wherefore our soul doth whole depend
on God our strength and stay:
He is our shield us to defend;
and drive all darts away.
21 Our soul in God hath joy and game,
rejoycing in his might:

For why? in his most holy name
we hope and much delight.
22 Therefore let thy goodness, O Lord,
still present with us be:
As we always with one accord
do onely trust in thee.

Benedicam Dom. Psal. xxxiv. T. S.

I Will give laud and honour both
unto the Lord always,
And eke my mouth for evermore
shall speak unto his praise.
2 I do delight to laud the Lord
in soul and eke in voice:
That humble men and mortifi'd
may hear and so rejoyce.
3 Therefore see that ye magnifie
with me the living Lord,
And let us now exalt his name
together with one accord.
4 For I my self besought the Lord;
he answered me again,
And me delivered incontinent
from all my fear and pain.
5 Whoso they be that him behold,
shall see his light most clear:
Their countenance shall not be dash't,
they need it not to fear.
6 This silly wretch for some relief
unto the Lord did call;
Who did him hear without delay,
and rid him out of thrall.
7 The angel of the Lord doth pitch
his tents in every place,
To save all such as fear the Lord,
that nothing them deface.
8 Taste and consider well therefore
that God is good and just:
O happy man that maketh him
his onely stay and trust!
9 Fear ye the Lord ye holy ones,
above all earthly thing:
For they that fear the living Lord
are sure to lack nothing.
10 The lions shall be hunger-bit,
and pin'd with famine much:
But as for them that fear the Lord,
no lack shall be to such.

The second part.

11 Come near therefore my children dear,
and to my words give ear:
I shall you teach the perfect way,
how ye the Lord should fear.
12 Who is the man that would live long,
and lead a blessed life?
13 See thou refrain thy tongue and lips
from all deceit and strife.

14 Turn back thy face from doing ill,
and do the godly deed:
Enquire for peace and quietness,
and follow it with speed.
15 For why? the eyes of God above
upon the just are bent:
His ears likewise do hear the plaint
of the poor innocent.
16 But he doth frown and bend his brows
upon the wicked train:
And cuts away the memory
that should of them remain.
17 But when the just do call and crie,
the Lord doth hear them so,
That out of pain and miserie
forthwith he lets them go.
18 The Lord is kinde and straight at hand
to such as be contrite:
He saves also the sorrowfull,
the poor and meek in sprite.
19 Full many be the miseries
that righteous men do suffer:
But out of all adversities
the Lord doth them deliver.
20 The Lord doth so preserve and keep
his very bones alway,
That not so much as one of them
doth perish or decay.
21 The sin shall slay the wicked man,
which he himself hath wrought:
And such as hate the righteous man
shall soon be brought to nought.
22 But they that fear the living Lord,
the Lord doth save them sound:
And who that put their trust in him,
nothing shall them confound.

Judica me Domine. Psal. xxxv. J. H.

Lord, plead my cause against my foes,
confound their force and might:
Fight on my part against all those
that seek with me to fight.
2 Lay hand upon the spear and shield,
thy self in armour dress:
Stand up for me and fight the field,
to help me from distress.
3 Gird on thy sword, and stop the way,
mine enemies to withstand:
That thou unto my soul mayst say,
Lo I thy help at hand.
4 Confound them with rebuke and blame,
that seek my soul to spill:
Let them turn back, and flee with shame,
that think to work me ill.
5 Let them disperse and flee abroad,
as winde doth drive the dust:

And that the angel of our God
their might away may thrust.

6 Let all their ways be void of light,
and slippery like to fall :
And send thine angel with thy might,
to persecute them all.

7 For why ? without my fault they have
in secret set their grin :
And for no cause have digg'd a cave
to take my soul therein.

8 When they think least and have no care,
O Lord, destroy them all :
Let them be trapt in their own snare,
and in their mischief fall.

9 And let my soul, my heart and voice,
in God have joy and wealth :
That in the Lord I may rejoyce,
and in his saving health.

10 And then my bones shall speak and say,
my parts shall all agree :
O Lord, though they do seem full gay,
what man is like to thee ?

The second part.

11 Thou dost defend the weak from them
that are both stout and strong :
And rid the poor from wicked men,
that spoil and do them wrong.

12 My cruel foes against me rise,
to witness things untrue :
And to accuse me they devise
of things I never knew.

13 Where I to them did ow good will,
they quit me with disdain :
That they should pay my good with ill,
my soul doth sore complain.

14 When they were sick I mourn'd therefore
and clad my self in sack :
With fasting I did faint full sore,
to pray I was not slack.

15 As they had been my brethren dear,
I did my self behave :
As one that maketh wofull chear
about his mothers grave.

16 But they at my disease did joy,
and gather on a rout :
Yea abject slaves at me did toy,
with mocks and checks full stout,

17 The belly-gods and flattering train,
that all good things deride,
At me do grin with great disdain,
and pluck their mouthes aside.

18 Lord, when wilt thou amend this gear ?
why dost thou stay and pause ?
O rid my soul mine onely dear,
out of these lions claws.

19 And then will I give thanks to thee
before the church always :

And where most of the people be,
there will I shew thy praise.

20 Let not my foes prevail on me,
which hate me for no fault :
Nor yet to wink or turn their eye,
that causless me assault.

The third part.

21 Of peace no word they think or say,
their talk is all untrue :
They still consult and would betray
all those that peace ensue.

22 With open mouth they run at me,
they gape, they laugh, they flee :
Well, well, say they, our eye doth see
the thing that we desire.

23 But, Lord, thou seest what ways they take,
cease not this gear to mend :
Be not far off, nor me forsake,
as men that fail their friend.

24 Awake, arise, and stir abroad,
defend me in my right :

Revenge my cause, my Lord, my God,
and aid me with thy might.

25 According to thy righteousness,
my Lord God, set me free :
And let them not their pride express,
nor triumph over me.

26 Let not their hearts rejoyce and crie,
There, there, this gear goes trim :
Nor give them cause to say on high,
We have our will on him.

27 Confound them with rebuke and shame,
that joy when I do mourn :
And pay them home with spight and blame,
that brag at me with scorn.

28 Let them be glad and eke rejoyce,
which love mine upright way :
And they all times with heart and voice
shall praise the Lord, and say,

29 Great is the Lord, and doth excell,
for why ? he doth delight
To see his servants prosper well,
that is his pleasant sight.

30 Wherefore my tongue I will applie
thy righteousness to praise :
Unto the Lord my God will I
sing laud and praise alwaies.

Dixit injustus. Psal. xxxvi. 7. H.

THe wicked with his works unjust
doth thus perswade his heart,
That of the Lord he hath no trust ;
his fear is set apart.

2 Yet doth he joy in his estate,
to walk as he began,

So long till he deserve the hate
of God and eke of man.

3 His words are wicked, vile, and naught,
his tongue no truth doth tell :

Yet at no hand will he be taught
which way he may do well.

4 When he should sleep, then doth he muse
his mischiefs to fulfill :

No wicked ways doth he refuse,
nor nothing that is ill.

5 But, Lord, thy goodnes doth ascend
above the heavens high :

So doth thy truth it self extend
unto the cloudy sky.

6 Much more then hills so high and steep,
thy justice is exprest :

Thy judgements like to seas most deep;
thou sav'st both man and beast.

7 Thy mercy is above all things,
O God, it doth excell :

In trust whereof as in thy wings,
the sons of men shall dwell.

8 Within thy house they shall be fed
with plenty at their will :

Of all delights they shall be sped,
and take thereof their fill.

9 For why? the well of life so pure
doth ever flow from thee,

And in thy light we are full sure
the lasting light to see.

10 From such as thee desire to know
let not thy grace depart :

Thy righteousness declare and show
to men of upright heart.

11 Let not the proud on me prevail,
O Lord, of thy good grace :

Nor let the wicked me assail,
to throw me out of place.

12 But they in their device shall fall
that wicked works maintain :

They shall be overthrown withall,
and never rise again.

Noli emulari. Psal. xxxvii. W. W.

GRudge not to see the wicked men
in wealth to flourish still :

Nor yet envy such as to ill
have bent and set their will.

2 For as green grass and flourishing herbs
are cut, and wither away :

So shall their great prosperity
soon pass, fade, and decay.

3 Trust thou therefore in God alone,
to do well give thy minde :

So shalt thou have the land as thine,
and there sure food shalt finde.

4 In God set all thy hearts delight,
and look what thou wouldst have,
Or else canst with in all the world,
thou needst it not to crave.

5 Cast both thy self and thine affairs
on God with perfect trust,

And thou shalt see with patience
th' effect both sure and just.

6 Thy perfect life and godly name
he will clear as the light :

So that the sun even at noon-day
shall not shine half so bright.

7 Be still therefore, and stedfastly
on God see thou wait then,

Not shrinking for the prosperous state
of lewd and wicked men.

8 Shake off despight, envy, and hate,
at least in any wise :

Their wicked steps avoid and flee,
and follow not their guise.

9 For every wicked man will God
destroy, both more and less :

But such as trust in him are sure
the land for to possess.

10 Watch but a while, and thou shalt see
no more the wicked train,

No not so much as house or place
where once he did remain.

The second part.

11 But mercifull and humble men
enjoy shall sea and land :

In rest and peace they shall rejoyce,
for nought shall them withstand.

12 The lewd men and malicious
against the just conspire :

They gnash their teeth at him, as men
which do his bane desire.

13 But while that lewd men thus do think,
the Lord laughs them to scorn :

For why? he sees their term approach
when they shall sigh and mourn.

14 The wicked have their sword out drawn,
their bowe eke have they bent,

To overthrow and kill the poor,
as he the right way went.

15 But the same sword shall pierce their heart,
which was to kill the just :

Likewise the bowe shall break to shivers,
wherein they put their trust.

16 Doubtless the just mans poor estate
is better a great deal more

Then all these lewd and wicked mens
rich pomp and heaped store.

17 For be their power never so strong,
God will it overthrow :

Where

Where contrary he doth preserve
the humble men and low,

18 He sees by his great providence
the good mens trade and way :
And will give them inheritance
which never shall decay.

19 They shall not be discouraged,
when some are hard bestead :
When others shall be hunger-bit,
they shall be clad and fed.

20 For whosoever wicked is,
and enemy to the Lord,
shall quail, yea melt even as lambs greafe,
or smoke that flies abroad.

The third part.

21 Behold the wicked borrows much,
and never pays again :
Whereas the just by liberal gifts
makes many glad and fain.
22 For they whom God doth blese, shall have
the land for heritage :
And they whom he doth curse, likewise
shall perish in his rage.

23 The Lord the just mans ways doth guide,
and gives him good success :
To every thing he takes in hand
he sendeth good address.

24 Though that he fall, yet is he sure
not utterly to quail :
Because the Lord puts out his hand
at need and doth not fail.

25 I have been young and now am old,
yet did I never see
The just man left, nor yet his seed
to beg for misery.

26 But gives always most liberally,
and lends whereas is need :
His children and posterity
receive of God their meed.

27 Flee vice therefore and wickedness,
and vertue do embrace :
So God shall grant thee long to have
on earth a dwelling place.

28 For God so loveth equity,
and shews to his such grace,
That he preserveth them alway,
but stroyes the wicked race.

29 Whereas the good and godly men
inherit shall the land,
Having as lords all things therein
in their own power and hand.

30 The just mans mouth shall ever speak
of matters wise and high :
His tongue doth talk to edifie,
with truth and equity.

31 For in his heart the law of God
his Lord doth still abide :
So that where ever he goes or walks,
his foot can never slide.

32 The wicked like a ravening wolf
the just man doth beset,
By all means seeking him to kill,
if he fall in his net.

The fourth part.

33 Though he should fall into his hands,
yet God would succour send :
Though men against him sentence give,
God would him yet defend.

34 Wait thou on God and keep his way,
he shall preserve thee then
The earth to rule, and thou shalt see
destroy'd these wicked men.

35 The wicked have I seen most strong
and plac'd in high degree.
Flourishing in all wealth and store,
as doth the lawrel-tree.

36 But suddenly he past away,
and lo he was quite gone :
Then I him sought, but could not finde
the place where dwelt such one.

37 Mark and behold the perfect man,
how God doth him increase :
For the just man shall have at length
great joy with rest and peace.

38 As for transgressours, wo to them,
destroy'd they shall all be :
God will cut off their budding race,
and rich posterity.

39 But the salvation of the just
doth come from God above,
Who in their trouble sends them aid,
of his meer grace and love.

40 God doth them help, save, and deliver
from lewd men and unjust :
And still will save them whilst that they
in him do put their trust.

Domine ne. Psal. xxxviii. J. H.

Put me not to rebuke, O Lord,
in thy provoked ire :
Ne in thy heavie wrath, O Lord.
correct me I desire.

2 Thine arrows do stick fast in me,
thy hand doth presse me sore :
And in my flesh no health at all
appeareth any more.

3 And all this is by reason of
thy wrath that I am in :
Nor any rest is in my bones
by reason of my sin.

4 For lo, my wicked doings, Lord,
above my head are gone :

A greater load then I can bear,
they lie me sore upon.

5 My wounds stink and are festered so,
as loathsome is to see :

Which all through mine own foolishness
betideth unto me.

6 And I in carefull wise am brought
in trouble and distress :

That I go wailing all the daie
in dolefull heaviness.

7 My loins are fill'd with sore disease,
My flesh hath no whole part :

8 I feeble am and broken sore.
I roar for grief of heart.

9 Thou know'st, Lord, my desire, my groans
are open in thy sight :

10 My heart doth pant, my strength doth fail,
mine eies have lost their light.

11 My lovers and my wonted friends
stand looking on my wo :

And eke my kinsmen far away
are me departed fro.

12 They that did seek my life laid snares,
and they that sought the waie

To do me hurt, spake lies, and thought
on mischief all the daie.

The second part.

13 But as a deaf man I became,
that cannot hear at all :

14 And as one dumb, that opens not
his mouth to speak withall.

15 For all my confidence, O Lord,
is wholly set on thee :

O Lord, thou Lord that art my God,
thou shalt give ear to me.

16 This did I crave, that they my foes
triumph not over me :

For when my foot did slip, then they
did joy my fall to see.

17 And trulie I poor wretch am set
in place, a wofull wight :

And eke my grievous heaviness
is ever in my sight.

18 For while that I my wickedness
in humble wise confesse :

And while I for my sinfull deeds
my sorrows do expresse :

19 My foes do still remain alive,
and mightie are also :

And they that hate me wrongfully,
in number hugely grow.

20 They stand against me that my good
with evil do repaie :

Because that good and honest things
I do ensue alwaie.

21 Forake me not, O Lord my God,
be thou not far awaie :

22 Hasten me to help, my Lord, my God,
my safetie and my staie.

Dixi, custodiam. Psal. xxxix. F. H.

I said, I will look to my waies,
for fear I should go wrong :

1 I will take heed all times that I
offend not with my tongue.

2 As with a bit I will keep fast
my mouth with force and might,
Not once to whisper all the while
the wicked are in sight.

3 I held my tongue and spake no word,
but kept me close and still :

Yea from good talk I did refrain,
but sore against my will.

4 My heart waxt hot within my breast,
with musing, thought and doubt ;

Which did increase and stir the fire :
at last these words burst out ;

5 Lord number out my life and daies
which yet I have not past ;

So that I may be certifie
how long my life shall last.

6 Lord, thou hast pointed out my life
in length much like a span :

Mine age is nothing unto thee,
so vain is every man.

7 Man walketh like a shade, and doth
in vain himself annoy

In getting goods, and cannot tell
who shall the same enjoy.

8 Now, Lord, fith things this wise do frame,
what help do I desire ?

Of truth my help doth hang on thee,
I nothing else require.

The second part.

9 From all the sins that I have done,
Lord, quit me out of hand :

And make me not a scorn to fools
that nothing understand.

10 I was as dumb, and to complain
no trouble might me move :

Because I knew it was thy work,
my patience for to prove.

11 Lord, take from me thy scourge & plague,
I can them not withstand :

I faint and pine away for fear
of thy most heavie hand.

12 When thou for sin dost man rebuke,
he waxeth wo and wan,

As doth a cloth that moths have fret :
so vain a thing is man.

13 Lord hear my suit and give good heed,
regard my tears that fall :

I sojourn like a stranger here,
as did my fathers all,

14 O spare a little, give me space
my strength for to restore,
Before I go away from hence,
and shall be seen no more.

Expectans expectavi. Psal. xl. J. H.

I Waited long and sought the Lord,
and patiently did bear:
At length to me he did accord
my voice and crie to hear.
2 He pluckt me from the lake so deep
out of the mire and clay:
And on a rock he set my feet,
and he did guide my way.
3 To me he taught a psalm of praise,
which I must shew abroad,
And sing new songs of thanks alwaies
unto the Lord our God.
4 When all the folk these things shall see,
as people much afraid,
Then they unto the Lord will flee,
and trust upon his aid.
5 O blest is he whose hope and heart
doth in the Lord remain,
That with the proud doth take no part,
nor such as lie and feign.
6 For, Lord my God, thy wondrous deeds
in greatness far do pass,
Thy favour towards us exceeds
all things that ever was.
7 When I intend and do devise
thy works abroad to show,
To such a reckoning they do rise,
thereof no end I know.
8 Burnt-offrings thou delight'st not in,
I know thy whole desire:
With sacrifice to purge his sin
thou dost no man require.
9 Meat-offerings and sacrifice
thou wouldst not have at all:
But thou, O Lord, hast open made
mine ears to hear withall.
10 But then said I, Behold and look,
I come a mean to be:
For in the volume of thy book
thus is it said of me,
11 That I, O God, should do thy minde,
which thing doth like me well:
For in my heart thy law I finde
fast placed there to dwell.
12 Thy justice and thy righteousness
in great resorts I tell:
Behold my tongue no time doth cease,
O Lord, thou knowst full well.

The second part.

13 I have not hid within my breast
thy goodness as by stealth:

But I declare and have exprest
thy truth and saving health.

14 I kept not close thy loving minde,
that no man should it know:
The trust that in thy truth I finde,
to all the church I show.

15 Thy tender mercie, Lord, from me
withdraw thou not away:

But let thy love and veritie
preserve me still for aye.

16 For I with mischiefs many a one
am sore beset about:

My sins increase, and so come on,
I cannot spee them out.

17 For why? in number they exceed
the hairs upon my head:

My heart doth faint for very dread,
that I am almost dead.

18 With speed send help and set me free;
O Lord, I thee require:

Make haste with aid to succour me,
O Lord, at my desire.

19 Let them sustain rebuke and shame
that seek my soul to spill:

Drive back my foes, and them defame
that wish and would me ill.

20 For their ill feats do them descric,
that would deface my name:

Always at me they rail and crie,
Fie on him, fie for shame.

21 Let them in thee have joy and wealth
that seek to thee alwaies:

That those that love thy saving health
may say, To God be praise.

22 But as for me, I am but poor,
opprest and brought full low:

Yet thou, O Lord, wilt me restore
to health, full well I know.

23 For why, thou art my hope and trust,
my refuge, help and stay:

Wherefore my God, as thou art just,
with me no time delay.

Beatus qui intelligit. Psal. xli. T. S.

THeman is blest that carefull is
the needie to consider:

For in the season perilous
the Lord will him deliver.

2 The Lord will make him safe and sound,
and happie in the land:

And he will not deliver him
into his enemies hand.

3 And in his bed when he lies sick,
the Lord will him restore:

And thou, O Lord, wilt turn to health
his sickness and his sore.

- 4 Then in my sickness thus said I,
Have mercy, Lord, on me,
And heal my soul, which is full wo
that I offended thee.
- 5 Mine enemies wisht me ill in heart,
and thus of me did say,
When shall he die, that all his name
may vanish quite away?
- 6 And when they come to visit me,
they ask if I do well:
But in their hearts mischief they hatch,
and to their mates it tell.
- 7 They bite their lips and whisper so,
as though they would me charm,
And cast their fetches how to trap
me with some mortal harm.
- 8 Some grievous sin hath brought him to
this sickness, say they plain:
He is so low that without doubt
rise can he not again.
- 9 The man also that I did trust,
with me did use deceit:
Who at my table ate my bread,
the same for me laid wait.
- 10 Have mercie, Lord, on me therefore,
and let me be preserved:
That I may render unto them
the things they have deserved:
- 11 But this I know assuredly,
to be belov'd of thee,
When that mine enemies have no cause
to triumph over me.
- 12 But in my right thou hast me kept,
and maintained alway:
And in thy presence place assign'd
where I shall dwell for aye.
- 13 The Lord the God of Israel
be praised evermore:
Even so be it, Lord, will I say,
even so be it therefore.

Quemadmodum. Psal. xlii. J. H.

- L**Ike as the hart doth breathe and bray
the wel-springs to obtain;
So doth my soul desire alway
with thee, Lord; to remain.
- 2 My soul doth thirst, and would draw near
the living God of might:
Oh when shall I come and appear
in presence of his sight!
- 3 The tears all times are my repast,
which from mine eyes do slide:
When wicked men crie out so fast,
where now is God thy guide?
- 4 Alas, what grief is it to think
what freedome once I had!

Therefore my soul as at pits brink
most heavy is and sad.
When I did march in good aray,
furnished with my train,
Unto the temple was our way,
with songs and hearts most fain.

5 My soul, why art thou sad always,
and farest thus in my breast?
Trust still in God; for him to praise
I hold it ever best.

By him I have succour at need
against all pain and grief:
He is my God, which with all speed
will haste to send relief.

6 And thus my soul within me, Lord,
doth faint to think upon
The land of Jordan, and record
the little hill Hermon.

The second part.

- 7 One grief another in doth call,
as clouds burst out their voice:
The floods of evil that do fall
run over me with noise.
- 8 Yet I by day felt his goodness
and help at all assaies:
Likewise by night I did not cease
the living God to praise.
- 9 I am perswaded thus to say
to him with pure pretence,
O Lord, thou art my guide and stay,
my rock and sure defence.
- Why do I then in pensiveness
hanging the head thus walk,
While that mine enemies me oppress,
and vex me with their talk?
- 10 For why? they pierce my inward parts
with pangs to be abhorr'd,
When they crie out with stubborn hearts,
where is thy God, thy Lord?
- 11 So soon why dost thou faint and quail,
my soul with pain oppress?
With thoughts why dost thy self assail
so sore within my breast?
- 12 Trust in the Lord thy God always,
and thou the time shalt see
To give him thanks with laud and praise,
for health restor'd to thee.

Judica me Domine. Psal. xliii. T. S.

- J**udge and revenge my cause, O Lord,
from them that evil be:
From wicked and deceitfull men,
O Lord, deliver me.
- 2 For of my strength thou art the God;
why puttst thou me thee fro?
And why walk I so heavily
oppressed with my foe?

Send out thy light, and eke thy truth,
and lead me with thy grace,
which may conduct me to thy hill,
and to thy dwelling place.

Then shall I to the altar go
of God my joy and cheer:
And on my harp give thanks to thee,
O God, my God most dear.

Why art thou then so sad my soul,
and frettst thus in my breast?
Still trust in God, for him to praise
I hold it always best.

By him I have deliverance
against all pain and grief:
He is my God which doth alway
at need send me relief.

Deus auribus. Psal. xlv. T. S.

Our ears have heard our fathers tell,
and reverently record
The wondrous works that thou hast done
in older time, O Lord.

How thou didst cast the Gentiles out,
and stroidst them with strong hand:
Planting our fathers in their place,
and gav'st to them their land.

They conquered not by sword nor strength
the land of thy behest:

But by thy hand, thy arm and grace;
because thou lov'dst them best.

Thou art my King, O God, that holp
Jacob in sundry wise.

Led with thy power, we threw down such
as did against us rise.

I trusted not in bowe nor sword,
they could not save me sound.

Thou keptst us from our enemies rage,
thou didst our foes confound.

And still we boast of thee our God,
and praise thy holy name:

Yet now thou goest not with our host,
but leavest us to shame.

Thou mad'st us flee before our foes
and so were overtrod:

Our enemies robb'd and spoil'd our goods,
when we were sperst abroad.

Thou hast us given to our foes,
as sheep for to be slain:

Amongst the heathen every where
scattered we do remain.

Thy people thou hast sold like slaves,
and as a thing of nought:

For profit none thou hadst thereby,
no gain at all was sought.

And to our neighbours thou hast made
of us a laughing-stock:

And those that round about us dwell,
at us do grin and mock.

The second part.

14 Thus we serve for none other use,
but for a common talk:

They mock, they scorn, they nod their heads
where ere they go or walk.

15 I am asham'd continually,
to hear these wicked men:

Yea, so I blush, that all my face
with red is covered then.

16 For why? we hear such slanderous words,
such false reports and lies:

That death it is to see their wrongs,
their threatnings and their cries.

17 For all this we forgot not thee,
nor yet thy covenant brake:

18 We turn not back our hearts from thee,
nor yet thy paths forsake.

19 Yet thou hast trod us down to dust,
where dens of dragons be,
And covered us with shade of death,
and great adversitie.

20 If we had our Gods name forgot,
and help of idols sought,

21 Would not God then have tride this out
for he doth know our thought.

22 Nay, nay, for thy names sake, O Lord,
always are we slain thus:

As sheep unto the shambles sent,
right so they deal with us.

23 Up Lord, why sleepest thou? awake,
and leave us not for all:

24 Why hidest thou thy countenance,
and dost forget our thrall?

25 For down to dust our soul is brought,
and we now at last cast:

Our belly, like as it were glu'd,
unto the ground cleaves fast.

26 Rise up therefore for our defence,
and help us, Lord, at need:

We thee beseech for thy goodness,
to rescue us with speed.

Eruſavit. Psal. xlv. J. H.

MY heart doth take in hand
some godly song to sing:
The praise that I shall shew therein
pertaineth to the king.

2 My tongue shall be as quick
his honour to indite,

As is the pen of any scribe,
that useth fast to write.

3 O fairest of all men,
thy speech is pleasant pure:
For God hath blessed thee with gifts
for ever to endure.

4 About thee gird thy sword,
O Prince of might elect;

N n n

Wic

With honour, glorie and renown,
thy person pure is deckt.

5 Go forth with godly speed,
with meekness, truth and right:
And thy right hand shall thee instruct
in works of dreadfull might.

6 Thine arrows sharp and keen
their hearts so sore shall sting:
That folk shall fall and kneel to thee,
yea allthy foes, O king.

7 Thy royal seat, O Lord,
for ever shall remain:
Because the scepter of thy realm
doth righteousness maintain.
8 Because thou lov'st the right,
and dost the ill detest,
God, even thy God hath nointed thee
with joy above the rest.
9 With myrrhe and favours sweet
thy clothes are all bespread:
When thou dost from thy palace pass,
therein to make thee glad.
10 Kings daughters do attend
in fine and rich aray:
At thy right hand the queen doth stand
in gold and garments gay.

The second part.

11 O daughter take good heed,
encline and give good ear:
Thou must forget thy kindred all,
and fathers housemost dear.
12 Then shall the king desire
thy beautie fair and trim:
For why? he is the Lord thy God,
and thou must worship him.

13 The daughters then of Tyre,
with gifts full rich to see,
And all the wealthy of the land
shall make their suit to thee.

14 The daughter of the king
is glorious to behold:
Within her closet she doth sit
all deckt in beaten gold.

15 In robes well wrought with needle,
and many a pleasant thing:
With virgins fair on her to wait,
she cometh to the king.

16 Thus are they brought with joy
and mirth on every side,
Into the palace of the king,
and there they do abide.

17 In stead of parents lefe,
(O queen, the case so stands)
Thou shalt have sons whom thou mai'st set
as princes in all lands,

18 Wherefore thy holy name
all ages shall record:
The people shall give thanks to thee
for evermore, O Lord.

Deus noster. Psal. xlv. 7. H.

THe Lord is our defence and aid,
the strength whereby we stand:
When we with wo are much dismay'd
he is our help at hand.

2 Though th' earth remove, we will not fear
though hills so high and steep
Be thrust and hurled here and there
within the sea so deep.

3 No, though the waves do rage so fore
that all the banks it spills:
And though it overflow the shore,
and beat down mightie hills.

4 For one fair flood doth send abroad
his pleasant streams apace,
To fresh the citie of our God,
and wash his holy place.

5 In midst of her the Lord doth dwell,
she can no whit decay:
All things against her that rebell
the Lord will truly slay.

6 The heathen folk the kingdoms fear,
the people make a noise:
The earth doth melt and not appear,
when God puts forth his voice.

7 The Lord of hosts doth take our part,
to us he hath an eie:
Our hope of health withall our heart
on Jacobs God doth lie.

8 Come here and see with minde and thought
the working of our God:
What wonders he himself hath wrought
in all the world abroad.

9 By him all wars are hushd and gone,
which countreys did conspire:
Their bowes he brake and spears each one
their chariots burnt with fire.

10 Leave off therefore (saith he) and know
I am a God most stout,
Among the heathen high and low,
and all the earth throughout.

11 The Lord of hosts doth us defend,
he is our strength and tower:
On Jacobs God we do depend,
and on his might and power.

Omnes gentes. Psal. xlvii. 7. H.

YE people all with one accord
clap hands and eke rejoyce:
Be glad and sing unto the Lord
with sweet and pleasant voice.

2 For high the Lord and dreadfull is,
with wonders manifold:

A mightie King he is truly,
in all the earth extold:

3 The people shall he make to be
unto our bondage thrall:

And underneath our feet he shall
the nations make to fall.

4 For us the heritage he chose
which we possess alone:

The flourishing worship of Jacob
his welbelovèd one.

5 Our God ascended up on high
with joy and pleasant noise:

The Lord goes up above the skie
with trumpets royal voice.

6 Sing praises to our God, sing praise,
sing praises to our King:

7 For God is King of all the earth,
all skilfull praises sing.

8 God on the heathen reigns and sits
upon his holy throne:

The princes of the people have
them joynd everie one

9 To Abrahams people: for our God,
which is exalted high,

As with a buckler doth defend
the earth continually.

Magnus Dominus. Psal. xlviii f. H.

Great is the Lord, and with great praise
to be advanced still
Within the citie of our God,
upon his holy hill.

2 Mount Sion is a pleasant place,
it gladdeth all the land:

The citie of the mightie King
on her north-side doth stand.

3 Within the palaces thereof
God is a refuge known:

For lo, the kings are gathered, and
together they are gone.

4 But when they did behold it so,
they wondred, and they were
Astonied much, and suddenly
were driven back with fear.

5 Great terrour there on them did fall,
for very wo they cry.

As doth a woman when she shall
go travail by and by.

6 As thou with eastern winde the ships
upon the sea dost break,
so they were stroy'd: and even as
we heard our fathers speak:

7 So in the citie of the Lord
we saw as it was told,

Yea, in the citie which our God
for ever will uphold.

8 O Lord, we wait and do attend
on thy good help and grace:

For which we do all times attend
within thy holy place.

9 O Lord, according to thy name
for ever is thy praise:

And thy right hand, O Lord, is full
of righteousness always.

10 Let, for thy judgements, Sion mount
fulfilled be with joys:

And eke of Judah grant, O Lord,
the daughters to rejoyce.

11 Go walk about all Sion hill,
yea, round about her go:

And tell the towres that thereupon
are builded on a row.

12 And mark ye well her bulwarks all,
behold her towers there:

That ye may tell thereof to them
that after shall be here.

13 For this God is our God, our God
for evermore is he:

Yea, and unto the death also
our guider shall he be.

Audite hæc, omnes. Psal. xlix. f. H.

All people hearken and give ear
to that that I shall tell,

2 Both high and low, both rich and poor
that in the world do dwell.

3 For why? my mouth shall make discourse
of many things right wise:
In understanding shall mine heart
his studie exercise.

4 I will encline mine ear to know
the parable so dark:

And open all my doubtfull speech
in metre on my harp.

5 Why should I fear affliction,
or any carefull toyl:

Or else my foes which at my heels
are prest my life to spoil?

6 For as for such as riches have,
wherein their trust is most;

And they which of their treasures great
themselves do brag and boast;

7 There is not one of them that can
his brothers death redeem,

Or that can give a price to God
sufficient for him.

8 It is too great a price to pay,
none can thereto attain:

Or that he might his life prolong,
or not in grave remain.

9 They see wise men as well as fools
subje& unto deaths bands:

N n n n a

And

And being dead, strangers possess
their goods, their rents, their lands.

- 10 Their care is to build houses fair,
and so determine sure
To make their name right great on earth
for ever to endure.
11 Yet shall no man always enjoy
high honour, wealth, and rest;
12 But shall at length taste of deaths cup,
as well as the brute beast.

The second part.

- 13 And though they trie their foolish thoughts
to be most lewd and vain:
Their children yet approve their talk,
and in like sin remain.
14 As sheep into the fold are brought,
so shall they into grave:
Death shall them eat, and in that day
the just shall lordship have.
15 Their image and their royal port
shall fade and quite decay,
When as from house to pit they pass
with wo and well-away.
16 But God will surely preserve me
from death and endless pain:
Because he will of his good grace
my soul receive again.
17 If any man wax wondrous rich,
fear not I say therefore:
Although the glorie of his house
increaseth more and more.
18 For when he dies, of all these things
nothing shall he receive:
His glorie will not follow him,
his pomp will take her leave.
19 Yet in this life he takes himself
the happiest under sun:
And others likewise flatter him,
saying, All is well done.
20 And presuppose he live as long
as did his fathers old;
Yet must he needs at length give place,
and be brought to deaths fold.
21 Thus man to honour God hath brought,
yet doth he not consider:
But like brute beasts, so doth he live,
which turn to dust and powder.

Deus Decorum. Psal. 1. W. W.

THe mightie God,
th' eternal hath thus spoke,
And all the world
he will call and provoke:
Even from the east,
and so forth to the west.
From towards Sion,
which place he liketh best,

God will appear
in beautie most excellent:
Our God will come
before that long time be spent.

- 3 Devouring fire
shall go before his face;
A great tempest
shall round about him trace.
4 Then shall he call
the earth and heavens bright,
To judge his folk
with equitie and right:
5 Saying, Go to,
and now my saints assemble:
My pact they keep,
their gifts do not dissemble.
6 The heavens shall
declare his righteousness:
For God is judge
of all things more and less.
7 Hear, my people,
for I will now reveal;
Lift Israel,
I will thee nought conceal.
Thy God, thy God
am I, and will not blame thee
8 For giving not
all manner offering to me.
9 I have no need
to take of thee at all
Goats of thy fold,
or calf out of thy stall:
10 For all the beasts
are mine within the woods:
On thousand hills
cattel are mine own goods.
11 I know for mine
all birds that are on mountains:
All beasts are mine
which haunt the fields and fountains,
12 Hungrie if I were,
I would not thee it tell;
For all is mine
that in the world doth dwell.
13 Eat I the flesh
of great bulls or bullocks?
Or drink the bloud
of goats, or of the flocks?
14 Offer to God
praise and hearty thanksgiving,
And pay thy vows
unto God everliving.
15 Call upon me
when troubled thou shalt be:
Then will I help,
and thou shalt honour me,

16 To the wicked
thus saith th' eternal God,
Why dost thou preach
my laws and hefts abroad :
17 Seeing thou hast
them with thy mouth abused,
And hat'st to be
by discipline reformed ?
My words, I say,
thou dost reject and hate :
18 If that thou see
a thief, as with thy mate,
Thou run'st with him,
and so your prey do seek,
And art all one
with bauds an ruffian s eke.
19 Thou giv'st thy self
to backbite and to slander:
And how thy tongue
deceives it is a wonder.
20 Thou sitt'st musing
thy brother how to blame,
And how to put
thy mothers son to shame.
21 These things thou didst,
and whilst I held my tongue,
Thou didst me judge,
because I staid so long,
Like to thy self:
yet though I keep long silence,
Once shalt thou feel
of thy wrongs just recompense.
22 Consider this,
ye that forget the Lord,
And fear not when
he threatneth with his word :
Lest without help
I spoil you as a prey.
23 But he that thanks
offreth praiseth me aye,
Saith the Lord God :
and he that walketh this trace,
I will him teach
Gods saving health to embrace.

Another of the same, by J. H.

THe God of gods, the Lord,
hath call'd the earth by name :
From whence the sun doth rise unto
the setting of the same.
2 From Sion his fair place,
his glorie bright and clear,
The perfect beauty of his grace,
from thence it did appear.
3 Our God shall come in haste,
to speak he shall not doubt :
Before him shall the fire waste,
and tempest round about.

4 The heavens from on high,
the earth below likewise
He will call forth, to judge and trie,
his folk he doth devise.
5 Bring forth my saints, saith he,
my faithfull flock so dear :
Which are in band and league with me,
my law to love and fear.
6 And when these things are tride,
the heavens shall record,
That God is just; and all must bide
the judgement of the Lord.
7 My people, O give heed,
Israel, to thee I crie :
I am thy God, thy help at need,
thou canst it not denie.
8 I do not say to thee,
thy sacrifice is slack :
Thou offerest daily unto me,
much more then I do lack.
9 Thinkst thou that I do need
thy cattel young or old ?
Or else so much desire to feed
on goats out of thy fold ?
10 Nay; all the beasts are mine,
in woods that eat their fills :
And thousands more of neat and kine,
that run wilde on the hills.

The second part.

11 The birds that build on high,
in hills and out of sight;
And beasts that in the fields do lie,
are subject to my might.
12 Then though I hungred sore,
what need I ought of thine,
Sith that the earth with her great store,
and all therein is mine ?
13 To bulls flesh have I minde
to eat it, dost thou think ?
Or such a sweetness do I finde
the bloud of goats to drink ?
14 Give to the Lord his praise,
with thanks to him apply :
And see thou pay thy vows always
unto the God most high.
15 Then seek and call to me,
when ought would work thee blame;
And I will sure deliver thee,
that thou mayst praise my name.
16 But to the wicked train,
which talk of God each day,
And yet their works are foul and vain
to them the Lord will say,
17 With what a face dar'st thou
my word once speak or name ?

Nnnn 3

Why

Why doth thy talk my law allow,
thy deeds denie the same?
18 Whereas sort to amend
thy life thou art so slack:
My word the which thou dost pretend,
is cast behinde thy back.

The third part.

19 When thou a chiefe dost see
by theft to live in wealth,
With him thou run'st, and dost agree
likewise to thrive by stealth.
20 When thou dost them behold
that wives and maids defile,
Thou lik'st it well, and waxest bold
to use that life most vile.
21 Thy lips thou dost apply
to slander and defame:
Thy tongue is taught to craft and lie,
and still doth use the same.
22 Thou studiest to revile
thy friends to thee so near:
With slander thou wouldst needs defile
thy mothers son most dear.
23 Hereat while I do wink,
as though I did not see,
Thou go'st on still and so dost think
that I am like to thee.
24 But sure I will not let
to strike when I begin:
Thy faults in order I will set,
and open all thy sin.
25 Mark this I you require,
that have not God in minde:
Lest when I plague you in mine ire,
your help be far to finde.
26 He that doth give to me
the sacrifice of praise,
Doth please me well, and he shall see
to walk in godly ways.

Miserere mei. Psal. li. W. W.

O Lord, consider my distress,
and now with speed some pitie take:
My sins deface, my faults redress,
good Lord, for thy great mercies sake.
2 Wash me, O Lord, and make me clean
from this unjust and sinfull act,
And purifie yet once again
my hainous crime and bloudy fact.
3 Remorse and sorrow do constrain
me to acknowledge mine excess:
My sin, alas, doth still remain
before my face without release.
4 For thee alone I have offended,
committing evil in thy sight:
And if I were therefore condemned,
yet were thy judgements just and right.

5 It is too manifest, alas,
that first I was conceiv'd in sin:
Yea, of my mother so born was,
and yet vile wretch remain therein.
6 Also behold, Lord, thou dost love
the inward truth of a pure heart:
Therefore thy wisdom from above
thou hast reveal'd me to convert.
7 If thou with hyssop purge this blot,
I shall be cleaner then the glass:
And if thou wash away my spot,
the snow in whiteness shall I pass.
8 Therefore, O Lord, such joy me send,
that inwardly I may finde grace,
And that my strength may now amend,
which thou hast swag'd for my trespass.
9 Turn back thy face and frowning ire,
for I have felt enough thy hand:
And purge my sins, I thee desire,
which do in number pass the sand.
10 Make new my heart within my breast,
and frame it to thy holy will:
Thy constant spirit in me let rest,
which may these raging enemies kill.

The second part.

11 Cast me not, Lord, out from thy face,
but speedily my torments end:
Take not from me thy spirit of grace,
which may from dangers me defend.
12 Restore me to those joys again
which I was wont in thee to finde:
And let me thy free spirit retain,
which unto thee may stir my minde.
13 Thus when I shall thy mercies know,
I shall instruct others therein:
And men that are likewise brought low,
by mine example shall flee sin.
14 O God, that of my health art Lord,
forgive me this my bloudie vice:
My heart and tongue shall then accord
to sing thy mercies and justice.
15 Touch thou my lips, my tongue untie,
O Lord, which art the onely key:
And then my mouth shall testifie
thy wondrous works and praise alway.
16 And as for outward sacrifice,
I would have offered many a one:
But thou esteem'st them of no price,
and therein pleasure tak'st thou none.
17 The heavie heart, the minde oppress,
O Lord, thou never dost reject:
And, to speak truth, it is the best,
and of all sacrifice th' effect.
18 Lord, unto Sion turn thy face,
pour out thy mercies on thy hill,

And on Jerusalem thy grace,
build up the walls, and love it still.
19 Thou shalt accept then our offerings
of peace and righteousness, I say:
Yea calves and many other things
upon thine altar will we lay.

Another of the same, by J. H.

HAve mercie on me, Lord, after
thy great abounding grace:
After thy mercies multitude,
do thou my sins deface.
2 Yea wash me more from mine offence,
and cleanse me from my sin:
For I do know my faults, and still
my sin is in mine eyn.
3 Against thee, thee alone I have
offended in this case:
And evil have I done before
the presence of thy face:
4 That in the things that thou hast done
upright thou mayst be tride,
And eke in judging that the doom
may pass upon thy side.
5 Behold, in wickedness my kinde
and shape I did receive:
And lo my sinfull mother eke
in sin did me conceive.
6 But lo, the truth in inward parts
is pleasant unto thee;
And secrets of thy wisdom thou
revealed hast to me.
7 With hyssop, Lord, besprinkle me,
I shall be cleansed so:
Yea wash thou me, and so I shall
be whiter then the snow.
8 Of joy and gladness make thou me
to hear the pleasant voice:
That so the bruised bones which thou
hast broken may rejoyce.
9 From the beholding of my sins,
Lord, turn away thy face:
And all my deeds of wickedness
do utterly deface.
10 O God, create in me a heart
unspotted in thy sight:
And eke within my bowels, Lord,
renew a stable sprite.
11 Ne cast me from thy sight, nor take
thy holy Spirit away:
The comfort of thy saving health
give me again, I pray.
12 With thy free Spirit establish me,
and I will teach therefore
Sinners thy ways and wicked shall
be turned to thy lore.

The second part.

13 O God that art God of my health,
from bloud deliver me:
That praises of thy righteousness
my tongue may sing to thee.
14 My lips that yet fast closed be,
do thou, O Lord, unloose:
The praises of thy majestie
my mouth shall so disclose.
15 I would have offered sacrifice,
if that had pleased thee:
But pleased with burnt-offerings
I know thou wilt not be.
16 A troubled spirit is sacrifice
I delightfull in God eyes:
A broken and an humble heart,
God, thou wilt not despise.
17 In thy good will deal gently, Lord,
to Sion, and withall
Grant that of thy Jerusalem
uprear'd may be the wall,
18 Burnt-offrings, gifts, and sacrifice
of justice in that day
Thou shalt accept, and calves they shall
upon thine altar lay.

Quid gloriaris. Psal. lii. J. H.

Why dost thou, tyrant, boast abroad,
thy wicked works to praise?
Dost thou not know there is a God,
whose mercies last always?
2 Why doth thy minde yet still devise
such wicked wiles to warp?
Thy tongue untrue in forging lies
is like a rasour sharp.
3 On mischief why setst thou thy minde,
and wilt not walk upright?
Thou hast more lust false tales to finde,
then bring the truth to light.
4 Thou dost delight in fraud and guile,
in mischief, bloud, and wrong:
Thy lips have learn'd the flattering stile,
O false deceitfull tongue.
5 Therefore shall God for aye confound
and pluck thee from thy place,
Thy seed root out from off the ground,
and so shall thee deface.
6 The just when they behold thy fall,
with fear will praise the Lord,
And in reproach of thee withall
crie out with one accord,
7 Behold the man that would not take
the Lord for his defence:
But of his goods his god did make,
and trust his corrupt sense.
8 But I as olive fresh and green
shall spring and spread abroad:

For why? my trust all times hath been
upon the living God.

9 For this therefore will I give praise
to thee with heart and voice:
I will set forth thy name always,
wherein thy saints rejoyce.

Dixit insipiens. Psal. liii. T. S.

THe foolish man in that which he
within his heart hath said,
That there is any God at all
hath utterly denaid,

2 They are corrupt and they also
a hainous work have wrought:
Among them all there is not one
of good that worketh ought.

3 The Lord lookt down on sons of men,
from heaven all abroad:
To see if any were that would
be wise and seek for God.

4 They are all gone out of the way,
they are corrupted all;
There is not one doth any good,
there is not one at all.

5 Do not all wicked workers know
that they do feed upon
My people, as they feed on bread?
the Lord they call not on.

6 Even there they were afraid, and stood
with trembling all dismay'd
Whereas there was no cause at all
why they should be afraid.

7 For God his bones that thee besieg'd
hath scattered all abroad:
Thou hast confounded them, for they
rejected are of God.

8 O Lord, give thou thy people health,
and thou, O Lord, fulfill
Thy promise made to Israel,
from out of Sion hill.

9 When God his people shall restore
that erst was captive led,
Then Jacob shall therein rejoyce,
and Israel shall be glad.

Deus in nomine. Psal. liv. T. H.

GOd, save me for thy holy name,
and for thy goodness sake:
Unto the strength, Lord, of the same
I do my cause betake.

2 Regard, O Lord, and give an ear
to me when I do pray:
Bow down thy self to me and hear
the words that I do say.

3 For strangers up against me rise,
and tyrants vex me still:
Which have not God before their eyes,
they seek my soul to spill.

4 But lo, my God doth give me aid,
the Lord is straight at hand:
With them by whom my soul is staid
the Lord doth ever stand.

5 With plagues repay again all those
for me that lie in wait:

And in thy truth destroy my foes
with their own snare and bait.

6 An offering of free heart and will
then I to thee shall make,
And praise thy name, for therein still
great comfort I do take.

7 O Lord, at length do set me free
from them that craft conspire:
And now mine eie with joy doth see
on them my hearts desire.

Exaudi Deus. Psal. lv. T. H.

O God, give ear, and do apply
to hear me when I pray:
And when to thee I call and crie,
hide not thy self away.

2 Take heed to me, grant my request
and answer me again:
With plaints I pray full sore oppress'd,
great grief doth me constrain.

3 Because my foes with threats and cries
oppress me through despight:
And so the wicked sort likewise
to vex me have delight.

4 For they in counsel do conspire
to charge me with some ill:
So in their hastie wrath and ire
they do pursue me still.

5 My heart doth faint for want of breath,
it panteth in my breast:
The terrors and the dread of death
do work me much unrest.

6 Such dreadfull fear on me doth fall,
that I therewith do quake:
Such horror whelmeth me withall,
that I no shift can make.

7 But I did say, Who will give me
the swift and pleasant wings
Of some fair dove, that I may flie,
and rest me from these things?

8 Lo, then I would go far away,
to flie I would not cease:
And I would hide my self, and stay
in some great wilderness.

9 I would be gone in all the haste,
and not abide behinde:
That I were quit and overpast
these blasts of boisterous winde.

10 Divide them, Lord, and from them pull
their devilish double tongue:

For I have spide their citie full
of rapine, strife, and wrong.

11 Which things both night & day throughout,
do close her as a wall:

In midst of her is mischief stout,
and sorrow eke withall.

12 Her inward parts are wicked plain,
her deeds are much too vile:

And in her streets there doth remain
all craftie fraud and guile.

The second part.

13 If that my foes did seek my shame,
I might it well abide;

From open enemies check and blame
some where I could me hide:

14 But thou it was, my fellow dear,
which friendship didst pretend,
And didst my secret counsel hear,
as my familiar friend:

15 With whom I had delight to talk
in secret and abroad,
And we together oft did walk
within the house of God.

16 Let death in haste upon them fall,
and send them quick to hell:
For mischief reigneth in the hall
and parlour where they dwell.

17 But I unto my God will crie,
to him for help I flee:
The Lord will help me by and by,
and he will succour me.

18 At morning, noon, and evening-tide,
unto the Lord I pray:
When I so instantly have cride,
he doth not say me nay.

19 To peace he shall restore me yet,
though war be now at hand:
Although the number be full great
that would against me stand.

20 The Lord that first and last doth reign,
both now and evermore,
Will hear when I to him complain,
and punish them full sore.

21 For sure there is no hope that they
to turn will once accord:
For why? they will not God obey,
nor yet do feare the Lord.

22 Upon their friends they laid their hands
which were in covenant knit:
Of friendship to neglect the bands
they pass or care no whit.

23 While they have war within their hearts,
as butter are their words:
Although their words were smooth as oyl,
they cut as sharp as swords.

24 Cast thou thy care upon the Lord,
and he shall nourtish thee:

For in no wise will he accord
the just in thrall to see.

25 But God shall cast them deep in pit
that thirst for bloud always:

He will no guilefull man permit
to live out half his days.

26 Though such be quite destroy'd and gone,
in thee, O Lord, I trust:

I shall depend thy grace upon,
with all my heart and lust.

Miserere mei. Psal. lvi. 7. H.

HAve mercie, Lord, on me, I pray,
for man would me devour:

He fighteth with me day by day,
and troubleth me each hour.

2 Mine enemies daily enterprise
to swallow me outright:

To fight against me many rise,
O thou most high of might.

3 When they would make me most afraid
with boasts and brags of pride:

I trust in thee alone for aid,
by thee I will abide.

4 Gods promise I do minde and praise,
O Lord, I stick to thee:

I do not care at all assaies
what flesh can do to me.

5 What things I either did or spake,
they wrest them at their will:

And all the counsel that they take
is how to work me ill.

6 They all consent themselves to hide,
close watch for me to lay:

They spie my paths, and snares have tide
to take my life away.

7 Shall they thus scape on mischief set?
thou God on them wilt frown:

For in his wrath he doth not let
to throw whole kingdoms down.

8 Thou seest how oft they made me flee,
and on my tears dost look:

Reserve them in a glasse by thee,
and write them in thy book.

9 When I do call upon thy name,
my foes away do start:

I well perceive it by the same,
that God doth take my part.

10 I glorie in the word of God,
to praise it I accord:

With joy I will declare abroad
the promise of the Lord:

11 I trust in God, and yet I say,
as I before began,

The Lord he is my help and stay,
I do not care for man.

12 I will perform with heart so free,
to God my vows always:

And I, O Lord, all times to thee
will offer thanks and praise.

13 My soul from death thou dost defend,
and keep'st my feet upright:

That I before thee may ascend
with such as live in light.

Miserere mei. Psal. lvii. 7. H.

Take pitie for thy promise sake,
have mercy, Lord, on me:
For why? my soul doth her betake
unto the help of thee.

2 Within the shadow of thy wings
I set my self full fast,
Till mischief, malice, and like things
be gone and overpast.

3 I call upon the God most high,
to whom I stick and stand:
I mean the God that will stand by
the cause I have in hand.

4 From heaven he hath sent his aid,
to save me from their spight,
That to devour me have assai'd;
his mercie, truth, and might.

5 I lead my life with lions fell,
all set on wrath and ire:
And with such wicked men I dwell,
that fret like flames of fire.
6 Their teeth are spears and arrows long
as sharp as I have seen:
They wound and cut with their quick tongue
like swords and weapons keen.

7 Set up, and shew thy self, O God,
above the heavens bright:
Exalt thy praise on earth abroad,
thy majestic and might.

8 They lay their net and do prepare
a privie cave and pit:
Wherein they think my soul to snare,
but they are fall'n in it.

9 My heart is set to laud the Lord,
in him to joy always:
My heart, I say, doth well accord
to sing his laud and praise.

10 Awake, my joy, awake, I say,
my lute, my harp, and string:
For I my self before the day
will rise, rejoyce, and sing.

11 Among the people I will tell
the goodness of my God,
And shew his praise that doth excell,
in heathen lands abroad,

12 His mercie doth extend as far
as heavens all are high:
His truth as high as any star
that shineth in the skie.

13 Set forth and shew thy self, O God,
above the heavens bright:
Extoll thy praise on earth abroad,
thy majestic and might.

Si verè utique. Psal. lviii. 7. H.

Ye rulers that are put in trust,
to judge of wrong and right,
Be all your judgements true and just,
not knowing meed or might?

2 Nay, in your hearts ye mark and muse
in mischief to consent,
And where ye should true justice use,
your hands to bribes are bent.

3 The wicked sort from their birth-day
have erred on this wise:
And from their mothers womb alway
have used craft and lies.

4 In them the poyson and the breath
of serpents do appear:
Yea, like the adder that is deaf,
and fast doth stop her ear,

5 Because she will not hear the voice
of one that charmeth well:
No though he were the chief of choice,
and did therein excell.

6 O God, break thou their teeth at once
within their mouthes throughout:
The tusks that in their great jaw-bones
like lions whelps hang out.

7 Let them consume away and waste,
as water runs forth right:
The shafts that they do shoot in haste,
let them be broke in flight.

8 As snails do waste within the shell,
and unto slime do run:
As one before his time that fell,
and never saw the sun.

9 Before the thorns that now are young,
to bushes big shall grow:
The storms of anger waxing strong
shall take them ere they know.

10 The just shall joy, it doth them good
that God doth vengeance take:
And they shall wash their feet in bloud
of them that him forsake.

11 Then shall the world shew forth and tell,
that good men have reward:
And that a God on earth doth dwell,
that justice doth regard.

Eripe me. Psal. lix. 7. H.

Send aid and save me from my foes,
O Lord, I pray to thee:

Defend

Defend and keep me from all those
that rise and strive with me.

2 O Lord, preserve me from those men,
whose doings are not good:
And set me sure and safe from them
that thirst still after blood.

3 For lo, they wait my soul to take,
they rage against me still:
Yea, for no fault that I did make,
I never did them ill.

4 They run and do themselves prepare,
when I no whit offend:
Arise and save me from their snare,
and see what they intend.

5 O Lord of hosts of Israel,
arise and strike all lands:
And pitie none that do rebell,
and in their mischiefs stands.

6 At night they stir and seek about,
as hounds they howl and grin:
And all the citie clean throughout,
from place to place they run.

7 They speak of me with mouth alway,
but in their lips are swords:
They greed my death, and then would say,
What? none doth hear our words.

8 But Lord, thou hast their ways espide,
and laught thereat apace:
The heathen folk thou dost deride,
and mock them to their face.

9 The strength that doth our foes withstand,
O Lord, doth come from thee:
My God he is my help at hand,
a fort of fence to me.

10 The Lord to me doth shew his grace
in great abundance still:
That I may see my foes in case
such as my heart doth will.

The second part.

11 Destroy them not at once, O Lord,
lest it from minde do fall:
But with thy strength drive them abroad,
and so consume them all.

12 For their ill words and truthles tongue
confound them in their pride:
Their wicked oaths with lies and wrong
let all the world deride.

13 Consume them in thy wrath, O Lord,
that nought of them remain:
That men may know throughout the world
that Jacobs God doth reign.

14 At evening they return apace,
as dogs they grin and crie:
Throughout the streets in everie place
they run about and spie.

15 They seek about for meat, I say,
but let them not be fed:

Nor finde a house wherein they may
be bold to put their head.

16 But I will shew thy strength abroad,
thy goodnes I will praise:
For thou art my defence and God
at need in all assaies.

17 Thou art my strength, thou hast me staid,
O Lord, I sing to thee:
Thou art my fort, my fence and aid,
a loving God to me.

Dem repulisti. Psal. lx. 7. H.

O Lord, thou didst us clean forsake,
and scatteredst us abroad:
Such great displeasure thou didst take;
return to us, O God.

2 Thy might did move the land so sore,
that it in sunder brake:
The hurt thereof, O Lord, restore,
for it doth bow and quake.

3 With heavie chance thou plaguest thus
the people that are thine:
And thou hast given unto us
a drink of deadly wine.

4 But yet to such as fear thy name
a banner thou didst shew:
That they may triumph in the same,
because thy word is true.

5 So that thy might may keep and save
thy folk that favour thee:
That they thy help at hand may have,
O Lord, grant this to me.

6 The Lord did speak from his own place,
this was his joyfull tale,
I will divide Sichem by pace,
and mete out Succoths vale.

7 Gilead is givento my hand,
Manasses mine beside:
Ephraim the strength of all my land,
my law doth Judah guide.

8 In Moab I will wash my feet,
over Edom throw my shoe:
And thou Palestine ought'st to seek
for favour me unto.

9 But who will bring me at this tide
unto the citie strong?
Or who to Edom will me guide,
so that I go not wrong?

10 Wilt thou not God, which didst forsake
thy folk, their land, and coasts?
Our wars in hand thou wouldst not take,
nor walk among our hosts.

11 Give aid, O Lord, and us relieve
from them that us disdain:

The help that hosts of men can give,
it is but all in vain.

12 But through our God we shall have might
to take great things in hand :
He will tread down and put to flight
all those that us withstand.

Exaudi Deus. Psal lxi. 7. H.

Regard, O Lord, for I complain,
and make my suit to thee :
Let not my words return in vain,
but give an ear to me.

2 From out the coasts and utmost parts
of all the earth abroad,
In grief and anguish of my heart
I crie to thee, O God.

3 Upon the rock of thy great power
my wofull minde repose :
Thou art my hope, my fort and tower,
my fence against my foes.

4 Within thy tent I lust to dwell,
for ever to endure :
Under thy wings I know right well
I shall be safe and sure.

5 The Lord doth my desire regard,
and doth fulfill the same :
With godly gifts will he reward
all those that fear his name.

6 The king shall he in health maintain,
and so prolong his days :
That he from age to age shall reign,
for evermore always.

7 That he may have a dwelling place
before the Lord for aye ;
O let thy mercie, truth, and grace,
defend him from decay.

8 Then shall I sing for ever still
with praise unto thy name :
That all my vows I may fulfill,
and daily pay the same.

Nonne Deo. Psal. lxii. 7. H.

MY soul to God shall give good heed,
and him alone attend :
For why? my health and hope to speed
doth whole on him depend.

2 For he alone is my defence,
my rock, my health, and aid :
He is my stay, that no pretence
shall make me much dismaid.

3 O wicked folk, how long will ye
use craft? sure ye must fall :
For as a rotten hedge ye be,
and like a tottering wall.

4 Whom God doth love ye seek always
to put him to the worse :
Ye love to lie, with mouth ye praise,
and yet your heart doth curse,

5 Yet still my soul doth whole depend
on God my chief desire :
From all ill feats me to defend
none but him I require.

6 He is my rock, my fort and tower,
my health is of his grace :
He doth support me, that no power
can move me out of place.

7 God is my glorie and my health,
my souls desire and lust :
My fort, my strength, my stay, my wealth,
God is my onely trust.

8 Oh, have your trust in him alway,
ye folk with one accord :
Pour out your hearts to him, and say,
Our trust is in the Lord.

9 The sons of men deceitfull are,
on balance but a sleight :
With things most vain do them compare,
for they can keep no weight.

10 Trust not in wrong, robbrie, nor stealth,
let vain delights be gone :
Though goods well got flow in with wealth,
set not your hearts thereon.

11 The Lord long since one thing did tell,
which here to minde I call :
He spake it oft, I heard it well,
That God alone doth all.

12 And that thou, Lord, art good and kinde,
thy mercie doth exceed :
So that all sorts with thee shall finde
according to their deed.

Deus, Deus meus. Psal. lxiii. T. S.

O God, my God, I watch betime
to come to thee in haste.
For why? my soul and bodie both
do thirst of thee to taste.
And in this barren wilderness
where waters there are none,
My flesh is parcht for thought of thee,
for thee I wish alone.

2 That I might see yet once again
thy glorie, strength and might,
As I was wont it to behold
within thy temple bright.

3 For why? thy mercies far surmount
this life and wretched days :
My lips therefore shall give to thee
due honour, laud and praise.

4 And whilst I live, I will not fail
to worship thee alway :
And in thy name I shall lift up
my hands when I do pray.

5 My soul is fill'd as with marrow,
which is both fat and sweet :
My mouth therefore shall sing such songs
as are for thee most meet.

- 6 When as in bed I think on thee,
and eke all the night-tide.
- 7 For under covert of thy wings,
thou art my joyfull guide.
- 8 My soul doth surely stick to thee,
thy right hand is my power:
- 9 And those that seek my soul to stroy,
them death shall soon devour.
- 10 The sword shall them devour each one,
their carcases shall feed
The hungrie foxes which do run
their prey to seek at need.
- 11 The king and all men shall rejoyce,
that do profess Gods word:
For liars mouthes shall then be stopt,
which have the truth disturb'd.

Exaudi Dem. Psal. lxxiv. J. H.

- O** Lord, unto my voice give ear,
with plaint when I do pray:
And rid my life and soul from fear
of foes that threat to slay.
- 2 Defend me from that sort of men
which in deceit do lurk:
And from the frowning face of them
that all ill feats do work.
 - 3 Who whet their tongues, as we have seen
men whet and sharp their swords:
They shoot abroad their arrows keen,
I mean most bitter words.
 - 4 With privie sleights shoot they their shaft,
the upright man to hit:
The just unwares to strike by craft,
they care or fear no whit.
 - 5 A wicked work they have decreed,
in counsel thus they crie,
To use deceit let us not dread,
what? who can it espie?
 - 6 What way to hurt they talk and muse
all times within their heart:
They all consult what feats to use,
each doth invent his part.
 - 7 But yet all this shall not prevail;
when they think least upon,
God with his dart shall sure assail
and wound them every one.
 - 8 Their crafts and their ill tongues withall
shall work themselves such blame,
That they which then behold their fall
shall wonder at the same.
 - 9 Then all that see shall know right well
that God the thing hath wrought,
And praise his wittie works, and tell
what he to pass hath brought.
 - 10 Yet shall the just in God rejoyce,
still trusting in his might:
So shall they joy with minde and voice,
whose hearts are pure and right.

Te decet hymnus. Psal. lxxv. J. H.

- T**hy praise alone, O Lord, doth reign
in Sion thine own hill:
Their vows to thee they do maintain,
and their behests fulfill.
- 2 For that thou dost their prayers hear,
and dost thereto agree:
The people all both far and near
with trust shall come to thee.
 - 3 Our wicked life so far exceeds,
that we shall fall therein:
But, Lord, forgive our great misdeeds,
and purge us from our sin.
 - 4 The man is blest whom thou dost choose
within thy courts to dwell:
Thy house and temple he shall use,
with pleasures that excell.
 - 5 Of thy great justice hear us, God,
our health of thee doth rise:
The hope of all the earth abroad,
and the sea-coasts likewise.
 - 6 With strength thou art beset about,
and compass with thy power:
Thou mak'st the mountains strong and stout,
to stand in every shower.
 - 7 The swelling seas thou dost assuage,
and make their streams full still:
Thou dost restrain the peoples rage,
and rule them at thy will.
 - 8 The folk that dwell full far on earth
shall dread thy signes to see,
Which morn and even in great mirth
do pass with praise to thee.
 - 9 When that the earth is chapt and drie,
and thirsteth more and more,
Then with thy drops thou dost applie,
and much increase her store.
 - 10 The floud of God doth overflow,
and so doth cause to spring
The seed and corn which men do sow,
for he doth guide the thing.
 - 11 With wet thou dost her furrows fill,
whereby her clods do fall:
Thy drops on her thou dost distill,
and blest her fruit withall.
 - 12 Thou deckst the earth of thy good grace
with fair and pleasant crop:
Thy clouds distill their dew apace,
great plentie they do drop.
 - 13 Whereby the desert shall begin
full great increase to bring:
The little hills shall joy therein,
much fruit in them shall spring.
 - 14 In places plain the flock shall feed,
and cover all the earth:
The vales with corn, shall so exceed,
that men shall sing for mirth.

Fubilate Deo. Psal. lxvi. T. S.

- Y**E men on earth, in God rejoyce,
with praise set forth his name :
Extoll his might with heart and voice,
give glorie to the same.
- 2 How wonderfull, O Lord, say ye,
in all thy works thou art !
Thy foes for fear shall seek to thee
full sore against their heart.
- 3 All men that dwell the earth throughout,
shall praise the name of God :
The laud thereof the world about
is shew'd and set abroad.
- 4 All folk, come forth, behold and see
what things the Lord hath wrought :
Mark well the wondrous works that he
for man to pass hath brought.
- 5 He laid the sea like heaps on high,
therein a way they had
On foot to pass both fair and drie,
whereof their hearts were glad.
- 6 His might doth rule the world alway,
his eyes all things behold :
All such as would him disobey,
by him shall be controld.
- 7 Ye people, give unto our God
due laud and thanks always :
With joyfull voice declare abroad,
and sing unto his praise :
- 8 Which doth endue our soul with life,
and it preserve withall :
He stays our feet so that no strife
can make us slip or fall.
- 9 The Lord doth prove our deeds with fire,
if that they will abide :
As workmen do when they desire
to have their metals tride.
- 10 Although thou suffer us so long
in prison to be cast,
And their with chains and setters strong
to lie in bondage fast:

The second part.

- 11 Although, I say, thou suffer men
on us to ride and reign :
Though we through fire and water run,
of very grief and pain :
- 12 Yet sure thou dost of thy good grace
dispose it to the best :
And bring us out into a place,
to live in wealth and rest.
- 13 Unto thy house resort will I
to offer and to pray,
And there I will my self applie
my vows to thee to pay.
- 14 The vows that with my mouth I spake
in all my grief and smart :

The vows, I say, which I did make
in dolour of my heart.

- 15 Burnt-offerings I will give to thee
of oxen fat and rams :
Yea, this my sacrifice shall be
of bullocks, goats, and lambs.
- 16 Come forth and hearken here full soon,
all ye that fear the Lord :
What he for my poor soul hath done,
to you I will record.
- 17 Full oft I call to minde his grace,
this mouth to him doth crie :
And thou my tongue make speed apace
to praise him by and by.
- 18 But if I feel my heart within
in wicked works rejoyce :
Or if I have delight to sin,
God will not hear my voice.
- 19 But surely God my voice hath heard,
and what I do require :
My prayer he doth well regard,
and granteth my desire.
- 20 All praise to him that hath not put
nor cast me out of minde :
Nor yet his mercie from me shut,
which I do ever finde.

Deus misereatur. Psal. lxvii. 3. H.

- H**Ave mercie on us, Lord,
and grant to us thy grace :
To inew to us do thou accord
the brightness of thy face ;
- 2 That all the earth may know
the way to godlie wealth :
And all the nations on a row
may see thy saving health.
- 3 Let all the world, O God,
give praise unto thy name :
O let the people all abroad
extoll and laud the same.
- 4 Throughout the world so wide
let all rejoyce with mirth :
For thou with truth and right dost guide
the nations of the earth.
- 5 Let all the world, O God,
give praise unto thy name :
O let the people all abroad
extoll and laud the same.
- 6 Then shall the earth increase,
great store of fruit shall fall,
And then our God the God of peace
shall bless us eke withall.
- 7 God shall us bless, I say,
and then both far and near,
The folk throughout the earth alway
of him shall stand in fear.

Exurgat Deus. Psal. lxxviii. T. S.

- L** Et God arise, and then his foes
will turn themselves to flight:
His enemies then will run abroad,
and scatter out of sight.
- 2 And as the fire doth melt the wax,
and winde blows smoke away:
So in the presence of the Lord,
the wicked shall decay.
- 3 But righteous men before the Lord
shall heartily rejoyce:
They shall be glad and merrie all,
and chearfull in their voice.
- 4 Sing praise, sing praise unto the Lord,
who rideth on the skie:
Extoll the name of Jah our God,
and him do magnifie.
- 5 The same is he that is above
within his holie place,
That father is of fatherless,
and judge of widows case.
- 6 Houses he gives and issue both
unto the comfortless:
He bringeth bondmen out of thrall,
and rebels to distress.
- 7 When thou didst march before thy folk
th' Egyptians from among,
And broughtst them through the wilderness
which was both wide and long:
- 8 The earth did quake, the rain pour'd down,
heard were great claps of thunder;
The mount Sinai shook in such sort,
as it would break in sunder.
- 9 Thine heritage with drops of rain
abundantly was washt:
And if so be it barren waxt,
by thee it was refresh't.
- 10 Thy chosen flock doth there remain,
thou hast prepar'd that place:
And for the poor thou dost provide,
of thine especial grace.

The second part.

- 11 God will give women causes just
to magnifie his name,
When as his people triumphs make,
and purchase bruit and fame.
- 12 For puissant kings for all their power,
shall flee and take the soile,
And women which remain at home
shall help to part the spoile.
- 13 And though ye were as black as pots,
your hue shall pass the dove,
Whose wings and feathers seem to have
silver and gold above.
- 14 When in this land God shall triumph
o're kings both high and low:

- Then shall it be like Salmon hill,
as white as any snow.
- 15 Though Basan be a fruitfull hill,
and in height others pass:
Yet Sion Gods most holie hill
doth far excell in grace,
- 16 Why brag ye thus ye hills most high,
and leap for pride together?
The hill of Sion God doth love,
and there will dwell for ever.
- 17 Gods armie is two millions
of warriours good and strong:
The Lord also in Sinai
is present them among.
- 18 Thou didst, O Lord, ascend on high,
and captives ledst them all,
Which in times past thy chosen flock
in bondage kept and thrall.
- Thou mad'st them tribute for to pay;
and such as did repine
Thou didst subdue, that they might dwell
in thy temple divine.
- 19 Now praised be the Lord, for that
he pours on us such grace:
From day to day he is the God
of our health and solace.

The third part.

- 20 He is the God from whom alone
salvation cometh plain:
He is the God by whom we scape
all dangers, death, and pain.
- 21 Thus God will wound his enemies head,
and break the hairie scalp
Of those that in their wickedness
continually do walk.
- 22 From Basan will I bring, said he,
my people and my sheep:
And all mine own as I have done,
from dangers of the deep.
- 23 And make them dip their feet in bloud
of those that hate my name:
And dogs shall have their tongues embrew'd
with licking of the same.
- 24 All men may see how thou, O God,
thine enemies dost deface:
And how thou goest as God and King
into thine holy place.
- 25 The fingers go before with joy,
the minstrels follow after:
And in the midst the damsels play
with timbrel and with taber.
- 26 Now in the congregation,
O Israel, praise the Lord:
And Jacobs whole posteritie
give thanks with one accord.
- 27 Their chief was little Benjamin,
but Judah made their host,

46
With Zabulon and Nephthalim,
which dwelt about their coast.

28 As God hath given power to thee,
so, Lord, make firm and sure
The thing that thou hast wrought in us,
for ever to endure.

29 And in thy temple gifts will we
give unto thee, O Lord,
For thine unto Jerusalem
sure promise made by word.

The fourth part.

Yea, and strange kings to us subdu'd
shall do like in those days:

I mean to thee they shall present
their gifts of laud and praise.

30 He shall destroy the spear-mens ranks,
the calves and bulls of might:
And cause them tribute pay, and daunt
all such as love to fight.

31 Then shall the lords of Egypt come,
and presents with them bring: (hands
The Moors most black shall stretch their
unto their Lord and King,

32 Therefore, ye kingdoms of the earth,
[give praise unto the Lord:
Sing psalms to God with one consent;
thereto let all accord.

33 Who though he ride and ever hath
above the heavens bright:

Yet by the fearfull thunderclaps
men may well know his might.

34 Therefore the strength of Israel
ascribe to God on high,
Whose might and power doth far extend
above the cloudie skie.

35 O God, thy holiness and power
is dread for evermore:
The God of Israel gives us strength,
praised be God therefore.

Saluum me fac. Psal. lxxix. 7. H.

SAve me, O God, and that with speed,
the waters flow full fast:
So nigh my soul do they proceed,
that I am fore agast.

2 I stick full deep in mire and clay,
whereas I feel no ground:
I fall into such floods, I say,
that I am like be drown'd.

3 With crying oft I faint and quail,
my throat is hoarse and drie:
With looking up my sight doth fail,
for help to God on high.

4 My foes that guiltless do oppress
my soul, with hate are led:
In number sure they are no less
then hairs are on my head.

5 Though for no cause they vex me sore,
they prosper and are glad:
They do compell me to restore
the things I never had.

6 What I have done for want of wit,
thou, Lord, all times canst tell:
And all the fautes that I commit
to thee are known full well.

7 O God of hosts, defend and stay
all those that trust in thee:
Let no man doubt or shrink away
for ought that chanceth me.

8 It is for thee and for thy sake
that I do bear this blame:
In spite of thee they would me make
to hide my face for shame.

9 My mothers sons, my brethren all
forsake me on a row:
And as a stranger they me call,
my face they will not know.

10 Unto thy house such zeal I bear,
that it doth pine me much:
Their checks and taunts at thee to hear,
my very heart doth grutch.

The second part.

11 Though I do fast, my flesh to chaste,
yea, if I weep and moan:
Yet in my teeth this gear is cast,
they pass not thereupon.

12 If I for grief and pain of heart
in sackcloth use to walk,
Then they anon will it pervert,
thereof they jest and talk.

13 Both high and low, and all the throng
that sit within the gate,
They have me ever in their tongue,
of me they talk and prate.

14 The drunkards which in wine delight,
it is their chief pastime
To seek which way to work me spight;
of me they sing and rhyme.

15 But thee the while, O Lord, I pray,
that when it pleaseth thee,
For thy great truth thou wilt alway
send down thy aid to me.

16 Pluck thou my feet out of the mire,
from drowning do me keep:
From such as ow me wrath and ire,
and from the waters deep.

17 Lest with the waves I should be drown'd,
and depth my soul devour,
And that the pit should me confound,
and shut me in her power.

18 O Lord of hosts, to me give ear,
as thou art good and kinde:
And as thy mercie is most dear,
Lord, have me in thy minde.

19 And do not from thy servant hide
nor turn thy face away :

I am opprest on every side,
in haste give ear, I say.

20 O Lord, unto my soul draw nigh,
the same with aid repose :

Because of their great tyrannic,
acquit me from my foes.

The third part.

21 That I abide rebuke and shame
thou knowst and thou canst tell :

For those that seek and work the same,
thou seest them all full well.

22 When they with brags do break my heart
I seek for help anon :

But finde no friends to ease my smart,
to comfort me not one.

23 But in my meat they gave me gall,
too cruel for to think :

And gave me in my thirst withall
strong vineger to drink.

24 Lord, turn their table to a snare,
to take themselves therein :

And when they think full well to fare,
then trap them in the gin.

25 And let their eyes be dark and blinde,
that they may nothing see :

Bow down their backs, and do them binde,
in thraldome for to be.

26 Pour out thy wrath as hot as fire,
that it on them may fall :

Let thy displeasure in thine ire
take hold upon them all.

27 As deserts drie their house disgrace,
their off-spring eke expell :

That none thereof possess their place,
nor in their tents do dwell.

28 If thou dost strike the man to tame,
on him they lay full sore :

And if that thou do wound the same,
they seek to hurt him more.

29 Then let them heap up mischief still,
(sith they are all pervert)

That of thy favour and good will
they never have a part.

30 And raise them clean out of thy book
of life, of hope, of trust :

That for their names they never look
in number of the just.

The fourth part.

1 Though I, O Lord, with wo and grief
have been full sore opprest :

Thy help shall give me such relief,
that all shall be redrest.

2 That I may give thy name the praise,
and shew it with a song :

will extoll the same always
with heartie thanks among.

33 Which is more pleasant unto thee,
(such minde thy grace hath born)

Then either ox or calf can be,
that hath both hoof and horn.

34 When simple folk do this behold,
it shall rejoyce them sure :

All ye that seek the Lord, behold,
your life for aye shall dure.

35 For why? the Lord of hosts doth hear
the poor when they complain :

His prisoners are to him full dear,
he doth them not disdain.

36 Wherefore the skie and earth below,
the sea with floud and stream ;

His praise they shall declare and show,
with all that live in them.

37 For sure our God will Sion save,
and Juda's cities build :

38 Much folk possession there shall have,
her streets shall all be fill'd.

His servants seed shall keep the same
all ages out of minde :

39 And there all they that love his name,
a dwelling-place shall finde,

Deus in adiutorium. Psal. lxx. 7. H.

O God, to me take heed,
of help I thee require :

O Lord of hosts, with haste and speed
help, help, I thee desire.

2 With shame confound them all
that seek my soul to spill :

Rebuke them back with blame to fall
that think and wish me ill.

3 Confound them that applie
and seek to work me shame :

And at my harm do laugh, and crie,
so, so, there goes the game.

4 But let them joyfull be
in thee with joy and wealth,
Which onely trust and seek to thee,
and to thy saving health.

5 That they may say always
in mirth and one accord,
All glorie, honour, laud and praise
be given to thee, O Lord.

6 But I am weak and poor ;
come Lord, thine aid I lack :

Thou art my stay and help, therefore
make speed and be not slack.

In te, Domine. Psal. lxxi. 7. H.

MY Lord my God, in all distress
my hope is whole in thee :

Then let no shame my soul opprest,
nor once take hold on me.

2 As thou art just, defend me, Lord,
and rid me out of dread :

45
With Zabulon and Nephthalim,
which dwelt about their coast.

28 As God hath given power to thee,
so, Lord, make firm and sure
The thing that thou hast wrought in us,
for ever to endure.

29 And in thy temple gifts will we
give unto thee, O Lord,
For thine unto Jerusalem
sure promise made by word.

The fourth part.

Yea, and strange kings to us subdu'd
shall do like in those days:

I mean to thee they shall present
their gifts of laud and praise.

30 He shall destroy the spear-mens ranks,
the calves and bulls of might:
And cause them tribute pay, and daunt
all such as love to fight.

31 Then shall the lords of Egypt come,
and presents with them bring: (hands
The Moors most black shall stretch their
unto their Lord and King,

32 Therefore, ye kingdoms of the earth,
[give praise unto the Lord:

Sing psalms to God with one consent;
thereto let all accord.

33 Who though he ride and ever hath
above the heavens bright:

Yet by the fearfull thunderclaps
men may well know his might.

34 Therefore the strength of Israel
ascribe to God on high,

Whose might and power doth far extend
above the cloudie skie.

35 O God, thy holiness and power
is dread for evermore:

The God of Israel gives us strength,
praised be God therefore.

Saluum me fac. Psal. lxi. 7. H.

SAve me, O God, and that with speed,
the waters flow full fast:
So nigh my soul do they proceed,
that I am fore agast.

2 I stick full deep in mire and clay,
whereas I feel no ground:

I fall into such floods, I say,
that I am like be drown'd.

3 With crying oft I faint and quail,
my throat is hoarse and drie:

With looking up my sight doth fail,
for help to God on high.

4 My foes that guiltless do oppress
my soul, with hate are led:

In number sure they are no less
then hairs are on my head.

5 Though for no cause they vex me sore,
they prosper and are glad:

They do compell me to restore
the things I never had.

6 What I have done for want of wit,
thou, Lord, all times canst tell:

And all the faults that I commit
to thee are known full well.

7 O God of hosts, defend and stay
all those that trust in thee:

Let no man doubt or shrink away
for ought that chanceth me.

8 It is for thee and for thy sake
that I do bear this blame:

In spight of thee they would me make
to hide my face for shame.

9 My mothers sons, my brethren all
forsake me on a row:

And as a stranger they me call,
my face they will not know.

10 Unto thy house such zeal I bear,
that it doth pine me much:

Their checks and taunts at thee to hear,
my very heart doth grutch.

The second part.

11 Though I do fast, my flesh to chaste,
yea, if I weep and moan:

Yet in my teeth this gear is cast,
they pass not thereupon.

12 If I for grief and pain of heart
in sackcloth use to walk,

Then they anon will it pervert,
thereof they jest and talk.

13 Both high and low, and all the throng
that sit within the gate,

They have me ever in their tongue,
of me they talk and prate.

14 The drunkards which in wine delight,
it is their chief pastime

To seek which way to work me spight;
of me they sing and rhyme.

15 But thee the while, O Lord, I pray,
that when it pleaseth thee,

For thy great truth thou wilt alway
send down thy aid to me.

16 Pluck thou my feet out of the mire,
from drowning do me keep:

From such as ow me wrath and ire,
and from the waters deep.

17 Lest with the waves I should be drown'd,
and depth my soul devour,

And that the pit should me confound,
and shut me in her power.

18 O Lord of hosts, to me give ear,
as thou art good and kinde:

And as thy mercie is most dear,
Lord, have me in thy minde.

19 And do not from thy ſervant hide
nor turn thy face away :
I am oppreſt on every ſide,
in haſte give ear, I ſay.

20 O Lord, unto my ſoul draw nigh,
the ſame with aid reſoſe :
Because of their great tyrannic,
acquitt me from my foes.

The third part.

21 That I abide rebuke and ſhame
thou knowſt and thou canſt tell :
For thoſe that ſeek and work the ſame,
thou ſeeſt them all full well.

22 When they with brags do break my heart
I ſeek for help anon :
But finde no friends to eaſe my ſmart,
to comfort me not one.

23 But in my meat they gave me gall,
too cruel for to think :
And gave me in my thirſt withall
ſtrong vinegar to drink.

24 Lord, turn their table to a ſnare,
to take themſelves therein :
And when they think full well to fare,
then trap them in the gin.

25 And let their eyes be dark and blinde,
that they may nothing ſee :
Bow down their backs, and do them binde,
in thraldome for to be.

26 Pour out thy wrath as hot as fire,
that it on them may fall :
Let thy diſpleaſure in thine ire
take hold upon them all.

27 As deſerts drie their houſe diſgrace,
their off-ſpring eke expell :
That none thereof poſſeſs their place,
nor in their tents do dwell.

28 If thou doſt ſtrike the man to tame,
on him they lay full ſore :
And if that thou do wound the ſame,
they ſeek to hurt him more.

29 Then let them heap up miſchief ſtill,
(ſith they are all pervert)
That of thy favour and good will
they never have a part.

30 And riſe them clean out of thy book
of life, of hope, of truſt :
That for their names they never look
in number of the juſt.

The fourth part.

31 Though I, O Lord, with wo and grief
have been full ſore oppreſt :
Thy help ſhall give me ſuch relief,
that all ſhall be redreſt.

32 That I may give thy name the praiſe,
and ſhew it with a ſong :
will extoll the ſame always
with heartie thanks among.

33 Which is more pleaſant unto thee,
(ſuch minde thy grace hath born)
Then either ox or calf can be,
that hath both hoof and horn.

34 When ſimple folk do this behold,
it ſhall rejoyce them ſure :
All ye that ſeek the Lord, behold,
your life for aye ſhall dure.

35 For why ? the Lord of hoſts doth hear
the poor when they complain :
His priſoners are to him full dear,
he doth them not diſdain.

36 Wherefore the ſkie and earth below,
the ſea with floud and ſtream ;
His praiſe they ſhall declare and ſhow,
with all that live in them.

37 For ſure our God will Sion ſave,
and Juda's cities build :

38 Much folk poſſeſſion there ſhall have,
her ſtreets ſhall all be fill'd.
His ſervants ſeed ſhall keep the ſame
all ages out of minde :

39 And there all they that love his name,
a dwelling-place ſhall finde,

Deus in adjutorium. Pſal. lxx. ƒ. H.

O God, to me take heed,
of help I thee require :
O Lord of hoſts, with haſte and ſpeed
help, help, I thee deſire.

2 With ſhame confound them all
that ſeek my ſoul to ſpill :
Rebuke them back with blame to fall
that think and with me ill.

3 Confound them that applie
and ſeek to work me ſhame :
And at my harm do laugh, and crie,
ſo, ſo, there goes the game.

4 But let them joyfull be
in thee with joy and wealth,
Which onely truſt and ſeek to thee,
and to thy ſaving health.

5 That they may ſay always
in mirth and one accord,
All glorie, honour, laud and praiſe
be given to thee, O Lord.

6 But I am weak and poor ;
come Lord, thine aid I lack :
Thou art my ſtay and help, therefore
make ſpeed and be not ſlack.

In te, Domine. Pſal. lxxi. ƒ. H.

MY Lord my God, in all diſtreſs
my hope is whole in thee :
Then let no ſhame my ſoul oppreſs,
nor once take hold on me.

2 As thou art juſt, defend me, Lord,
and rid me out of dread :

Give ear, and to my suit accord,
and send me help at need.

3 Be thou my rock, to whom I may
for aid all times resort:

Thy promise is to help alway,
thou art my fence and fort.

4 Save me, my God, from wicked men,
and from their strength and power:
From folk unjust and eke from them
that cruelly devour.

5 Thou art the stay wherein I trust,
thou, Lord of hosts, art he:
Yea, from my youth I had a lust
still to depend on thee.

6 Thou hast me kept ev'n from my birth,
and I through thee was born:
Wherefore I will thee praise with mirth,
both evening and at morn.

7 As to a monster seldome seen,
much folk about me throng:
But thou art now, and still hast been
my fence and aid so strong.

8 Wherefore my mouth no time shall lack
thy glorie and thy praise:
And eke my tongue shall not be slack
to honour thee always.

9 Refuse me not, O Lord, I say,
when age my limbs doth take:
And when my strength doth waste away,
do not my soul forsake.

10 Among themselves my foes enquire
to take me through deceit:
And they against me do conspire,
that for my soul laid wait.

The second part.

11 Lay hand and take him now, they said,
for God from him is gone:
Dispatch him quite, for to his aid
(I wis) there cometh none.

12 Do not absent thy self away,
O Lord, when need shall be:
But that in time of grief thou may
in haste give help to me.

13 With shame confound and overthrow
all those that seek my life:
Oppress them with rebuke also
that fain would work me strife.

14 But I will patiently abide
thy help at all assaies:
Still more and more, each time and tide,
I will set forth thy praise.

15 My mouth thy justice shall record,
that daily help doth send;
But of thy benefits, O Lord,
I know no count nor end.

16 Yet will I go and seek forth one,
with thy good help, O God:

The saving health of thee alone
to shew and set abroad.

17 For of my youth thou tookst the care,
and dost instruct me still:

Therefore thy wonders to declare
I have great minde and will:

18 And as in youth from wanton rage
thou didst me keep and stay:
Forsake me not unto mine age,
and till my head be gray.

The third part.

19 That I thy strength and might may show
to them that now be here:

And that our seed thy power may know
hereafter many a year.

20 O Lord, thy justice doth exceed
thy doings all may see:

Thy works are wonderfull indeed,
oh who is like to thee!

21 Thou mad'st me feel affliction sore,
and yet thou didst me save:

Yea, thou didst help, and me restore,
and tookst me from the grave.

22 And thou mine honour dost increase,
my dignitie maintain:

Yea, thou dost make all grief to cease,
and comfortst me again.

23 Therefore thy faithfulness to praise
I will with viol sing:

My harp shall sound thy praise always,
O Israels holy King.

24 My mouth will joy with pleasant voice
when I shall sing to thee:

And eke my soul will much rejoyce,
for thou hast made me free.

25 My tongue thy uprightness shall sound
and speak it daily still:

For grief and shame do them confound
that seek to work me ill.

Deus judicium. Psal. lxxii. 7. H.

Lord, give thy judgements to the king,
therein instruct him well:

And with his son that princely thing,
Lord, let thy justice dwell.

2 That he may govern uprightly,
and rule thy folk aright:

And so defend through equitie
the poor that have no might.

3 And let the mountains that are high
unto thy folk give peace:

And eke let little hills apply
in justice to increase.

4 That he may help the weak and poor,
with aid, and make them strong:

And eke destroy for evermore
all those that do them wrong.

5 And then from age to age shall they
regard and fear thy might :
So long as sun doth shine by day,
or else the moon by night.
6 Lord make the king unto the just,
like rain to fields new mown :
And like to drops that lay the dust,
and fresh the land new sown.
7 The just shall flourish in his time,
and all shall be at peace,
Untill the moon shall leave to prime,
waste, change, and to increase.
8 He shall be lord of sea and land,
from shore to shore throughout :
And from the fouds within the land,
through all the earth about.
9 The people that in deserts dwell
shall kneel to him full thick :
And all his enemies that rebell
the earth and dust shall lick.
10 The lords of all the isles thereby
great gifts to him shall bring :
The kings of Saba and Arabie
give many a costly thing.

The second part.

11 All kings shall seek with one accord
in his good grace to stand:
And all the people of the world
shall serve him at his hand.
12 For he the needie sort doth save
that unto him do call :
And eke the simple folk that have
no help of man at all.
13 He taketh pitie on the poor
that are with need oppress:
He doth preserve them evermore,
and bring their souls to rest.
14 He shall redeem their lives from dread,
from fraud, from wrong, from might :
And eke the blood that they shall bleed
is precious in his sight.
15 But he shall live, and they shall bring
to him of Saba's gold :
He shall be honoured as a king
and daily be extoll'd.
16 The mightie mountains of his land
of corn shall bear such throng,
That it like cedar-trees shall stand
in Libanus full long.
17 Their cities eke full well shall speed,
the fruits thereof shall pass:
In plentie it shall far exceed,
and spring as green as grasse.
18 For ever they shall praise his name
while that the sun is light:
And think them happie through the same,
all folk shall bleis his might.

19 Praise ye the Lord of hosts, and sing
to Israels God each one :
For he doth every wondrous thing,
yea he himself alone.
20 And blessed be his holy name
all times eternally :
That all the earth may praise the same,
amen, amen, say I.

Quam bonus Deus. Psal. lxxiii. T. S.

HOW ever it be, yet God is good
and kinde to Israel :
And to all such as safely keep
their conscience pure and well.
2 Yet like a fool I almost slip,
my feet began to slide :
And ere I wist, even at a pinch,
my steps awry 'gan glide.
3 For when I saw such foolish men,
I grudg'd and did disdain
That wicked men all things should have
without turmoil or pain.
4 They never suffer pangs nor grief,
as if death should them smite :
Their bodies are both stout and strong,
and ever in good plight.
5 And free from all adversitie
when other men be shent :
And with the rest they take no part
of plague or punishment.
6 Therefore presumption doth embrace
their necks as doth a chain ;
And are even wrapt as in a robe,
with rapine and disdain.
7 They are so fed that even for fat
their eyes oft-times out-start :
And as for worldly goods, they have
more then can wish their heart.
8 Their life is most licentious,
boasting much of the wrong
Which they have done to simple men,
and ever pride among.
9 The heavens and the living Lord
they spare not to blaspheme :
And prate they do of worldly things,
no wight they do esteem.
10 The people of God oft-times turn back
to see their prosperous state :
And almost drink the self-same cup,
and follow the same rate.

The second part.

11 How can it be that God, say they,
should know or understand
These worldly things, sith wicked men
be lords of sea and land ?
12 For we may see how wicked men
in riches still increase,

Rewarded well with worldly goods,
and live in rest and peace.

- 13 Then why do I from wickedness
my fantasie refrain,
And wash my hands with innocents,
and cleanse my heart in vain?
14 And suffer scourges every day,
as subject to all blame:
And every morning from my youth
sustain rebuke and shame?
15 And I had almost said as they,
misliking mine estate:
But that I should thy children judge
as folke unfortunate.
16 Then I bethought me how I might
this matter understand:
But yet the labour was too great
for me to take in hand:
17 Untill the time I went into
thine holy place, and then
I understood right perfectly
the end of all these men.
18 And namely, how thou settest them
upon a slippery place:
And at thy pleasure and thy will
thou dost them all deface.
19 Then all men muse at that strange sight,
to see how suddenly
They are destroy'd, dispatcht, consum'd,
and dead so horribly.
20 Much like a dream when one awakes,
so shall their wealth decay:
Their famous names in all mens sight
shall ebb and pass away.

The third part.

- 21 Yet thus my heart was grieved then
my minde was much oppress'd:
22 So fond was I and ignorant,
and in this point a beast.
23 Yet nevertheless by my right hand
thou hold'st me always fast:
24 And with thy counsel dost me guide
to glory at the last.
25 What thing is there that I can wish
but thee in heaven above?
And in the earth there is nothing
like thee that I can love.
26 My flesh and eke my heart doth fail,
but God doth fail me never:
For of my health God is the strength,
my portion eke for ever.
27 And lo, all such as thee forsake
thou shalt destroy each one:
And those that trust in any thing
saying in thee alone.
28 Therefore will I draw near to God,
and ever with him dwell:

In God alone I put my trust,
thy wonders I will tell.

Ut quid, Deus. Psal. lxxiv. J. H.

- Why art thou, Lord, so long from us
in all this danger deep?
Why doth thine anger kindle thus
at thine own pasture-sheep?
2 Lord, call the people to thy thought
which have been thine so long,
The which thou hast redeem'd and brought
from bondage fore and strong.
3 Have minde therefore and think upon,
remember it full well.
Thy pleasant place, thy mount Sion,
where thou wast wont to dwell.
4 Lift up thy feet and come in haste,
and all thy foes deface:
Which now at pleasure rob and waste
within thy holy place.
5 Amid thy congregations all,
thine enemies roar, O God:
They set as signes on every wall
their banners spaid abroad.
6 As men with axes hew down trees
that on the hills do grow:
So shine the bills and swords of these
within thy temple now.
7 The cieling saw'd, the carved boards,
the goodly graven stones,
With axes, hammers, bills, and swords
they beat them down at once.
8 Thy places they consume with flame,
and eke in all this toil,
The house appointed to thy name
they rase down to the soil.

- 9 And thus they say within their heart,
Dispatch them out of hand:
Then burnt they up in every part
Gods houses through the land.
10 Yet thou no signe of help dost send,
our prophets all are gone:
To tell when this our plague shall end
among us there is none.

- 11 When wilt thou, Lord, once end this shame
and cease thine enemies strong?
Shall they always blaspheme thy name,
and rail on thee so long?
12 Why dost thou draw thy hand aback,
and hide it in thy lap?
Oh pluck it out, and be not slack
to give thy foes a rap.

The second part.

- 13 O God, thou art our King and Lord,
and evermore hast been:
Yea, thy good grace throughout the world
for our good help hath seen.

- 14 The seas that are so deep and dead,
thy might did make them drie :
And thou didst break the serpents head,
that he therein did die :
- 15 Yea, thou didst break the heads so great
of whales that are so fell :
And gav'st them to the folk to eat
that in the deserts dwell.
- 16 Thou mad'st a spring with streams to rise
from rock both hand and high :
And eke thy hand hath made likewise
deep rivers to be drie.
- 17 Both day and eke the night are thine,
by thee they were begun :
Thou sett'st to serve us with their shine,
the light, and eke the sun.
- 18 Thou didst appoint the ends and coasts
of all the earth about :
Both summer heats, and winter frosts,
thy hand hath found them out.
- 19 Think on, O Lord, no time forget
thy foes that thee defame :
And how the foolish folk are set
to rail upon thy name.
- 20 O let no cruel beast devour
thy turtle that is true :
Forget not always in thy power
the poor that much do rue.
- 21 Regard thy covenant and behold,
thy foes possess the land :
All sad and dark, forworn and old
our realm as now doth stand.
- 22 Let not the simple go away,
nor yet return with shame :
But let the poor and needie ay
give praise unto thy name.
- 23 Rise, Lord, let be by thee maintain'd
the cause that is thine own :
Remember how that thou blasphem'd
art by the foolish one.
- 24 The voice forget not of thy foes,
for the presumption high
Is more and more increast of those
that hate thee spitefully.

Confitebimur tibi. Psal. lxxv. J. H.

UNto thee, God, will we give thanks,
we will give thanks to thee :
Sith thy name is so near, declare
thy wondrous works will we.

2 I will uprightly judge when get
convenient time I may :
The earth is weak and all therein,
but I her pillars stay.

3 I did to the mad people say,
deal not so furiously :
And unto the ungodly ones,
set not your horns on high.

- 4 I said unto them, Set not up
your raised horns on high :
And see that you do with stiff neck
not speak presumptuously.
- 5 For neither from the eastern parts,
nor from the western side,
Nor from forsaken wilderness,
promotion doth proceed.
- 6 For why ? the Lord our God he is
the righteous judge alone :
He putteth down the one, and sets
another in the throne.
- 7 For why ? a cup of mightie wine
is in the hand of God :
And all the mightie wine therein
himself doth pour abroad.
- 8 As for the lees and filthie dregs
that do remain of it,
The wicked of the earth shall drink
and suck them every whit.
- 9 But I will talk of God, I say,
of Jacobs God therefore :
And will nor cease to celebrate
his praise for evermore.
- 10 In slander break the horns of all
ungodly men will I :
But then the horns of righteous men
shall be exalted high.

Gloria Patri.

To Father, Son, and holy Ghost,
all glorie be therefore,
As in beginning was, is now,
and shall be evermore.

In Iudæa. Psal. lxxvi. J. H.

TO all that now in Jewry dwell
the Lord is clearly known :
His name is great in Israel :
a people of his own.

2 At Salem he his tents hath pight,
to tarry there a space :
In Sion eke he hath delight
to make his dwelling-place.

3 And there he brake both shaft and bowe,
the sword, the spear, and shield :
And brake the ray to overthrow
in battel on the field.

4 Thou art more worthy honour, Lord,
more might in thee doth lie,
Then in the strongest of the world,
that rob on mountain high.

5 But now the proud are spoil'd through thee
and they are fall'n on sleep :
Through men of war no help can be,
themselves they could not keep.

6 At thy rebuke, O Jacobs God,
when thou didst them reprove :
As half on sleep their chariots stood,
no horse-men once did move.

- 7 For thou art dreadfull, Lord, indeed,
what man the courage hath
To 'bide thy sight, and doth not dread
when thou art in thy wrath?
- 8 When thou dost make thy judgements heard
from heaven through the ground:
Then all the earth full sore afraid,
in silence shall be found.
- 9 And that when thou, O God, dost stand
in judgement for to speak,
To save th' afflicted of the land,
on earth that are full weak.
- 10 The fury that in man doth reign
shall turn unto thy praise:
Hereafter, Lord, do thou restrain
their wrath and threats always.
- 11 Make vows and pay them to our God,
ye folk that nigh him be:
Bring gifts all ye that dwell abroad,
for dreadfull sure is he.
- 12 For he doth take both life and might
from princes great of birth:
And full of terrour is his sight
to all the kings on earth.

Voce meâ. Psal. lxxvii. J. H.

- I** With my voice to God do crie,
with heart and hearty chear:
My voice to God I lift on high,
and he my suit doth hear.
- 2 In time of grief I sought to God,
by night no rest I took:
But stretcht my hands to him abroad,
my soul comfort forsook.
- 3 When I to think on God intend,
my trouble then is more:
I spake, but could not make an end,
my breath was stopt so fore.
- 4 Thou holdst mine eyes always from rest,
that I always awake:
With fear I am so sore opprest,
my speech doth me forsake.
- 5 The days of old in minde I cast,
and oft did think upon
The times and ages that are past
full many years ago.
- 6 By night my songs I call to minde,
once made thy praise to show:
And with my heart much talk I finde,
my spirits do search to know.
- 7 Will God, said I, at once for all
cast off his people thus,
So that henceforth no time he shall
be friendly unto us?
- 8 What? is his goodness clean decay'd
for ever and a day?
Or is his promise now delay'd
and doth his truth decay?

- 9 And will the Lord our God forget
his mercies manifold?
Or shall his wrath increase so hot,
his mercies to withhold?
- 10 At last I said, My weakness is
the cause of this mistrust:
Gods mighty hand can help all this,
and change it when he lust.

The second part.

- 11 I will regard and think upon
the working of the Lord:
Of all his wonders past and gone
I gladly will record.
- 12 Yea, all his works I will declare,
and what he did devise:
To tell his facts I will not spare,
and eke his counsel wise.
- 13 Thy works, O Lord, are all upright,
and holy all abroad:
What one hath strength to match the might
of thee, O Lord our God?
- 14 Thou art a God that dost forth show
thy wonders every hour:
And so dost make the people know
thy vertue and thy power.
- 15 And thine own folk thou dost defend
with strength and stretched arm:
The sons of Jacob that descend,
and Josephs seed from harm.
- 16 The waters, Lord, perceived thee,
the waters saw thee well:
And they for fear away did flee,
the depths on trembling fell.
- 17 The clouds that were both thick and black
did rain full plenteously:
The thunder in the air did crack,
thy shafts abroad did flie.
- 18 Thy thunder in the air was heard,
thy lightnings from above
With flashes great made men afraid,
the earth did quake and move.
- 19 Thy ways within the sea do lie,
thy paths in waters deep:
Yet none can there thy steps espie,
nor know thy paths to keep.
- 20 Thou ledst thy folk upon the land
as sheep on every side:
Through Moses and through Aarons hand
thou didst them safely guide.

Attendite populi. Psal. lxxviii. J. H.

- A**ttend my people to my law,
and to my words incline:
2 My mouth shall speak strange parables,
and sentences divine:
3 Which we our selves have heard & learn'd
even of our fathers old;
And which for our instruction
our fathers have us told.

4 Because we should not keep it close
from them that should come after :
Who should Gods power to their race praise,
and all his works of wonder.

5 To Jacob he commandment gave
how Israel should live,
Willing our fathers should the same
unto their children give.

6 That they and their posterity
that were not sprung uptho,
Should have the knowledge of the law,
and teach their seed also.

7 That they might have the better hope
in God that is above :
And not forget to keep his laws
and his precepts in love.

8 Not being as their fathers were,
rebellling in Gods fight :
And would not frame their wicked hearts
to know their God aright.

9 How went the people of Ephraim
their neighbours for to spoil :
Shooting their darts the day of war,
and yet they took the foil ?

10 For why ? they did not keep with God
the covenant that was made,
Nor yet would walk or lead their lives
according to his trade :

11 But put into oblivion
his counsell and his will,
And all his works most magnifick,
which he declared still.

The second part.

12 What wonders to our fore-fathers
did he himself disclose
In Egypt land within the field
that call'd is Thaneos ?

13 He did divide and cut the sea,
that they might pass at once :
And made the waters stand as still
as doth an heap of stones.

14 He led them secret in a cloud
by day when it was bright :
And in the night when dark it was,
with fire he gave them light.

15 He brake the rocks in wilderness,
and gave the people drink :
As plentiful as when the deeps
do flow up to the brink.

16 He drew out rivers out of rocks
that were both dry and hard,
Of such abundance, that no floods
to them may be compar'd.

17 Yet for all this against the Lord
their sin they did increase :
And stirred him that is most high
to wrath in wilderness.

18 They tempted God within their hearts,
like people of mistrust :
Requiring such a kinde of meat
as served to their lust :

19 Saying with murmuration
in their unfaithfulness,
What ? can this God prepare for us
a feast in wilderness.

20 Behold he strake the stony rock,
and floods forthwith did flow :
But can he now give to his folk
both bread and flesh also ?

21 When God heard this, he waxed wroth
with Jacob and his seed :
So did his indignation
on Israel proceed.

The third part.

22 Because they did not faithfully
believe, and hope that he
Could always help and succour them
in their necessity:

23 Wherefore he did command the clouds,
forthwith they brake in sunder,
24 and rain'd down manna for them to eat,
a food of mickle wonder.

25 When earthly men with angels food
were fed at their request.

26 He bad the east-winde blow away,
and brought in the south-west.

27 He rain'd down flesh as thick as dust,
and fowl as thick as sand.

28 Which he did cast amid the place
where all their tents did stand.

29 Then did they eat exceedingly,
and all men had their fills :
Yet more and more they did desire
to serve their lusts and wills.

30 But as the meat was in their mouthes,
his wrath upon them fell,

31 And slew the flower of all their youth
and choise of Israel.

32 Yet fell they to their wonted sin,
and still they did him grieve :
For all the wonders that he wrought,
they would him not believe.

33 Their days therefore he shortened,
and made their honour vain :
Their years did waste and pass away
with terrour and with pain.

34 But ever when he plagued them,
they sought him by and by,

35 Remembring that he was their strength,
their help and God most high.

36 Though in their mouthes they did but glose
and flatter with the Lord :
And with their tongues and in their hearts
dissembled every word.

The fourth part.

- 37 For why ? their hearts were nothing bent
to him nor to his trade :
Nor yet to keep or to perform
the covenant that was made.
- 38 Yet was he still so mercifull,
when they deserv'd to die,
That he forgave them their misdeeds,
and would not them destroy.
- Yea, many a time he turn'd his wrath,
and did himself advise :
And would not suffer all his whole
displeasure to arise.
- 39 Considering that they were but flesh,
and even as a winde
That passeth away and cannot well
return by his own kinde.
- 40 How oftentimes in wilderness
did they the Lord provoke !
How did they move and stir the Lord
to plague them with his stroke !
- 41 Yet did they turn again to sin,
and tempted God oftsoon,
Prescribing to the holy Lord
what things they would have done.
- 42 Not thinking of his hand and power,
nor of the day when he
Delivered them out of the hands
of the fierce enemy.
- 43 Nor how he wrought his miracles
(as they themselves beheld)
In Egypt, and the wonders that
he did in Zoan field.
- 44 Nor how he turned by his power
their waters into blood :
That no man might receive his drink
at river nor at flood.
- 45 Nor how he sent them swarms of flies,
which did them sore annoy :
And fill'd their countrey full of frogs,
which did their land destroy.

The fifth part.

- 46 Nor how he did commit their fruits
unto the caterpillar :
And all the labour of their hands
he gave to the grasshopper.
- 47 With hailstones he destroy'd their vines,
so that they were all lost :
And not so much as wilde fig-trees,
but he consum'd with frost.
- 48 And yet with hailstones once again
the Lord their cattel smote :
And all their flocks and herds likewise
with thunder-bolts full hot.
- 49 He cast upon them in his ire
and in his surie strong,

Displeasure, wrath, and evil spirits,
to trouble them among.

- 50 Then to his wrath he made a way,
and spared not the least :
But gave unto the pestilence
the man and eke the beast.
- 51 He strake also the first-born all
that up in Egypt came :
And all the chief of men and beasts
within the tents of Ham.
- 52 But as for all his own dear folk,
he did preserve and keep :
And carried them through wilderness,
even like a flock of sheep.
- 53 Without all fear both safe and sound
he brought them out of thrall :
Whereas their foes with rage of seas
were overwhelmed all.
- 54 And brought them out into the coasts
of his own holy land,
Even to the mount which he had got
by his strong arm and hand.
- 55 And there cast out the heathen folk,
and did their land divide :
And in their tents he set the tribes
of Israel to abide.

- 56 Yet for all this, their God most high
they stirr'd and tempted still,
And would not keep his testament,
nor yet obey his will.
- 57 But as their fathers turned back,
even so they went astray,
Much like a bowe that would not bend,
but slip and start away.

The sixth part.

- 58 And griev'd him with their hill-altars,
with offrings and with fire :
And with their idols vehemently
provoked him to ire.
- 59 Therewith his wrath began again
to kindle in his breast :
The naughtiness of Israel
he did so much detest.
- 60 Then he forsook the tabernacle
of Silo, where he was
Right conversant with earthly men,
even as his dwelling-place.
- 61 Then suffered he his might and power
in bondage for to stand,
And gave the honour of his ark
into his enemies hand.
- 62 And did commit them to the sword,
wroth with his heritage :
63 Their young men were devour'd with fire,
maids had no marriage.
- 64 And with the sword the priests also
did perish everie one ;

And not a widow left alive
their death for to bemoan.

65 And then the Lord began to wake
like one that slept a time,
And like a valiant man of war
refreshed after wine.

66 With emerods in the hinder parts
he strake his enemies all:
And put them then unto a shame
that was perpetual.

67 Then he the tent and tabernacle
of Joseph did refuse:
As for the tribe of Ephraim,
he would in no wise chuse:

68 But chose the tribe of Jehuda,
whereas he thought to dwell:
Even the noble mount Sion,
which he did love so well.

69 Whereas he did his temple build
both sumptuously and sure,
Like as the earth which he hath made
for ever to endure:

70 Then chose he David him to serve,
his people for to keep;
Whom he took up and brought away
even from the folds of sheep.

71 As he did follow th' ewes with young,
the Lord did him advance,
To feed his people Israel,
and his inheritance.

72 Thus David with a faithfull heart
his flock and charge did feed,
d prudently with all his power
did govern them indeed.

Deus, venerunt. Psal. lxxix. 7. H.

O God, the Gentiles do invade
thine heritage to spoil:
Jerusalem an heap is made,
thy temple they defile.

2 The bodies of thy saints most dear
abroad to birds they cast:
The flesh of them that do thee fear
the beasts devour and waste.

3 Their blood throughout Jerusalem
as water spilt they have:
So that there is not one of them,
to lay their dead in grave.

4 Thus are we made a laughing-stock
almost the world throughout:
The enemies at us jest and mock
which dwell our coasts about.

5 Wilt thou, O Lord, thus in thine ire
against us ever fume,
And shew thy wrath as hot as fire,
thy folk for to consume?

6 Upon those people pour the same
which did thee never know:

All realms which call not on thy name
consume and overthrow.

7 For they have got the upper hand,
and Jacobs seed destroy'd:
His habitation and his land
they have left waste and void.

8 Bear not in minde our former faults,
with speed some pitie shew:
And aid us, Lord, in all assaults,
for we are weak and low.

The second part.

9 O God, that giv'st all health and grace,
on us declare the same:

Weigh not our works, our sins deface
for honour of thy name.

10 Why shall the wicked still alway,
to us as people dumb,
In thy reproach rejoyce, and say,
Where is their God become?

Require, O Lord, as thou seest good,
before our eyes in sight,
Of all these folk thy servants bloud
which they spilt in despight.

11 Receive into thy sight in haste
the clamours, grief, and wrong
Of such as are in prison cait,
sustaining irons strong.

Thy force and strength to celebrate,
Lord, set them out of band
Which unto death are destinate,
and in their enemies hand.

12 The nations which have been so bold
as to blaspheme thy name,
Into their laps with seven-fold
repay again the same.

13 So we thy flock and pasture-sheep
will praise thee evermore,
And teach all ages for to keep
for thee like praise in store.

Qui regis Israel. Psal. lxxx. 7. H.

THOU Herd that Israel dost keep,
give ear and take good heed:
Which ledest Joseph like a sheep,
and dost him watch and feed.

2 Thou, Lord, I say, whose seat is set
on cherubims most bright,
Shew forth thy self and do not let,
send down thy beams of light.

3 Before Ephraim and Benjamin,
Manasses eke likewise,
To shew thy power do thou begin;
come help us, Lord, arise.

4 Direct our hearts unto thy grace,
convert us, Lord, to thee:
Shew us the brightness of thy face,
and then full safe are we.

- 5 Lord God of hosts of Israel,
how long wilt thou, (I say)
Against thy folk in anger swell,
and wilt not hear them pray?
6 Thou dost them feed with sorrows deep
their bread with tears they eat,
And drink the tears that they do weep,
in measure full and great.
7 Thou hast us made a very strife
to those that dwell about:
And that our foes do love alive,
they laugh and jest it out.
8 O take us, Lord unto thy grace,
convert our hearts to thee:
Shew forth to us thy joyfull face,
and we full safe shall be.
9 From Egypt where it grew not well
thou broughtst a vine full dear:
The heathen folk thou didst expell,
and thou didst plant it there.
10 Thou didst prepare for it a place,
and set her roots full fast:
That it did grow and spring apace,
and fill'd the land at last.

The second part.

- 11 The hills were covered round about
with shade, that from it came,
And eke the cedars strong and stout,
with branches of the same.
12 Why then didst thou her walls destroy?
her hedge pluckt up thou hast:
That all the folk that pass thereby
thy vine may spoil and waste.
13 The boar out of the wood so wilde
doth dig and root it out:
The furious beasts out of the field
devour it all about.
14 O Lord of hosts, return again,
from heaven look betime:
Behold, and with thy help sustain
this poor vineyard of thine.
15 Thy plant, I say, thine Israel,
whom thy right hand hath set:
The same which thou didst love so well,
O Lord, do not forget.
16 They lop and cut it down apace,
they burn it eke with fire:
And through the frowning of thy face
we perish in thine ire.
17 Let thy right hand be with them now
whom thou hast kept so long:
And with the son of man whom thou
to thee hast made so strong.
18 And so when thou hast set us free,
and saved us from shame:
Then will we never fall from thee,
but call upon thy name.

- 19 O Lord of hosts, through thy good grace
convert us unto thee:
Behold us with a pleasant face,
and then full safe are we.

Deo exultate. Psal. lxxx. f. H.

- B**E light and glad, in God rejoyce,
which is our strength and stay:
Be joyfull, and lift up your voice
to Jacobs God, I say.
2 Prepare your instruments most meet,
some joyfull psalm to sing:
Strike up with harp and lute so sweet,
on every pleasant string.
3 Blow as it were in the new moon,
with trumpets of the best:
As it is used to be done
at any solemn feast.
4 For this is unto Israel
a statute and a trade:
A law that must be kept full well,
which Jacobs God hath made.
5 This clause with Joseph was decreed
when he from Egypt came,
That as a witness all his seed
should still observe the same.
6 When God, I say, had so prepar'd
to bring him from that land:
Whereas the speech which he had heard
he did not understand.
7 I from his shoulder took (saith he)
the burden clean away:
And from the furnace quit him free,
from burning brick of clay.
8 When thou in grief didst cry and call,
I holp thee by and by:
And I did answer thee withall
in thunder secretly.
9 Yea at the waters of discord
I did thee tempt and prove:
Whereas the goodness of the Lord
with muttering thou didst move.
10 Hear, O my folk, O Israel,
and I assure it thee:
Regard, and mark my words full well,
if thou wilt cleave to me.

The second part.

- 11 Thou shalt no god in thee reserve
of any land abroad:
Nor in no wise to bow or serve
a strange or foreign god.
12 I am the Lord thy God, and I
from Egypt set thee free:
Then ask of me abundantly,
and I will give it thee.
13 And yet my people would not hear
my voice when that I spake:

Nor Israel would not obey,
but did me quite forsake.

14 Then did I leave them to their will,
in hardness of their heart :
To walk in their own counsels still,
themselves they might pervert.

15 O that my people would have heard
the words that I did say :
And eke that Israel would regard
to walk within my way !

16 How soon would I confound their foes
and bring them down full low :
And turn my hand upon all those
that would them overthrow ?

17 And they that at the Lord do rage,
as slaves should seek him till :
But of his folk the time and age
shall flourish ever still.

18 I would have fed them with the crop
and finest of the wheat :
And made the rock with honey drop,
that they their fills should eat.

Deus stetit. Psal. lxxxii. *J. H.*

A Mid the preas with men of might
the Lord himself doth stand,
To plead the cause of truth and right
with judges of the land.

2 How long (said he) will you proceed
false judgement to award,
And have respect for love of meed
the wicked to regard ?

3 Whereas of due you should defend
the fatherless and weak,
And when the poor man doth contend,
in judgement justly speak.

4 If ye be wise defend the cause
of poor men in their right :
And rid the needy from the claws
of tyrants force and might.

5 But nothing will they know or learn,
in vain to them I talk :
They will not see or ought discern,
but still in darkness walk.

6 For lo, even now the time is come
that all things fall to nought :
And likewise laws both all and some
for gain are sold and bought.

I had decreed it in my sight
as gods to take you all :
And children to the most of might
for love I did you call.

7 But notwithstanding ye shall die
as men, and so decay :
O tyrants, I shall you destroy,
and pluck you quite away.

8 Up, Lord, and let thy strength be known,
and judge the world with might :

For why? all nations are thine own,
to take them as thy right.

Deus quid. Psal. lxxxiii.

DO not, O God, refrain thy tongue,
in silence do not stay :

Withhold not, Lord, thy self so long,
and make no more delay.

2 For why ? behold thy foes, and see
how they do rage and cry :

And those that bear an hate to thee
hold up their heads on high.

3 Against thy folk they use deceit,
and craftly they enquire :

For thine elect to lie in wait
their counsel doth conspire.

4 Come on, say they, let us expell
and pluck these folk away :

So that the name of Israel
may utterly decay.

5 They all conspire within their heart
how they may thee withstand :

Against the Lord to take a part
they are in league and band.

6 The tents of all the Edomites,
the Ishmaelites also :

The Hagarenes and Moabites,
with divers other mo.

7 Gebal with Ammon, and likewise
doth Amalek conspire :

The Philistines against thee rise,
with them that dwell at Tyre.

8 And Assur eke is well appaid
with them in league to be :

And doth become a fence and aid
to Lots posterity.

9 As thou didst to the Midianites,
so serve them, Lord, each one :

Asto Sifer, and to Jabin,
beside the brook Kifon.

10 Whom thou in Endor didst destroy,
and waste them through thy might :

That they like dung on earth did lie,
and that in open fight.

The second part.

11 Make them now and their lords appear
like Zeb and Oreb than :

As Zebah and Zalmana were
the kings of Midian,

12 Which said, Let us throughout the land
in all the coasts abroad,

Possess and take into our hand
the fair houses of God.

13 Turn them, O God, with storms as fast
as wheels that have no stay :

Or like the chaff, which men do cast
with winds to flie away.

14 Like as the fire with rage and fume
the mightie forrests spills:
And as the flame doth quite consume
the mountains and the hills:

15 So let the tempest of thy wrath
upon their necks be laid:
And of thy stormy winde and showre,
Lord, make them all afraid.

16 Lord, bring them all, I thee desire,
to such rebuke and shame,
That it may cause them to enquire,
and learne to seek thy name.

17 And let them evermore daily
to shame and slander fall:
And in rebuke and obloquie
to perish eke withall.

18 That they may know and feel full well
that thou art called Lord:
And that alone thou dost excell,
and reign throughout the world.

Quàm dilecta. Psal. lxxxiv. *J. H.*

How pleasant is thy dwelling-place,
O Lord of hosts to me!

The tabernacles of thy grace
how pleasant, Lord, they be!

2 My soul doth long full sore to go
into thy courts abroad:

My heart doth lust, my flesh also,
in thee the living God.

3 The sparrows finde a room to rest,
and save themselves from wrong,

And eke the swallow hath a nest
wherein to keep her young.

4 These birds full nigh thine altar may
have place to sit and sing:

O Lord of hosts, thou art, I say,
my God and eke my King.

5 O they be blessed that may dwell
within thy house always:

For they all times thy facts dotell,
and ever give thee praise.

6 Yea, happie sure likewise are they,
whose stay and strength thou art:

Which to thy house do minde the way,
and seek it in their heart.

As they go through the vale of tears,
they dig up fountains still:

That as a spring it all appears,
and thou their pits dost fill.

7 From strength to strength they walk full fast,
no faintness there shall be:

And so the God of gods at last
in Sion they do see.

8 O Lord of hosts, to me give heed,
and hear when I do pray:

And let it through thine ears proceed,
O Jacobs God, I say.

9 O Lord our shield, of thy good grace
regard, and so draw near:

Regard, I say, behold the face
of thine anointed dear.

10 For why? within thy courts one day
is better to abide,

Then other-where to keep or stay
a thousand days beside.

Much rather would I keep a door
within the house of God,

Then in the tents of wickedness
to settle mine abode.

11 For God the Lord, light and defence,
will grace and worship give:

And no good thing will he withhold
from them that purely live.

12 O Lord of hosts, that man is blest,
and happie sure is he,

That is perswaded in his breast
to trust all times in thee.

Benedixisti. Psal. lxxxv. *J. H.*

Thou hast been mercifull indeed,
O Lord, unto thy land:

For thou restoredst Jacobs seed
from thraldome out of band.

2 The wicked ways that they were in,
thou didst them clean remit:

And thou didst hide thy peoples sin,
full close thou coveredst it.

3 Thine anger eke thou didst assuage,
that all thy wrath was gone:

And so didst turn thee from thy rage,
with them to be at one.

4 O God our health, do now convert
thy people unto thee:

Put all thy wrath from us apart,
and angry cease to be.

5 Why, shall thine anger never end,
but still proceed on us?

And shall thy wrath it self extend
upon all ages thus?

6 Wilt thou not rather turn therefore
and quicken us, that we

And all thy folk may evermore
be glad and joy in thee?

7 O Lord, on us do thou declare
thy goodness to our wealth:

Shew forth to us and do not spare,
thine aid and saving health.

8 I will heark what God saith, for he
speaks to his people peace,

And to his saints, that never they
return to foolishness.

9 For why? his help is still at hand
to such as do him fear:

Whereby great glory in our land
shall dwell and flourish there.

- 10 For truth and mercy there shall meet,
in one to take their place :
And peace shall justice with kisses greet,
and there they shall embrace.
- 11 As truth from earth shall spring apace,
and flourish pleasantly :
So righteousness shall shew her face,
and look from heaven high.
- 12 Yea, God himself doth take in hand
to give us each good thing :
And through the coasts of all the land
the earth her fruit shall bring.
- 13 Before his face shall justice go
much like a guide or stay :
He shall direct his steps also,
and keep them in the way.

Inclina, Domine. Psal. lxxxvi. 7. H.

- L**ord, bow thine ear to my request,
and hear me by and by :
With grievous pain and grief oppressed,
full poor and weak am I.
- 2 Preserve my soul, because my ways
and doings holy be :
And save thy servant, O my Lord,
that puts his trust in thee.
- 3 Thy mercie, Lord, on me express,
defend me eke with all :
For through the day I do not cease
on thee to crie and call.
- 4 Comfort, O Lord, thy servants soul
that now with pain is pin'd,
For unto thee, Lord, I extoll
and lift my soul and minde.
- 5 For thou art good and bountifull,
thy gifts of grace are free :
And eke thy mercie plentiful
to all that call on thee.
- 6 O Lord, likewise when I do pray,
regard and give an ear :
Mark well the words that I do say,
and all my prayers hear.
- 7 In time when trouble doth me move,
to thee I do complain :
For why ? I know and well do prove
thou answerest me again.
- 8 Among the gods, O Lord, is none
with thee to be compar'd :
And none can do as thou alone,
the like hath not been heard.

The second part.

- 9 The Gentiles and the people all
which thou didst make and frame,
Before thy face on knees shall fall,
and glorifie thy name.
- 10 For why ? thou art so much of might,
all power is thine own :

Thou workest wonders still in sight,
for thou art God alone.

- 11 O reach me, Lord, thy way, and I
shall in thy truth proceed :
O joyn my heart to thee so nigh
that I thy name may dread.
- 12 To thee, my God, will I give praise
with all my heart, O Lord :
And glorifie thy name always
for ever through the world.
- 13 For why ? thy mercie shew'd to me
is great, and doth excell :
Thou sett'st my soul at libertie
out from the lower hell.
- 14 O Lord, the proud against me rise,
and heaps of men of might :
They seek my soul, and in no wise
will have thee in their sight.
- 15 Thou, Lord, art mercifull and meek
full slack, and slow to wrath :
Thy goodness is full great, and eke
thy truth no measure hath.
- 16 O turn to me, and mercie grant,
thy strength to me apply :
O help and save thine own servant,
thy hand-maids son am I.
- 17 On me some signe of favour show,
that all my foes may see
And be asham'd, because, Lord, thou
dost help and comfort me.

Fundamenta. Psal. lxxxvii. 7. H.

- T**hat city shall full well endure,
her ground-work still doth stay
Upon the holy hills full sure,
it can no time decay.
- 2 God loves the gates of Sion best,
his grace doth there abide :
He loves them more then all the rest
of Jacob tents beside.
- 3 Full glorious things reported be
in Sion, and abroad :
Great things, I say, are said of thee,
thou citie of our God.
- 4 On Rahab I will cast an eye,
and bear in minde the same :
And Babylon shalle ke apply
and learn to know my name.
- 5 Lo, Palestine, and Tyre also,
with Ethiopie likewise,
A people old, full long ago
were born, and there did rise.
- 6 Of Sion they shall say abroad,
that divers men of fame
Have there sprung up, and the high God
hath founded fast the same.

7 In their records to them it shall
through Gods device appear,
Of Sion, that the chief of all
had his beginning there.
8 The trumpeters with such as sing,
there in great plenty be:
My fountains and my pleasant springs
are compast all in thee.

Domine Deus. Psal. lxxxviii. F. H.

Lord God of health, the hope and stay
thou art alone to me:

1 call and cry throughout the day,
and all the night to thee.

2 O let my prayer soon ascend
unto thy sight on high:

Incline thine ear, O Lord, attend,
and hearken to my cry.

3 For why? with wo my heart is fill'd,
and doth in trouble dwell:

My life and breath almost doth yeeld,
and draweth nigh to hell.

4 I am esteem'd as one of them
that in the pit do fall:

And made as one among those men
that have no strength at all.

5 As one among the dead, and free
from things that here remain:

It were more ease for me to be,
with them the which are slain:

6 As those that lie in grave, I say,
whom thou hast clean forgot:

The which thy hand hath cut away,
and thou regard'st them not.

7 Yea, like to one shut up full sure
within the lower pit,

In places dark and all obscure,
and in the depth of it.

8 Thine anger and thy wrath likewise
full sore on me doth lie:

And all thy storms against me rise,
my soul to vex and trie.

9 Thou put'st my friends far off from me,
and mak'st them hate me sore:

I am shut up in prison fast,
and can come forth no more.

10 My sight doth fail through grief and wo,
I call to thee, O God:

Throughout the day my hands also
to thee I stretch abroad.

The second part.

11 Dost thou unto the dead declare
thy wondrous works of fame?

Shall dead to life again repair,
and praise thee for the same?

12 Or shall thy loving kindness, Lord,
be preached in the grave?

Or shall with them that are destroy'd
thy truth her honour have?

13 Shall they that lie in dark full low
of all thy wonders wot?

Or there shall they thy justice know
where all things are forgot?

14 But I, O Lord, to thee always
do cry and call apace:

My prayer eke ere it be day
shall come before thy face.

15 Why dost thou, Lord, abhor my soul,
in grief that seeketh thee?

And now, O Lord, why dost thou hide
thy face away from me?

16 I am afflict, as dying still
from youth this many a year:

The terrors which do vex me ill
with troubled minde I bear.

17 The furies of thy wrathfull rage
full sore upon me fall:

Thy terrours eke do not assuage,
but me oppress withall.

18 All day they compass me about,
as water at the tide:

And all at once with streams full stout
beset me on each side.

19 Thou settest far from me my friends
and lovers every one:

Yea, and mine old acquaintance all
out of my sight are gone.

Misericordias. Psal. lxxxix. F. H.

TO sing the mercies of the Lord
my tongue shall never spare:
And with my mouth from age to age
thy truth I will declare.

2 For I have said that mercy shall
for evermore remain:

In that thou dost the heavens stay
thy truth appeareth plain.

3 To mine elest, saith God, I made
a covenant and behest:

My servant David to perswade,
I swore and did protest:

4 Thy seed for ever I will stay,
and stablish it full fast:

And still uphold thy throne alway
from age to age to last.

5 The heavens shew with joy and mirth
thy wondrous works, O Lord:

Thy saints within thy church on earth
thy faith and truth record.

6 Who with the Lord is equal then
in all the clouds abroad?

Among the sons of all the gods,
what one is like our God?

7 God in assembly of the saints
is greatly to be dread :
And over all that dwell about
in terrour to be had.

8 Lord God of hosts, in all the world
what one is like to thee ?
On every side, most mightie Lord,
thy truth is seen to be.

9 The raging sea by thine advice
thou rulest at thy will :

And when the waves thereof arise,
thou mak'st them calm and still.

10 And Egypt, Lord, thou hast subdu'd,
and thou hast it destroy'd :

Yea, thou thy foes with mighty arm
hast scattered all abroad.

The second part.

11 The heavens are thine and still have been,
likewise the earth and land :

The world and all that is therein
thou foundedst with thy hand.

12 Both north and south, with east and west
thy self didst make and frame :

Both Tabor mount, and eke Hermon,
rejoyce and praise thy name.

13 Thine arm is strong and full of power,
all might therein doth lie :

The strength of thy right hand each hour
thou liftest up on high.

14 In righteousness and equitie
thou hast thy seat and place :

Mercy and truth are still with thee,
and go before thy face.

15 That folk is blest that knows aright
thy present power, O God :

For in the favour of thy sight
they walk full safe abroad.

16 For in thy name throughout the day
they joy and much rejoyce :

And through thy righteousness have they
a pleasant fame and noise.

17 For why ? their glory, strength, and aid,
in thee alone doth lie :

Thy goodness eke that hath us staid,
shall lift our horn on high.

18 Our strength that doth defend us well
The Lord to us doth bring :

The holy One of Israel
he is our guide and King.

19 Sometimes thy will unto thy saints
in visions thou didst show :

And thus then didst thou say to them,
thy mind to make them know :

20 A man of might I have ere &
your king and guide to be :

And set him up whom I elect,
among the folk to me.

The third part.

21 My servant David I appoint,
whom I have searched out :

And with mine holy oyl anoint
him king of all the rout.

22 For why ? my hand is readie still
with him for to remain :

And with mine arm also I will
him strengthen and sustain.

23 The enemies shall not him oppress,
they shall him not devour :

Ne yet the sons of wickedness
on him shall have no power :

24 His foes likewise I will destroy
before his face in sight :

And those that hate him I will plague,
and strike them with my might.

25 My truth and mercy eke withall
shall still upon him lie :

And in my name his horn eke shall
be lifted up on high.

26 His kingdome I will set to be
upon the sea and land :

And eke the running floods shall he
embrace with his right hand.

27 He shall depend with all his heart
on me, and thus shall say,

My father and my God thou art,
my rock of health and stay.

28 As my first-born I will him take
of all on earth that springs :

His might and honour I will make
above all earthly kings.

29 My mercy shall be with him still,
as I my self have told :

My faithfull covenant to fulfill
my mercy I will hold.

30 And eke his seed I will sustain
for ever strong and sure :

So that his seat shall still remain
while heaven doth endure.

The fourth part.

31 If that his sons forsake my law,
and so begin to swerve :

And of my judgements have none aw
nor will not them observe :

32 Or if they do not use aright
my statutes to them made,

And set all my commandments light,
and will not keep my trade :

33 Then with the rod will I begin
their doings to amend :

And so with scourging for their sin,
if that they do offend.

34 My mercie yet and my goodness
I will not take him fro :

Nor handle him with craftines,
and so my truth forgo.

35 But sure my covenant I will hold,
with all that I have spoke:

No word the which my lips have told
shall alter or be broke.

36 Once sware I by my holiness,
and that perform will I:

With David I shall keep promise,
to him I will not lie.

37 His seed for evermore shall reign,
and eke his throne of might:

As doth the sun, it shall remain
for ever in my sight.

38 And as the moon within the skie
for ever standeth fast

A faithfull witness from on high,
so shall his kingdome last.

39 But now, O Lord, thou dost reject,
and now thou changest chear:

Yea, thou art wroth with thine elect,
thine own anointed dear.

40 The covenant with thy servant made,
Lord, thou hast quite undone:

And down upon the ground also
hast cast his royal crown.

The fifth part.

41 Thou pluck'st his hedges up with might,
his walls thou dost confound:

Thou beatest eke his bulwarks down,
and break'st them to the ground.

42 That he is fore destroy'd and torn
of comers by throughout:

And so is made a mock and scorn
to all that dwell about.

43 Thou their right hand hast lifted up,
that him so sore annoy:

And all his foes that him devour,
lo, thou hast made to joy.

44 His sword's edge thou dost take away,
that should his foes withstand:

To him in war no victorie
thou giv'st, nor upper hand.

45 His glorie thou dost also waste,
his throne, his joy, his mirth

By thee is overthrown, and cast
full low upon the earth.

46 Thou hast cutoff and made full short
his youth and lustie days:

And rais'd of him an ill report
with shame and great dispraise.

47 How long away from me, O Lord,
for ever wilt thou turn?

And shall thine anger still alway
as fire consume and burn?

48 O call to minde, remember then,
my time consumeth fast:

Why hast thou made the sons of men
as things in vain to waste?

49 What man is he that liveth here,
and death shall never see?

Or from the hand of hell his soul
shall he deliver free?

50 Where is, O Lord, thine own goodness
so oft declar'd beforne,

Which by thy truth and uprightness
to David thou hast sworn?

51 The great rebuke to minde I call
that on thy servants lie:

The railings of the people all
born in my breast have I,

52 Wherewith, O Lord, thine enemies
blasphemed have thy name:

The steps of thine anointed one
they cease not to defame.

53 All praise to thee, O Lord of hosts,
both now and eke for aye:

Through skie and earth, and all the coasts,
amen, amen, I say.

Domine, refugium. Psal. xc. J. H.

THou, Lord, hast been our sure defence,
our place of ease and rest,
In all times past, yea so long since
as cannot be exprest.

2 Ere there was made mountain or hill,
the earth and world abroad:
From age to age and always still
for ever thou art God.

3 Thou grindest man through grief and pain
to dust or clay, and then,
And then thou say'st again, Return
again ye sons of men.

4 The lasting of a thousand years,
what is it in thy sight?
As yesterday it doth appear,
or as a watch by night.

5 So soon as thou dost scatter them,
then is their life and trade
All as a sleep, and like the grass
whose beautie soon doth fade:

6 Which in the morning shines full bright,
but fadeth by and by:
And is cut down ere it be night,
all withered dead and drie.

7 For through thine anger we consume,
our might is much decal'd:
And of thy fervent wrath and fume
we are full sore afraid.

8 The wicked works that we have wrought
thou setst before thine eie:
Our privie faults, yea, eke our thoughts
thy countenance doth spie.

9 For through thy wrath our days do waste,
thereof doth nought remain:
Our years consume as words or blasts,
and are not call'd again.
10 Our time is threescore years and ten
that we do live on mold:
If one see fourscore, surely then
we count him wondrous old.

The second part.

11 Yet of this time the strength and chief
the which we count upon,
Is nothing else but painfull grief,
and we as blasts are gone. (there;
12 Who once doth know what strength is
what might thine anger hath?
Or in his heart who doth thee fear
according to thy wrath?
13 Instruct us, Lord to know and trie
how long our days remain:
That then we may our hearts apply
true wisdom to attain.
14 Return, O Lord, how long wilt thou
forth on in wrath proceed?
Shew favour to thy servants now,
and help them at their need.
15 Refresh us with thy mercie soon,
and then our joy shall be,
All times so long as life doth last,
in heart rejoyce will we,
16 As thou hast plagued us before
now also make us glad:
And for the years wherein full sore
affliction we have had.
17 O let thy work and power appear,
and on thy servants light:
And shew unto thy children dear
thy glorie and thy might.
18 Lord let thy grace and glorie stand
on us thy servants thus:
Confirm the works we take in hand.
Lord, prosper them to us.

Qui habitat. Psal. xci. 7. H.

HE that within the secret place
of God most high doth dwell:
In shadow of the mightiest grace
at rest shall keep him well.
Thou art my hope and my strong hold,
I to the Lord will say,
My God is he, in him will I
my whole affiance stay.

3 He shall defend thee from the snare
the which the hunter laid:
And from the deadly plague and care
whereof thou art afraid.
4 And with his wings shall cover thee
and keep thee safely there:

His faith and truth thy fence shall be,
as sure as shield and spear.

5 So that thou shalt not need, I say,
to fear or be affright
Of all the shafts that flie by day:
nor terrours of the night:
6 Nor of the plague that privily
doth walk in dark so fast:
Nor yet of that which doth destroy,
and at noon-day doth waste.
7 Yea, at thy side as thou dost stand
a thousand dead shall be:
Ten thousand eke at thy right hand;
and yet shalt thou be free.
8 But thou shalt see it for thy part,
thine eyes shall well regard,
That even like to their deserts
the wicked have reward.
9 For why? O Lord, I onely lust
to stay my hope on thee:
And in the high'st I put my trust,
my sure defence is he.
10 Thou shalt not need none ill to fear,
with thee it shall not mell:
Nor yet the plague shall once come near
the house where thou dost dwell.

11 For why? unto his angels all
with charge commanded he,
That still in all thy ways they shall
preserve and prosper thee.
12 And in their hands shall bear thee up,
still waiting thee upon:
So that thy foot shall never chance
to spurn at any stone.

13 Upon the lions thou shalt go,
the adder fell and long:
And tread upon the lions young;
with dragons stout and strong.
14 For he that trusteth unto me,
I will dispatch him quite.
And him defend, because that he
doth know my name aright.

15 When he for help on me doth crie,
an answer I will give:
And from his grief take him will I
in glorie for to live.
16 With length of years and days of wealth
I will fulfill his time:
The goodness of my saving heal-h
I will declare to him.

Bonum est. Psal. xcii. 7. H.

IT is a thing both good and meet
to praise the highest Lord:
And to thy name, O thou most high,
to sing with one accord:
2 To shew the kindness of the Lord;
betime ere day be light:

And eke declare his truth abroad
when it doth draw to night.

3 Upon ten-stringed instruments,
on lute and harp so sweet:

With all the mirth you can invent
of instruments most meet.

4 For thou hast made me to rejoyce
in things so wrought by thee:

And I have joy in heart and voice
thy handy-works to see.

5 O Lord, how glorious and how great
are all thy works so stout!

So deeply are thy counsels set
that none can trie them out.

6 The man unwise hath not the wit
this gear to pass to bring:

And all such fools are nothing fit
to understand this thing.

7 When so the wicked at their will
as grafs do spring full fast,

They when they flourish in their ill
for ever shall be waste.

8 But thou art mightie, Lord most high,
yea thou dost reign therefore

In every time eternally
both now and evermore.

9 For why? O Lord, behold and see,
behold thy foes, I say,

How all that work iniquitie
shall perish and decay.

10 But thou, like as an unicorn,
shalt lift mine horn on high:

With fresh and new prepared oyl
thine ointed king am I:

11 And of my foes before mine eyes
shall see the fall and shame:

Of all that up against me rise,
mine ears shall hear the same.

12 The just shall flourish up on high,
as date-trees bud and blow:

And as the cedars multiply
in Libanus that grow.

13 For they are planted in the place
and dwelling of our God:

Within his courts they spring apace,
and flourish all abroad:

14 And in their age much fruit shall bring,
both far and well be seen:

And pleasantly both bud and spring
with boughs and branches green.

15 To shew that God is good and just,
and upright in his will:

He is my rock, my hope, and trust,
in him there is none ill.

Dominus regnavit. Psal. xciii. 7. H.

THe Lord asking aloft doth reign
with glorie goodly dight:

And he to shew his strength and main,
hath girt himself with might.

2 The Lord likewise the earth hath made
and shaped it so sure,

No might can make it move or fade,
at stay it doth endure.

3 Ere that the world was made or wrought,
thy seat was set before:

Beyond all time that can be thought:
thou hast been evermore.

4 The floods, O Lord, the floods do rise,
they roar and make a noise:

The floods (I say) did enterprise,
and lifted up their voice.

5 Yea, though the storms arise in fight,
though seas do rage and swell:

The Lord is strong and more of might,
for he on high doth dwell.

6 And look what promise he doth make
his household to defend:

For just and true they shall it take,
all times without an end.

Deus ultionum. Psal. xciv. 7. H.

O Lord, thou dost revenge all wrong,
that office longs to thee:

Sith vengeance doth to thee belong,
declare that all may see.

2 Set forth thy self, for thou of right
the earth dost judge and guide:

Reward the proud and men of might
according to their pride.

3 How long shall wicked men bear sway
with lifting up their voice?

How long shall wicked men, I say,
thus triumph and rejoyce?

4 How long shall they with brags burst out,
and proudly prate their fill?

Shall they rejoyce that be so stout,
whose works are ever ill?

5 Thy flock, O Lord, thine heritage
they spoil and vex full sore:

Against thy people they do rage
still daily more and more.

6 The widows which are comfortless,
and strangers they destroy:

They slay the children fatherless,
and none doth put them by.

7 And when they take these things in hand,
thistalk they have of thee,

Can Jacobs God this understand?
tush no, he cannot see.

8 O folk unwise and people rude,
some knowledge now discern:

Ye fools among the multitude,
at length begin to learn.

9 The Lord which made the ear of man,
he needs of right must hear:

He made the eye, all things must then
before his sight appear.
10 The Lord doth all the world correct,
and make them understand:
Shall he not then your deeds detect?
how can ye scape his hand?

The second part.

11 The Lord doth know the thoughts of man,
his heart he seeth full plain:
The Lord (I say) mans thoughts doth scan,
and findeth them but vain.
12 But, Lord, that man is happie sure
whom thou dost keep in aw,
And through correction dost procure
to teach him in thy law.
13 Whereby he shall in quiet rest
in time of trouble sit:
When wicked men shall be suppressed,
and fall into the pit.
14 For sure the Lord will not refuse
his people for to take:
His heritage whom he did chuse
he will no time forsake.
15 Untill that judgement be decreed
to justice to convert:
That all may follow her with speed
that are of upright heart.
16 But who upon my part shall stand
against the cursed train?
Or who shall rid me from their hand
that wicked works maintain?
17 Except the Lord had been mine aid,
mine enemies to repell:
My soul and life had now been laid
almost as low as hell.
18 When I did say, my foot did slide,
I now am like to fall:
Thy goodness, Lord, did so provide
to stay me up withall.
19 When with my self I mused much,
and could no comfort finde:
Then, Lord, thy goodness did me touch,
and that did ease my minde.
20 Wilt thou inhaunt thy self and draw,
with wicked men to sit:
Which with pretence in stead of law
much mischief do commit?
21 For they consult against the life
of righteous men and good:
And in their counsels they are rife
to shed the guiltless blood.
22 But yet the Lord he is to me
a strong defence, or lock:
He is my God, to him I flee,
he is my strength and rock,

23 And he shall cause their mischiefs all
themselves for to annoy:
And in their malice they shall fall,
our God shall them destroy.

Venite exultemus. Psal. xcv. J. H.

O Come let us lift up our voice;
and sing unto the Lord:
In him our rock of health rejoyce
let us with one accord.
2 Yea, let us come before his face
to give him thanks and praise:
In singing psalms unto his grace
let us be glad always.
3 For why? the Lord he is no doubt
a great and mightie God,
A King above all gods throughout,
in all the world abroad.
4 The secrets of the earth so deep,
and corners of the land,
The tops of hills that are so steep,
he hath them in his hand.
5 The sea and waters all are his,
for he the same hath wrought;
The earth and all that therein is
his hand hath made of nought.
6 Come, let us bow and praise the Lord,
before him let us fall:
And kneel to him with one accord,
the which hath made us all,
7 For why? he is the Lord our God,
for us he doth provide:
We are his flock, he doth us feed;
his sheep and he our guide.
8 To day if ye his voice will hear,
then harden not your heart:
As ye with grudging many a year
provok'd me in desert.
9 Whereas your fathers tempted me,
my power for to prove:
My wondrous works when they did see,
yet still they would me move,
10 Twice twentie years they did me grieve,
and I to them did say,
They err in heart, and not beleeve,
they have not known my way.
11 Wherefore I sware, when that my wrath
was kindled in my breast,
That they should never tread the path
to enter in my rest.

Cantate Dom. Psal. xevi. J. H.

Sing ye with praise unto the Lord
new songs with joy and mirth:
Sing unto him with one accord,
all people on the earth.
2 Yea, sing unto the Lord, I say,
praise ye his holy name:

Declare and shew from day to day
salvation by the same.

3 Among the heathen eke declare
his honour round about :

To shew his wonders do not spare
in all the world throughout.

4 For why ? the Lord is much of might,
and worthy praise alway ?

And he is to be dread of right
above all gods, I say.

5 For all the gods of heathen folk
are idols that will fade ;

But yet our God he is the Lord
that hath the heavens made.

6 All praise and honour eke do dwell
for aye before his face :

Both power and might likewise excell
within his holy place.

7 Ascribe unto the Lord alway,
ye people of the world,
All might and worships eke, I say,
ascribe unto the Lord.

8 Ascribe unto the Lord also
the glorie of his name :

And eke into his courts do go
with gifts unto the same.

The second part.

9 Fall down and worship ye the Lord
within his temple bright :

Let all the people of the world
be fearfull at his sight.

10 Tell all the world, be not agast
the Lord doth reign above :

Yea, he hath set the earth so fast,
that it can never move :

11 And that it is the Lord alone
that rules with princely might,

To judge the nations everie one
with equitie and right.

12 The heavens shall great joy begin;
the earth eke shall rejoyce :

The sea with all that is therein
shall shout and make a noise.

13 The field shall joy, and everie thing
that springeth on the earth

The wood and everie tree shall sing
with gladness and with mirth,

14 Before the presence of the Lord,
and coming of his might :

When he shall justly judge the world,
and rule his folk with right.

Dominus regnavit. Psal. xcvi. J. H.

THE Lord doth reign, whereat the earth
may joy with pleasant voice :
And eke the isles with joyfull mirth
may triumph and rejoyce.

2 Both clouds and darkness eke do swell,
and round about him bear :

Yea, right and justice ever dwell
and bide about his seat.

3 Yea, fire and heat at once do run,
and go before his face :

Which shall his foes and enemies burn
abroad in everie place.

4 His lightnings eke full bright did blaze,
and to the world appear :

Whereat the earth did look and gaze
with dread and deadly fear.

5 The hills like wax did melt in sight
and presence of the Lord :

They fled before that rulers might,
which guideth all the world.

6 The heavens eke declare and show
his justice forth abroad,

That all the world may see and know
the glorie of our God.

7 Confusion sure shall come to such
as worship idols vain:

And eke to those that glorie much
dumb pictures to maintain.

8 For all the idols of the world,
which they as gods do call,

Shall feel the power of the Lord :
and down to him shall fall.

9 With joy shall Sion hear this thing,
and Juda shall rejoyce :

For at thy judgements they shall sing,
and make a pleasant noise.

10 That thou, O Lord, art set on high
in all the earth abroad :

And art exalted wondrously
above each other god

11 All ye that love the Lord do this,
hate all things that are ill :

For he doth keep the souls of his
from such as would them spill.

12 And light doth spring up to the just,
with pleasure for his part :

Great joy with gladness, mirth and lust,
to them of upright heart.

13 Ye righteous in the Lord rejoyce,
his holiness proclaim :

Be thankfull eke with heart and voice,
and mindfull of the same.

Cantate Domino. Psal. xcvi. J. H.

O Sing ye now unto the Lord
a new and pleasant song :
For he hath wrought throughout the world
his wonders great and strong.

2 With his right hand full worthily
he doth his foes devour,

And get himself the victorie
with his own arm and power.

- 3 The Lord doth make the people know
his ſaving health and might:
The Lord doth eke his juſtice ſhow
in all the heathens ſight.
- 4 His grace and truth to Iſrael
in minde he doth record:
That all the earth hath ſeen right well
the goodneſſe of the Lord.
- 5 Be glad in him with joyfull voice,
all people of the earth:
Give thanks to God, ſing and rejoyce
to him with joy and mirth.
- 6 Upon the harp unto him ſing,
give thanks to him with pſalms:
Rejoyce before the Lord our King
with trumpets and with ſhalms.
- 7 Yea, let the ſea withall therein
for joy both roar and ſwell:
The earth likewiſe let it begin,
withall that therein dwell.
- 8 And let the flouds rejoyce their fills,
and clap their hands apace:
And eke the mountains and the hills,
before the Lord his face.
- 9 For he ſhall come to judge and trie
the world and every wight:
And rule the people mightily
with juſtice and with right.

Dominus regnavit. Pſal. xcix. J. H.

- T**He Lord doth reign, although at it
the people rage full fore:
Yea, he on cherubims doth ſit,
though all the world do roar.
- 2 The Lord that doth in Sion dwell
is high and wondrous great:
Above all folk he doth excell,
and he aloft is ſet.
 - 3 Let all men praiſe thy mighty name,
for it is fearfull ſure:
And let them magnifie the ſame,
that holy is and pure.
 - 4 The princely power of our King
doth love judgement and right:
Thou rightly ruleſt every thing
in Jacob through thy might.
 - 5 To praiſe the Lord our God deviſe
all honour to him do:
Before his footſtool worſhip him,
for he is holy too.
 - 6 Moſes, Aaron, and Samuel,
as prieſts on him did call:
When they did pray he heard them well,
and gave them answer all.
 - 7 Within the cloud to them he ſpake,
then did they labour ſtill
To keep ſuch laws as he did make,
and pointed them untill.

- 8 O Lord our God, thou didſt them bear,
and answeredſt them again:
Thy mercy did on them appear,
their deeds didſt not maintain.
- 9 O laud and praiſe our God and Lord
within his holy hill:
For why? our God throughout the world
is holy ever ſtill.

Fabulate Deo. Pſal. c. J. H.

- A**ll people that on earth do dwell,
ſing to the Lord with cheerfull voice.
- 2 Him ſerve with fear, his praiſe forth tell,
come ye before him and rejoyce.
 - 3 The Lord ye know is God indeed,
withour our aid he did us make:
We are his flock, he doth us feed;
and for his ſheep he doth us take.
 - 4 O enter then his gates with praiſe,
approach with joy his courts unto:
Praiſe laud and bleſs his name always,
for it is ſeemly ſoto do.
 - 5 For why? the Lord our God is good,
his mercy is for ever ſure:
His truth at all times firmly ſtood,
and ſhall from age to age endure.

Another of the ſame, by J. H.

- I**N God the Lord be glad and light,
praiſe him throughout the earth:
- 2 Serve him and come before his ſight
with ſinging and with mirth.
 - 3 Know that the Lord our God he is,
he did us make and keep,
Not we our ſelves for we are his
own flock and paſture ſheep.
 - 4 O go into his gates always
give thanks within the ſame:
Within his courts ſet forth his praiſe,
and laud his holy name.
 - 5 For why the goodneſſe of the Lord
for evermore doth reign:
From age to age throughout the world,
hiſ truth doth ſtill remain.

Miſericordiam. Pſal. ci. N.

- I** Mercy will and judgement ſing,
O Lord God, unto thee:
- 2 And wiſely do in perfect way,
untill thou come to me.
And in the miſt of my houſe walk
in pureneſſe of my ſprite:
 - 3 And I no kinde of wicked thing
will ſet before my ſight.
I hate their works that fall away,
it ſhall not cleave to me:
 - 4 From me ſhall part the froward heart,
none evil will I ſee.

- 5 Him will I stroy that slandereth
his neighbour privily :
The lofty heart I cannot bear,
nor him that looketh high.
6 Mine eyes shall be on them, within
the land that faithfull be :
In perfect way who walketh, shall
be servant unto me.
7 I will no guilefull person have
within my house to dwell :
And in my presence he shall not
remain that lies doth tell.
8 Betimes I will destroy even all
the wicked of the land :
That I may from Gods citie cut
the wicked workers hand.

Domine, exaudi. Psal. cii. N.

- O** Hear my prayer, Lord, and let
my cry come unto thee :
2 In time of trouble do not hide
thy face away from me.
3 Incline thine ear to me, make haste
to hear me when I call :
For as the smoke doth fade, so do
my days consume and fall.
4 And as an hearth my bones are burnt
my heart is smitten dead,
And withers like the grafs, that I
forget to eat my bread.
5 By reason of my groaning voice
my bones cleave to my skin :
6 As pelican in wilderness,
such case now am I in.
And as an owl in desert is,
lo, I am such an one :
7 I watch and as a sparrow on
the house top am alone.
8 Lo, daily in reproachfull wise
mine enemies do me scorn :
And they that do against me rage,
against me they have sworn.
9 Surely with ashes as with bread,
my hunger I have fill'd :
And mingled have my drink with tears
that from mine eyes have still'd
10 Because of thy displeasure, Lord,
thy wrath and thy disdain :
For thou hast lifted me aloft,
and cast me down again.
11 The days wherein I pass my life,
are like the fleeting shade :
And I am withered like the grafs
that soon away doth fade.
12 But thou, O Lord, for ever dost
remain in steady place :
And thy remembrance ever doth
abide from race to race.

The second part.

- 13 Thou wilt arise, and mercy thou
to Zion wilt extend :
The time of mercy now the time,
foreset is come to end.
14 For even in the stones thereof
thy servants do delight :
And on the dust thereof they have
compassion in their sprite.
15 Then shall the heathen people fear
the Lords most holy name :
And all the kings on earth shall dread
thy glory and thy fame.
16 Then when the Lord the mighty God
again shall Sion rear :
And then when he most nobly in
his glory shall appear.
17 To prayer of the desolate
when he himself shall bend :
When he shall not disdain unto
their prayers to attend.
18 This shall be written for the age
that after shall succeed :
The people yet uncreated
The Lords renown shall spread.
19 For he from his high sanctuary
hath looked down below :
And out of heaven hath the Lord
beheld the earth also.
20 That of the mourning captive he
might hear the wofull crie :
And that he might deliver those
that damned are to die.
21 That they in Sion may declare
the Lords most holy name :
And in Jerusalem set forth
the praises of the same :
22 Then when the people of the land
and kingdoms with accord
shall be assembled for to do
their service to the Lord.

The third part.

- 23 My former force of strength he hath
abated in the way :
And shorter he did cut my days ;
thus I therefore did say,
24 My God in midst of all my days
now take me not away :
Thy years endure eternally
from age to age for aye.
25 Thou the foundations of the earth
before all times hast laid :
And Lord the heavens are the work
which thine own hands have made.
26 Yea, they shall perish and decay,
but thou shalt tarry still :

And they shall all in time wax old
even as a garment will.

17 Thou as a garment shalt them change,
and changed shall they be :

But thou dost still abide the same
thy years do never flee.

18 The children of thy servants shall
continually endure :

And in thy sight their happy seed
for ever shall stand sure.

Benedic, anima. Psal. ciii. T.S.

MY soul give laud unto the Lord,
my spirit shall do the same :
And all the secrets of my heart,
praise ye his holy name.

1 Give thanks to God for all his gifts
shew not thy self unkinde :
And suffer not his benefits
to slip out of thy minde.

2 That gave thee pardon for thy faults,
and thee restor'd again,
For all thy weak and frail disease,
and heal'd thee of thy pain.

4 That did redeem thy life from death,
from which thou couldst not flee :
His mercie and compassion both
he did extend to thee.

5 That fill'd with goodness thy desire,
and did prolong thy youth :
Like as the eagle casts her bill,
whereby her age renew' th.

6 The Lord with justice doth repay
all such as be oppress'd :
So that their sufferings and their wrongs,
are turned to the best.

7 His ways and his commandments
to Moses he did show :
His counsels and his valiant acts
the Israelites did know.

8 The Lord is kinde and mercifull
when sinners do him grieve :
The slowest to conceive a wrath
and readiest to forgive.

9 He chides not us continually,
though we be full of strife :
Nor keeps our faults in memorie,
for all our sinfull life.

10 Nor yet according to our sins
the Lord doth us regard :
Nor after our iniquities
he doth us not reward.

11 But as the space is wondrous great
'twixt earth and heaven above :
So is his goodness much more large
to them that do him love.

12 God doth remove our sins from us,
and our offences all,

As far as is the sun-rising
full distant from his fall.

The second part.

13 And look what pitie parents dear
unto their children bear :

Like pitie beareth God to such
as worship him in fear.

14 The Lord that made us knows our shape,
our mould and fashon just :
How weak and frail our nature is,
and how we be but dust.

15 And how the time of mortal men
is like the withering hay :
Or like the flower right fair in field,
that fades full soon away.

16 Whose gloss and beautie stormie winds
do utterly disgrace :
And make that after their assaults
such blossoms have no place.

17 But yet the goodness of the Lord
with his shal ever stand :
Their childrens children do receive
his righteousness at hand.

18 I mean, which keep his covenant
with all their whole desire :
And not forget to do the thing
that he doth them require.

19 The heavens high are made the seat
and footstool of the Lord :
And by his power imperial
he governs all the world.

20 Ye angels which are great in power,
praise ye and blest the Lord :
Which to obey and do his will
immediately accord.

21 Ye noble hosts and ministers,
cease not to laud him still :
Which ready are to execute
his pleasure and his will.

22 Yea, all his works in every place,
praise ye his holy name :
My heart, my minde, and eke my soul,
praise ye also the same.

Benedic, anima mea. Psal. civ. W.K.

MY soul, praise the Lord,
speak good of his name,
O Lord, our great God,
how dost thou appear ?
So passing in glory,
that great is thy fame.
Honour and majestie
in thee shine most clear.

2 With light as a robe,
thou hast thee beclad,
Whereby all the earth
thy greatness may see:

The heavens in such sort
thou also hast spread,
That it to a curtain
compared may be.

3 His chamber-beams lie
in the clouds full sure,
Which as his chariots,
are made him to bear :
And there with much swiftness
his course doth endure.
Upon the wings riding
of winds in the air.

4 He maketh his spirits
as heralds to go :
And lightnings to serve
we see also prest :
His will to accomplish
they run to and fro,
To save or consume things,
as semeth him best.

5 He groundeth the earth
so firmly and fast,
That it once do move
none shall have such power.

6 The deep a fair covering
for it made thou hast :
Which by his own nature
the hills would devour.

7 But at thy rebuke
the waters do flee :
And so give due place
thy word to obey.
At thy voice of thunder
so fearfull they be,
That in their great raging
they haste soon away.

8 The mountains full high
they then up ascend :
If thou do but speak,
thy word they fulfill,
So likewise the valleys
most quickly descend,
Where thou them appointest
remain they do still.

9 Their bounds thou hast set
how far they shall run :
So that in their rage
not that pass they can :
For God hath appointed
they shall not return
The earth to destroy more,
which made was for man.

The second part.

10 He sendeth the springs
to strong streams or lakes,
Which run do full swift
among the huge hills,

11 Where both the wilde asses
their thirst oft-times slakes.
And beasts of the mountains
thereof drink their fills.

12 By these pleasant springs
of fountains full fair,
The fowls of the air
abide shall and dwell :
Who moved by nature
to hop here and there,
Among the green branches
their songs shall excell.

13 The mountain to moist
the clouds he doth use :
The earth with his works
is wholly replete.

14 So as the brute cattel
he doth not refuse :
But grass doth provide them,
and herb for mans meat.

15 Yea bread, wine, and oyl,
he made for mans sake :
His face to refresh
and heart to make strong.

16 The cedars of Liban
this great Lord did make :
Which trees he doth nourish
that grow up so long.

17 In these may birds build
and make there their nests:
In fir-trees the storks
remain and abide.

18 The high hills are succours
for wilde goats to rest :
And eke the rock stonie
for conies to hide.

19 The moon then is set
her seasons to run :
The days from the nights
thereby to discern.
And by the descending
also of the sun,
The cold from heat alway
thereby we do learn.

20 When darkness doth come
by Gods will and power,
Then creep forth do all
the beasts of the wood.

21 The lions range roaring
their prey to devour :
But yet it is thou, Lord,
which givest them food.

22 As soon as the sun
is up, they retire :
To couch in their dens,
then are they full saine :

23 That man to his work may,
as right doth require,
Till night come and call him
to take rest again.

The third part.

24 How sundry, O Lord,
are all thy works found !
With wisdom full great
they are indeed wrought :
So that the whole world
of thy praise doth sound :
And as for thy riches,
they pass all mens thought.

25 So is the great sea,
which large is and broad,
Where things that creep swarm,
and beasts of each sort :

26 There both mighty ships sail,
and some lie at rode :
The whale huge and monstrous
there also doth sport.

27 All things on thee wait
thou dost them relieve :
And thou in due time
full well dost them feed.

28 Now when it doth please thee
the same for to give,
They gather full gladly
those things which they need.

Thou openest thy hand,
and they finde such grace,
That they with good things
are filled we see.

29 But sore are they troubled
if thou turn thy face :
For if thou their breath take,
vile dust then they be.

30 Again, when thy spirit
from thee doth proceed
All things to appoint,
and what shall ensue :
Then are they created
as thou hast decreed :
And dost by thy goodness
the drie earth renew.

31 The praise of the Lord
for ever shall last,
Who may in his works
by right well rejoyce.
32 His look can the earth make
to tremble full fast,
And likewise the mountains
to smoke at his voice.

33 To this Lord and God
sing will I always :
So long as I live,
my God praise will I.

34 Then am I most certain
my words shall him please :
I will rejoyce in him,
to him will I crie.

35 The sinners, O Lord,
consume in thine ire :
And eke the perverse,
them root out with shame :

But as for my soul now,
let it still desire,
And say with the faithfull
praise ye the Lords name.

Confitemini Dom. Psal. cv. N.

Give praises unto God the Lord,
and call upon his name :
Among the people eke declare
his works to spread his fame.

2 Sing ye unto the Lord, I say,
and sing unto him praise :
And talk of all his wondrous works
that he hath wrought always.

3 In honour of his holy name
rejoyce with one accord :
And let the heart also rejoyce
of them that seek the Lord.

4 Seek ye the Lord and seek the strength
of his eternal might :
And seek his face continually,
and presence of his sight.

5 The wondrous works which he hath done
keep still in mindfull heart :
Ne let the judgements of his mouth
out of your minde depart.

6 Yet that of faithfull Abraham
his servant are the seed,
Ye his elect, the children that
of Jacob do proceed.

7 For he, he onely is, I say,
the mighty Lord our God :
And his most rightfull judgements are
through all the earth abroad.

8 His promise and his covenant
which he hath made to his,
He hath remembered evermore
to thousands of degrees.

The second part.

9 The covenant which he hath made
with Abraham long ago,
And faithfull oath which he hath sworn
to Isaac also.

10 And did confirm the same for law,
that Jacob should obey :
And for eternal covenant
to Israel for aye.

11 When thus he said, Lo, I to you
all Canaan land will give,

The lot of your inherance,
wherein your seed shall live.

12 Although the number at that time
did very small appear :

Yea, very small, and in the land
they then but strangers were.

13 While yet they walkt from land to land,
without a sure abode :

And while from sundry kingdoms they
did wander all abroad.

14 And wrong at no oppressours hands
he suffred them to take :

But even the great and mighty kings
reproved for their sake.

15 And thus he said, Touch ye not those
that mine anointed be :

Ne do the prophets any harm
that do pertain to me.

16 He call'd a dearth upon the land,
of bread he stroyd the store :

But he against the time of need
had sent a man before :

The third part.

17 Even Joseph which had once been sold
to live a slave in wo :

Whose feet they hurt in stocks, whose soul
the irons pierc'd also :

18 Untill the time came when his cause
was known apparently,

The mighty word of God the Lord
his faultless truth did trie.

19 The king sent and delivered him
from prison where he was :

20 The ruler of the people then
did freely let him pass.

21 And over all his house he made
him lord to bear the sway :

And of his substance made him have
the rule and all the stay.

22 That he might to his will instruct
the princes of the land :

And wisdoms lore his ancient men
might cause to understand.

23 Then into the Egyptian land
came Israel also :

And Jacob in the land of Ham
did live a stranger tho.

24 His people he exceedingly
in number made to flow :

And over all their enemies
in strength he made them grow.

25 Whose heart he turn'd, that they with hate
his people did entreat :

And did his servants wrongfully
abuse with false deceit.

The fourth part.

26 His faithfull servant Moses then,
and Aaron whom he chose,
He did command to go to them,
his message to disclose.

27 The wondrous message of his signes
among them he did show :

And wonders in the land of Ham
then did they work also.

28 Darkness he sent and made it dark
instead of brighter day :

And unto his commission
they did not disobey.

29 He turn'd their waters into bloud,
he did their fishes slay :

30 Their land brought frogs even in the place
where their king Pharaoh lay.

31 He spake, and at his voice there came
great swarms of noisome flies :

And all the quarters of the land
were fill'd with crawling lice.

32 He gave them cold and stonie hail
instead of milder rain :

And fiery flames within their land
he sent unto their pain.

33 He smote their vines and all their trees
whereon their figs did grow :

And all the trees within their coasts
down did he overthrow.

34 He spake, then caterpillers did,
and grasshoppers abound :

35 Which ate the grafs in all their land,
and fruit of all their ground.

The fifth part.

36 The first-begotten in their land,
eke deadly did he smite :

Yea, the beginning and first-fruit
of all their strength and might.

37 With gold and silver he them brought
from Egypt land to pass :

And in the number of their tribes
no feeble one there was.

38 Egypt was glad and joyfull then
when they did thence depart :

For terrour and the fear of them
was fall'n upon their heart.

39 To shroud them from the parching heat,
a cloud he did display :

And fire he sent to give them light
when night had hid the day.

40 They asked, and he caused quails
to rain at their request :

And fully with the bread of heaven
their hunger he repress.

41 He opened the stony rock,
and waters gushed out :

And eke the drie and parched ground
like rivers ran about.

- 42 For of his holy covenant
aye mindfull was he tho:
Which to his servant Abraham
he plighted long ago.
43 He brought his people forth with mirth,
and his elect with joy,
Out of the cruel land where they
had liv'd in great annoy.

44 And of the heathen men he gave
to them the fruitfull lands:
The labours of the people eke
they took into their hands.

- 45 That they his holy statutes might
observe for evermore,
And faithfully obey his laws:
praise ye the Lord therefore.

Confitemini Domino. Psal. cvi. N.

- P**raise ye the Lord, for he is good,
his mercy dares for aye:
2 Who can express his noble acts,
or all his praise display?
3 They blessed are that judgement keep,
and justly do alway:
4 With favour of thy people, Lord,
remember me, I pray:

And with thy saving health, O Lord,
vouchsafe to visit me:

- 5 That I the great felicitie
of thine elect may see:
And with thy peoples joy I may
a joyfull minde possess:
And may with thine inheritance
a glorying heart express.

- 6 Both we and eke our fathers all
have sinned every one:
We have committed wickedness,
and lewdly we have done.
7 The wonders great which thou, O Lord,
hast done in Egypt land,
Our fathers though they saw them all,
yet did not understand.

Nor they thy mercies multitude
did keep in thankfull minde:

- But at the sea, yea the Red sea,
rebelled most unkinde.
8 Nevertheless he saved them
for honour of his name:
That he might make his power known,
and spread abroad his fame.

- 9 The Red sea, he did then rebuke,
and forthwith it was dri'd:
And as in wilderness, so through
the deep he did them guide.
10 He sav'd them from the cruel hand
of their despightfull foe,

And from the enemies hand he did
deliver them also.

The second part.

- 11 The waters their oppressours whelm'd,
not one was left alive:
12 Then they beleev'd his word, and praise
in song they did him give.
13 But by and by unthankfully
his works they clean forgot:
And for his counsel and his will
they did neglect to wait:
14 But lusted in the wilderness
with fond and greedy lust:
And in the desert tempted God,
the stay of all their trust.
15 And then their wanton minds desire
he suffred them to have:
But wasting leanness therewithall
into their souls he gave.
16 Then when they lodged in their tents,
at Moses they did grutch:
Aaron the holy of the Lord
so did they envie much.
17 Therefore the earth did open wide,
and Dathan did devour:
And all Abiram's company
did cover in that hour.

18 In their assembly kindled was
the hot consuming fire:
And wasting flame did then burn up
the wicked in his ire.

- 19 Upon the hill of Horeb they
an idol-calf did frame:
And there the molten image they
did worship of the same.
20 Into the likeness of a calf
which feedeth on the grasse:
Thusthey their glory turn'd, and all
their honour did deface.
21 And God their onely Saviour
unkindly they forgot;
Which many great and mighty things
in Egypt land had wrought:

The third part.

- 22 And in the land of Ham for them
most wondrous works had done:
And by the Red sea dreadfull things
performed long ago.
23 Therefore for their so shewing them
forgetfull and unkinde,
To bring destruction on them all
he purpos'd in his minde:
Had not his chosen Moses stood
before him in the break,
To turn his wrath, lest he on them
with slaughter should him wreak.

24 They did despise the pleasant land
that he behight to give :

Yea, and the words that he had spoke
they did no whit beleewe.

25 But in their tents with grudging heart
they wickedly repin'd,

Nor to the voice of God the Lord
they gave an hearkning minde.

26 Therefore against them lifted he
his strong revenging hand,

Them to destroy in wilderness
ere they should see the land :

27 And to destroy their seed among
the nations with his rod :

And through the countreys of the world
to scatter them abroad.

28 To Baal-Peor then they did
adjoyn themselves also :

And are the offrings of the dead,
so they forsook him tho.

29 Thus with their own inventions
his wrath they did provoke :

And in his fore enkindled wrath
the plague upon them broke.

30 But Phinehas stood up with zeal
the sinners vile to slay :

And judgement he did execute,
and then the plague did stay.

The fourth part.

31 It was imputed unto him
for righteousness that day :

And from thenceforth so counted is
from race to race, I say.

32 At waters eke of Meribah
they did him angrie make :

Yea, so far forth, that Moses was
then punish'd for their sake:

33 Because they vext his spirit so sore,
that in impatient heat

His lips spake unadvisedly,
his fervour was so great.

34 Nor as the Lord commanded them,
they slew the people tho :

35 But were among the heathen mixt,
and learn'd their works also.

36 And did their idols serve, which were
their ruine and decay :

37 To fiends their sons and daughters they
did offer up and slay :

38 Yea, with unkindly murdering knife
the guiltless blood they spilt :

Yea, their own sons and daughters blood
without all cause of guilt.

Whom they to Canaan idols then
offred with wicked hand :

And so with blood of innocents
defiled was the land.

39 Thus were they stained with the works
of their own filthy way :

And with their own inventions
a whoring they did stray.

40 Therefore against his people was
the Lords wrath kindled sore :

And ev'n his own inheritance
he did abhor therefore.

41 Into the hands of heathen men
he gave them for a prey,

And made their foes their lords, whom they
were forced to obey.

The fifth part.

42 Yea, and their hatefull enemies
opprest them in the land :

And they were humbly made to stoop
as subjects to their hand,

43 Full oftentimes from thrall had he
delivered them before :

But with their counsel they to wrath
provok'd him evermore.

Therefore they by their wickedness
were brought full low to lie :

44 Yet when he saw them in distress,
he hearkned to their crie.

45 He call'd to minde his covenant
which he to them had swore :

And by his mercies multitude
repented him therefore.

46 And favour he them made to finde
before the sight of those

That led them captive from their land,
when erst they were their foes.

47 Save us, O Lord, that art our God,
save us, O Lord, we pray :

And from among the heathen folk,
Lord, gather us away.

48 That we may spread the noble praise
of thy most holy name :

That we may glorie in thy praise,
and sounding of thy fame.

49 The Lord the God of Israel
be blest for evermore :

Let all the people say, Amen,
praise yet the Lord therefore.

Confitemini Dom. Psal. cvii. W. K.

Give thanks unto the Lord our God,
for gracious is he :

And that his mercie hath no end
all mortal men may see.

2 Such as the Lord redeemed hath
with thanks shall praise his name :

And shew how they from foes were freed,
and how he wrought the same.

3 He gathered them forth of the lands
that lay so far about :

From east to west, from north to south
his hand did finde them out.
They wandred in the wilderness
and strayed from the way,
and found no citie where to dwell,
that serve might for their stay.
Whose thirst and hunger was so great
in these deserts so void :
That faintness did them sore assault,
and eke their souls annoy'd.
Then did they crie in their distress
unto the Lord for aid :
Who did remove their troublous state
according as they pray'd.
And by that way which was most right
he led them like a guide :
That they might to a citie go,
and there also abide.
Let men therefore before the Lord
confess his goodness then :
And shew the wonders that he doth
before the sons of men.
For he the emptie soul sustain'd,
whom thirst had made to faint :
The hungrie soul with goodness fed,
and did them eke acquaint.
Such as do dwell in darkness deep,
where they on death do wait :
Fast bound to taste such troublous storms
as iron chains do threat.

The second part.

For that against the Lords own words
they sought so to rebell :
Esteeming light his counsels high,
which do so far excell.
But when he humbled them full low,
they then fell down with grief :
And none was found so much to help,
whereby to get relief.
Then did they crie in their distress
unto the Lord for aid :
Who did remove their troublous state,
according as they pray'd.
For he from darkness out them brought,
and from deaths dreadfull shade :
Bursting with force the iron bands
which them before did lade.
Let men therefore before the Lord
confess his kindness then :
And shew the wonders that he doth
before the sons of men.
For he threw down the gates of brass,
and brake them with strong hand ;
The iron bars he smote in two,
nothing could him withstand.
The foolish folk great plagues do feel,
and cannot from them wend :

But heap on more to those they have
because they do offend.
18 Their soul so much did loath all meat,
that none they could abide :
Whereby death had them almost caught,
as they full truly tri'd.
19 Then did they crie in their distress
unto the Lord for aid :
Who did remove their troublous state
according as they pray'd.
20 For then he sent to them his word
Which health did soon restore :
And brought them from those dangers deep
wherein they were before.

The third part.

21 Let men therefore before the Lord
confess his kindness then :
And shew the wonders that he doth
before the sons of men.
22 And let them offer sacrifice
with thanks, and also fear :
And speak of all his wondrous works
with glad and joyfull cheer.
23 Such as in ships and brittle barks
into the seas descend,
Their merchandise through fearfull floods
to compass and to end :
24 Those men are forced to behold
the Lords works what they be :
And in the dangerous deep, the same
most marvellous they see.
25 For at his word the stormie winde
ariseeth in a rage,
And stirreth up the surges so
as nought can them assuage.
26 Then are they lifted up so high,
the clouds they seem to gain :
And plunging down the depth untill,
their souls consume with pain.
27 And like a drunkard now and fro
now here now there they reel,
As men with fear of wit bereft,
or had of sense no feel.
28 Then did they crie in their distress
unto the Lord for aid :
Who did remove their troublous state,
according as they pray'd.
29 For with his word the Lord doth make
the sturdie storms to cease :
So that the great waves from their rage
are brought to rest and peace.
30 Then are men glad when rest is come,
which they so much did crave
And are by him in haven brought,
which they so faine would have.

The fourth part.

- 31 Let men therefore before the Lord
confess his kindness then :
And shew the wonders that he doth
before the sons of men.
- 32 Let them in presence of the folk
with praise extoll his name :
And where the elders do convent,
there let them do the same.
- 33 For running floods to drie deserts
he doth oft change and turn :
And drieth up as it were dust
the springing well and bourn.
- 34 A fruitfull land with pleasures deckt
full barren doth he make :
When on their sins that dwell therein
he doth just vengeance take.
- 35 Again the wilderness full rude
he maketh fruit to bear :
With pleasant springs of waters clear,
though none before were there :
- 36 Wherein such hungrie souls are set
as he doth freely chuse :
That they a citie may them build
to dwell in for their use.
- 37 That they may sow their pleasant land,
and vineyards also plant,
To yeeld them fruits of such increase,
as none may seem to want.
- 38 They multiply exceedingly,
the Lord doth blest them so :
Who doth also the brute beasts make
by numbers great to grow.
- 39 But when the faithfull are low brought
by the oppressours stout,
And minish do through many plagues
that compass them about :
- 40 Then doth he princes bring to shame
which did them sore oppreis :
And likewise caused them to err
within the wilderness.
- 41 But yet the poor he raiseth up
out of his troubles deep :
And oft-times doth his train augment,
much like a flock of sheep.
- 42 The righteous shall behold this sight,
and also much rejoyce :
Whereas the wicked and perverse
with grief shall stop their voice
- 43 But who is wise, that now full well
he may these things record ?
For certainly such shall perceive
the kindness of the Lord.

Paratum cor. Psal. cviii. J. H.

O God my heart prepared is,
and eke my tongue is for

- I will advance my voice in song,
and giving praise also.
- 2 Awake my violand my harp
sweet melodie to make;
And in the morning I my self
right early will awake.
- 3 By me among the people: Lord,
still praised shalt thou be :
And I among the heathen folk
will sing, O Lord, to thee.
- 4 Because thy mercie, Lord, is great
above the heavens high :
And eke thy truth doth reach the clouds
within the loftie skie.
- 5 Above the starrie heavens high
exalt thy self, O God :
And, Lord, display upon the earth
thy glorie all abroad.
- 6 That thy dearly beloved may
be set at libertie :
Help, O my God, with thy right hand,
and hearken unto me.
- 7 God in his holiness hath spoke,
wherefore my joys abound :
Sichem I will divide and mere
the vale of Succoth-ground.
- 8 And Gilead shall be mine own,
Manasses mine shall be:
My head-strength, Ephraim ; and law
shall Judah give for me.
- 9 Moab my wash-pot, and my shoe
on Edom will I throw :
Upon the land of Palestine
in triumph will I go.
- 10 Who shall into the citie strong
be guide to conduct me ?
Or how? by whom to Edom land
conveyed shall I be ?
- 11 Is it not thou, O Lord, which late
hadst us forsaken quite ?
And thou, O Lord, which with our hosts
didst not go forth to fight ?
- 12 Give us, O Lord, thy saving aid
when troubles do assail :
For all the help of man is vain,
and can no whit avail.
- 13 Through God we shall do valiant acts
and worthy of renown,
He shall subdue our enemies,
yea, he shall tread them down.
- Deus, laudem tuam. Psal. cix. N.*
IN speechless silence do not hold,
O God, thy tongue always :
O God, even thou, I say, that art
the God of all my praise.
- 2 The wicked and the guilefull mouth
on me disclosed be :

And they with false and lying tongues
have spoken unto me.

3 They did beset me round about
with words of hatefull spight :

Without all cause of my desert
against me they did fight.

4 For my good will they were my foes,
but then gan I to pray :

5 My good with ill, my friendlinesse
with hate they did repay.

6 Set thou the wicked over him,
to have the upper hand :

At his right hand eke suffer thou
his hatefull foe to stand.

7 When he is judged, let him then
condemned be therein :

And let the prayer that he makes
be turned into sin.

8 Few be his days, his charge also
let thou another take :

9 His children let be fatherless,
his wife a widow make.

10 Let his off-spring be vagabonds,
to beg and seek their bread :

Wandering out of the wasted place
where erst they have been fed.

11 Let covetous extortioners
catch all his goods and store :

And let the stranger spoil the fruit
of all his toil before.

12 Let there be none to pity him,
let there be none at all

That on his children fatherless
will let their mercy fall.

The second part.

13 And so let his posterity
for ever be destroy'd :

Their name out-blotted in the age
that after shall succeed.

14 Let not his fathers wickedness
from Gods remembrance fall :

And let not thou his mothers sin
be done away at all.

15 But in the presence of the Lord
let them remain for aye :

That from the earth their memory
he may cut clean away.

16 Sith mercy he forgot to shew,
but did pursue with spite

The troubled man, and sought to slay
the wofull-hearted wight.

17 As he did cursing love, it shall
betide unto him so :

And as he did not blessing love,
it shall be far him fro.

18 As he with cursing clad himself,
so it like water shall

Into his bowels, and like oyl
into his bones befall.

19 As garment let it be to him,
to cover him for aye :

And as a girdle wherewith he
shall girded be alway.

20 Lo, let the same be from the Lord
the guerdon of my foe :

Yea, and of those that evil speak
against my soul also.

21 But thou, O Lord, that art my God,
deal thou, I say, with me

After thy name, deliver me ;
for good thy mercies be.

22 Because in depth of great distress
I needy am and poor :

And eke within my pained breast
my heart is wounded sore.

The third part.

23 Even so do I depart away,
as doth declining shade :

And as the grasshopper, so I
am shaken off and fade.

24 With fasting long from needfull food
enfeebled are my knees :

And all her fatness hath my flesh
enforced been to leese.

25 And I also a vile reproach
to them am made to be :

And they that did upon me look
did shake their heads at me.

26 But thou O Lord, that art my God,
mine aid and succour be :

According to thy mercy, Lord,
save and deliver me.

27 And they shall know thereby, that this
(Lord) is thy mighty hand :

And that thou, thou hast done it, Lord,
so shall they understand.

28 Although they curse with spite, yet thou
shalt bless with loving voice :

They shall arise and come to shame,
thy servant shall rejoyce.

29 Let them be clothed all with shame,
that enemies are to me :

And with confusion as a cloke
eke covered let them be.

30 But greatly I will with my mouth
give thanks unto the Lord :

And I among the multitude
his praises will record.

31 For he with help at his right hand
will stand the poor man by,

To save him from the man that would
condemn his soul to die.

Dixit Dominus. Psal. cx. N.

THe Lord did say unto my Lord,
 Sitthou on my right hand,
 Till I have made thy foes a stool
 whereon thy feet shall stand.
 2 The Lord shall out of Sion send
 the sceptre of thy might:
 Amid thy mortal foes be thou
 the ruler in their fight.
 3 And in the day on which thy reign
 and power they shall see:
 Then hereby free-will-offrings shall
 the people offer thee.
 Yea, with an holy worshipping
 then shall they offer all:
 Thy births dew is the dew that doth
 from womb of morning fall.
 4 The Lord hath sworn, and never will
 repent what he doth say:
 By th' order of Melchisedech
 thou art a priest for ay.
 5 The Lord thy God, on thy right hand
 that standeth for thy stay,
 Shall wound for thee the stately kings
 upon his wrathfull day.
 6 The heathen he shall judge, and fill
 the place with bodies dead:
 And over divers countreys shall
 in sunder smite the head.
 7 And he shall drink out of the brook
 that runneth in the way:
 Wherefore he shall lift up on high
 his royal head that day.

Confitebortibi. Psal. cxl. N.

With heart I do accord
 To praise and laud the Lord,
 In presence of the just.
 2 For great his works are sound,
 To search them such are bound
 As do him love and trust.
 3 His works are glorious;
 Also his righteousness
 It doth endure for ever.
 4 His wondrous works he would
 We still remember should,
 His mercie faileth never.
 5 Such as to him love bear;
 A portion full fair
 He hath up for them laid:
 For this they shall well finde,
 He will them have in minde,
 And keep them as he said.
 6 For he did not disdain
 His works to shew them plain,
 By lightnings and by thunders:

When he the heathens land
 Did give into their hand,
 Where they beheld his wonders.

7 Of all his works enfa'th
 Both judgement, right, and truth;
 Whereto his statutes tend;
 8 They are decreed sure
 For ever to endure,
 Which equitie doth end.
 Redemption he gave
 His people for to save:
 9 And hath also required;
 His promise not to fail,
 But always to prevail:
 His holy name be feared.
 10 Who so with heart full fain
 True wisdom would attain,
 The Lord fear and obey:
 Such as his laws do keep
 Shall knowledge have full deep,
 His praise shall last for ay.

Beatus vir. Psal. cxlii. W. K.

THe man is blest that God doth fear
 And that his law doth love indeed:
 2 His seed on earth God will uprear,
 And blest such as from him proceed.
 3 His house with good he will fulfill;
 His righteousness endure shall still.
 4 Unto the righteous doth arise
 In trouble joy, in darkness light;
 Compassion is in his eyes,
 And mercie always in his sight.
 5 Yea pitie moveth such to lend;
 He doth by judgement things expend.
 6 And surely such shall never fail,
 For in remembrance had is he:
 7 Notidings ill can make him quail
 Who in the Lord sure hope doth see.
 8 His heart is firm, his fear is past,
 For he shall see his foes down cast.
 9 He did well for the poor provide,
 His righteousness shall still remain:
 And his estate with praise abide,
 Though that the wicked man disdain.
 10 Yea, gnash his teeth thereat shall he,
 And so consume his state to see.

Laudate pueri. Psal. cxliii. W. K.

YE children which do serve the Lord,
 Praise ye his name with one accord.
 2 Yea, blessed be always his name,
 3 Who from the rising of the sun,
 Till it return where it begun,
 Is to be praised with great fame.
 4 The Lord all people doth surmount;
 As for his glorie we may count,
 Above the heavens high to be.

5 With God the Lord who may compare,
Whose dwellings in the heavens are?
Of such great power and force is he.

6 He doth abase himself, we know;
Things to behold both here below,
And also in heaven above.

7 The needie out of dust to draw,
And eke the poor which help none saw,
His onely mercie did him move.

8 And so him set in high degree
With princes of great dignitie,
That rule his people with great fame.

9 The barren he doth make to bear,
And with great joy her fruit to rear:
Therefore praise ye his holy name.

In exitu Israel. Psal. cxiii. W. W.

When Israel by Gods address
from Pharaohs land was bent:
And Jacobs house the strangers left,
and in the same train went:

2 In Judah God his glorie shew'd,
his holiness most bright:
So did the Israelites declare
his kingdome, power, and might.

3 The sea it saw, and suddenly
as all amaz'd, did flee:
The roaring streams of Jordans flood
recoyled backwardly.

4 As rams afraid the mountains skipt,
their strength did them forsake:
And as the silly trembling lambs,
their tops did beat and shake.

5 What ail'd thee sea, as all amaz'd,
so suddenly to flee?

Ye rolling waves of Jordans flood,
why ran ye backwardly?

6 Why shook ye hills, as rams afraid?
why did your strength so shake?

Why did your tops, as trembling lambs,
for fear quiver and quake?

7 O earth, confesse thy sovereign Lord,
and dread his mighty hand:

Before the face of Jacobs God
fear ye both sea and land.

8 I mean the God, which from hard rocks
doth cause main floods appear

And from the stonie flint doth cause
gush out the fountains clear.

Non nobis, Domine. Psal. cxv. N.

Not unto us, Lord, not to us,
but to thy name give praise,
Both for thy mercie and thy truth
that are in thee always.

2 Why shall the heathen scorners say,
Where is their God become?

3 Our God in heaven is, and what
he will, that hath he done.

4 Their idols silver are and gold,
works of mens hands they be:

5 They have a mouth, and do not speak;
and eyes, and do not see:

6 And they have ears joyn'd to their heads,
and do not hear at all:

And noses eke they formed have
and do not smell withall:

7 And hands they have, and handle not;
and feet, and do not go:

A throat, they have, yet through the same
they make no sound to blow.

8 Those that make them are like to them,
and those whose trust they be.

9 O Israel trust in the Lord,
their help and shield is he.

10 O Aarons house trust in the Lord,
their help and shield is he:

11 Trust ye the Lord that fear the Lord,
their help and shield is he.

12 The Lord hath mindfull been of us,
and will us blest also:

On Israel and on Aarons house
his blessings he will show.

13 Them that be fearers of the Lord,
the Lord will blest them all:

Even he will blest them every one,
the great and eke the small.

14 To you (I say) the living Lord
will multiply his grace:

To you and to the children that
shall follow of your race.

15 Ye are the blessed of the Lord,
even of the Lord, I say:

Which both the heaven and the earth
hath made and set in stay.

16 The heavens, yea the heavens high
belong unto the Lord:

The earth unto the sons of men
he gave of free accord.

17 They that be dead do not with praise
set forth the Lords renown:

Nor any that into the place
of silence do go down.

18 But we will praise the Lord our God
from henceforth and for ay:

Sound ye the praises of the Lord;
praise ye the Lord, I say.

Dilexi quoniam. Psal. cxvi. N.

I Love the Lord, because my voice
and prayer heard hath he:

2 When in my days I call'd on him,
he bow'd his ear to me.

3 Even when the snares of cruel death
about beset me round:

When pains of hell me caught, and when
I wo and sorrow found.

4 Upon the name of God my Lord,
then did I call, and say,

Deliver thou my soul, O Lord,
I do thee humbly pray.

5 The Lord is verie mercifull,
and just he is also :

And in our God compassion
doth plentifully flow.

6 The Lord in safetie doth preserve
all those that simple be ;

I was in wofull miserie,
and he delivered me.

7 And now my soul sith thou art safe,
return unto thy rest :

For largely, lo, the Lord to thee
his bountie hath exprest.

8 Because thou hast delivered
my soul from deadly thrall :
My moistned eyes from mournfull tears,
my sliding feet from fall.

9 Before the Lord I in the land
of life will walk therefore :

10 I did beleeeve, therefore I spake,
for I was troubled sore.

The second part.

11 I said in my distress and fear,
that all men liars be :

12 What shall I pay the Lord for all
his benefits to me ?

13 The wholesome cup of saving health,
I thankfully will take :

And on the Lords name I will call
when I my prayer make.

14 I to the Lord will pay the vows
that I to him behight :

Yea, even at this present time
in all his peoples fight.

15 Right dear and precious in his sight
the Lord doth aie esteem

The death of all his holy ones,
what ever men do deem.

16 Thy servant, Lord, thy servant, lo,
I do my self confesse,

Son of thy handmaid: thou hast broke
the bonds of my distress.

17 And I will offer up to thee
a sacrifice of praise :

And I will call upon the name
of God the Lord always.

18 I to the Lord will pay the vows
that I have him behight :

Yea, even at this present time
in all his peoples fight.

19 Yea, in the courts of Gods own house,
and in the midst of thee,

O thou Jerusalem, I say ;
wherefore the Lord praise ye.

Laudate Dominum. Psal. cxvii. N.

O All ye nations of the world,
praise ye the Lord always :

And all ye people everie where
set forth his noble praise.

2 For great his kindness is to us,
his truth endures for aie :

Wherefore praise ye the Lord our God,
praise ye the Lord, I say.

Confitemini. Psal. cxviii. N.

O Give ye thanks unto the Lord,
for gracious is he :

Because his mercie doth endure
for ever towards thee.

2 Let Israel confesse and say,
his mercie dures for aie :

3 Now let the house of Aaron say,
his mercie dures for aie.

4 Let all that fear the Lord our God
even now confesse and say,

The mercie of the Lord our God
endureth still for aie.

5 In trouble and in heaviness
unto the Lord I cri'd :

Which lovingly heard me at large,
my suit was not deni'd.

6 The Lord himself is on my side,
I will not stand in doubt,

Nor fear what man can do to me
when God stands me about.

7 The Lord doth take my part with them
that help to succour me :

Therefore I shall see my desire
upon mineemie.

8 Better it is to trust in God
then in mans mortal seed :

9 Or to put confidence in kings
or princes in our need.

10 All nations have enclosed me,
and compassed me round :

But in the name of God shall I
mineemies confound.

11 They kept me in on everie side,
they kept me in, I say :

But in the Lords most mightie name
I shall work their decay.

12 They came about me all like bees;
but yet in the Lords name

I quencht their thorns, that were on fire,
and will destroy the same

The second part.

13 Thou hast with force thrust sore at me
that I indeed might fall :

But through the Lord I found ſuch help
that they were vanquiſht all.

14 The Lord is my defence and ſtrength,
my joy, my mirth, my ſong :

He is become for me indeed
a Saviour moſt ſtrong.

15 The right hand of the Lord our God
doth bring to paſs great things :

He cauſeth voice of joy and health
in righteous mens dwellings.

16 The right hand of the Lord doth bring
moſt mightie things to paſs :

His hand hath the preeminence,
his force is as it was.

17 I ſhall not die, but ever live
to utter and declare

The Lord his might and wondrous power,
his works, and what they are.

18 The Lord himſelf hath chaſtened
and hath corrected me :

But hath not given me over yet
to death, as ye may ſee.

19 Set open unto me the gates
of truth and righteousneſs :

That I may enter into them
the Lords praife to expreſs.

20 This is the gate even of the Lord,
which ſhall not ſo be ſhut ;

But good and righteous men alway
ſhall enter into it.

The third part.

21 I will give thanks to thee, O Lord,
becauſe thou haſt heard me.

And art become moſt lovingly
a Saviour unto me.

22 The ſtone which ere this time among
the builders was reſuſed,

Is now become the corner-ſtone,
and chiefly to be uſed.

23 This was the mightie work of God;
this was the Lords own fact :

And it is marvellous to behold
with eyes that noble art.

24 This is the joyfull day indeed
which God himſelf hath wrought :

Let us be glad and joy therein
in heart, in minde, in thought.

25 Now help us, Lord, and proſper us,
we wiſh with one accord.

26 Blessed is he that comes to us
in the name of the Lord.

27 God is the Lord that ſhews us light,
binde ye therefore with cord

Your ſacrifice to the altar,
and give thanks to the Lord.

28 Thou art my God, I will confeſs,
and render thanks to thee :

Thou art my God, and I will praife
thy mercie towards me.

29 O give ye thanks unto the Lord,
for gracious is he :

Becauſe his mercie doth endure
for ever towards me.

Beati immaculati. Pſal. cix. w. w.

Bless'd are they that perfect are,
and pure in minde and heart :

Whoſe lives and converſations
from Gods laws never ſtart.

2 Blessed are they that give themſelves
his ſtatutes to obſerve :

Seeking the Lord with all their heart,
and never from him ſwerve.

3 Doubtleſs ſuch men go nor aſtray
nor do no wicked thing,

Which ſtedfaſtly walk in his way
without any wandring.

4 It is thy will and commandment,
that with attentive heed

Thy noble and divine precepts
we learn and keep indeed.

5 O would to God it might thee pleaſe
my ways ſo to addreſs

That I might both in heart and voice
thy laws keep and confeſs !

6 So ſhould no ſhame my life attain,
whil'ſt I thus ſet mine eyes,

And bend my minde alway to muſe
on thy ſacred decrees.

7 Then will I praife with upright heart,
and magnifie thy name,

When I ſhall learn thy judgements juſt,
and likewise prove the ſame.

8 And wholly will I give my ſelf
to keep thy laws moſt right :

Forſake me not for ever, Lord,
but ſhew thy grace and might.

BETH. The ſecond part.

9 By what means may a young man beſt
his life learn to amend ?

If that he mark and keep thy word,
and therein his time ſpend.

10 Unfeignedly I have thee ſought,
and thus ſeeking abide :

O never ſuffer me, O Lord,
from thy precepts to ſlide.

11 Within my heart and ſecret thoughts
thy words I have hid ſtill :

That I might not any time
offend thy godly will.

12 We magnifie thy name, O Lord,
and praife thee evermore :

by statutes of most worthy fame,
O Lord, teach me therefore.

3 My lips have never ceas'd to preach
and publish day and night

The judgements all which did proceed
from thy mouth full of might.

4 Thy testimonies and thy ways
please me no less indeed

Then all the treasures of the earth,
which worldlings make their meed.

5 Of thy precepts I will still muse,
and thereto frame my talk:

As at a mark so will I aim
thy way show I may walk.

6 My onely joy shall be so fixt,
and on thy laws so set:

That nothing can me so far blinde,
that I thy words forget.

G I M E L. The third part.

7 Grant to thy servant now such grace
as may my life prolong:

Thy holy word then will I keep
both in my heart and tongue.

8 Mine eyes which were dim and shut up,
so open and make bright:

That of thy law and marvellous works
I may have the clear sight:

9 I am a stranger in this earth,
wandring now here now there:

Thy word therefore to me disclose
my footsteps for to clear.

20 My soul is ravish'd with desire,
and never is at rest:

But seeks to know thy judgements high,
and what may please thee best.

21 The proud men and malicious
thou hast destroy'd each one:

And cursed are such as do not
thy hefts attend upon.

22 Lord turn from me rebuke and shame
which wicked men conspire:

For I have kept thy covenants
with zeal as hot as fire.

23 The princes great in counsel sat,
and did against me speak:

But then thy servant thought how he
thy statutes might not break.

24 For why? thy covenants are my joy,
and my hearts great solace:

They serve in stead of counsellors
my matters for to pass.

D A L E T H. The fourth part.

25 I am, alas, as brought to grave,
and almost turn'd to dust:

Restore therefore my life again,
as thy promise is just.

26 My ways when I acknowledged,
with mercy thou didst hear:

Hear now eftssoon, and me instruct
thy laws to love and fear.

27 Teach me once throughly for to know
thy precepts and thy lore

Thy works then will I meditate,
and lay them up in store.

28 My soul I feel so sore oppress'd,
that it melteth for grief:

According to thy word therefore
haste, Lord, to send relief.

29 From lying and deceitfull lips
let thy grace me defend:

And that I may learn thee to love,
thy holy law me send.

30 The way of truth both straight and sure
I have chosen and found:

I set thy judgements me before
which keep me safe and sound.

31 Since then, O Lord, I forc'd my self
thy covenants to embrace:

Let me therefore have no rebuke
nor check in any case.

32 Then will I run with joyfull cheer
where thy word doth me call:

When thou hast set my heart at large,
and rid me out of thrall.

H E. The fifth part.

33 Instruct me, Lord, in the right trade
of thy statutes divine:

And it to keep even to the end
my heart will I encline.

34 Grant me the knowledge of thy law
and I shall it obey:

With heart and minde and all my might
I will it keep, I say.

35 In the right paths of thy precepts
guide me, Lord, I require:

None other pleasure do I wish,
nor greater thing desire.

36 Incline my heart thy laws to keep,
and covenants to embrace:

And from all filthie avarice,
Lord, shield me with thy grace.

37 From vain desires and worldly lusts
turn back mine eyes and sight:

Give me the spirit of life and power
to walk thy ways aright.

38 Confirm thy gracious promise, Lord,
which thou hast made to me,

Which am thy servant, and do love
and fear nothing but thee.

39 Reproach and shame which I so fear,
from me, O Lord, expell:

For thou dost judge with equitie,
and therein dost excell.

40 Behold, my hearts desire is bent
thy laws to keep for ay:
Lord, strengthen me so with thy grace,
that it perform I may.

VAV. The sixth part.

41 Thy mercies great and manifold
let me obtain, O Lord:
Thy saving health let me enjoy,
according to thy word.
42 So shall I stop the slanderous mouthes
of lewd men and unjust:
For in thy faithfull promises
stands my comfort and trust.
43 The word of truth within my mouth
let ever still be prest:
For in thy judgements wonderfull
my hope doth stand and rest.
44 And whilst that breath within my breast
doth natural life preserve:
Yea, till this world shall be dissolv'd,
thy law will I observe.
45 So walk will I as set at large,
and made free from all dread:
Because I sought how for to keep
thy precepts and thy read.
46 Thy noble acts I will describe,
as thing of most great fame:
Even before kings I will them blaze,
and shrink no whit for shame.
47 I will rejoyce them to obey
thy worthy hefts and will:
Whichever more I have lov'd best,
and so will love them still.
48 My hands I will lift to thy laws
which I have dearly sought:
And practise thy commandements
in will, in deed, in thought.

ZAIN. The seventh part.

49 Thy promise which thou mad'st to me
thy servant, Lord, remember:
For therein have I put my trust
and confidence for ever.
50 It is my comfort and my joy
when troubles me assail:
For were my life not by thy word,
my life would soon me fail.
51 The proud and such as God contemn
still made of me a scorn:
Yet would I not thy law forsake,
as he that were forlorn:
52 But call'd to minde, Lord, thy great works
shew'd to our fathers old:
Whereby I felt the joy surmount
my grief an hundred-fold.
53 But yet, alas, for fear I quake,
seeing how wicked men

Thy law forsook and did procure
thy judgements who knows when?
54 And as for me, I fram'd my songs
thy statutes to exalt,
When I among the strangers dwelt,
and thoughts gan me assault.
55 I thought upon thy name, O Lord,
by night when others sleep:
As for thy law also I kept,
and ever will it keep.
56 This grace I did obtain, because
thy covenants sweet and dear
I did embrace, and also keep
with reverence and with fear.

HETH. The eighth part.

57 O God which art my part and lot,
my comfort and my stay,
I have decreed and promised
thy laws to keep alway.
58 Mine earnest heart did humbly sue
in presence of thy face:
As thou therefore hast promised,
Lord, grant me of thy grace.
59 My life I have examined,
and tri'd my secret heart
Which to thy statutes caused me
my feet straight to convert.
60 I did not stay nor linger long,
as they that slothfull are:
But hastily thy laws to keep
I did my self prepare.
61 The cruel bands of wicked men
have made of me their prey:
Yet would I not thy law forget,
nor from thee go astray.
62 Thy righteous judgements towards me
so great are and so high:
That even at midnight will I rise
thy name to magnifie.
63 Companion am I to all them
which fear thee in their heart:
And never will for love nor dread
from thy commandments start.
64 Thy mercies, Lord, most plenteously
do all the world fulfill:
O teach me how I may obey
thy statutes and thy will.

TETH. The ninth part.

65 According to thy promise, Lord,
so hast thou with me dealt:
For of thy grace in sundry sorts
have I thy servant felt.
66 Teach me to judge always aright,
and give me knowledge sure:
For certainly beleieve I do,
that thy precepts are pure.

- 57 Ere thou didst touch me with thy rod,
I err'd and went astray :
But now I keep thy holy word,
and make it all my stay.
- 68 Thou art both good and gracious,
and giv'st most liberally :
Thine ordinances how to keep,
therefore, O Lord, teach me.
- 69 The proud and wicked men have forg'd
against me many a lie :
Yet thy commandments still observe
with all my heart will I. (wealth,
- 70 Their hearts are swoln with worldly
as grease so are they fat :
But in thy law do I delight,
and nothing seek but that.
- 71 O happy time, may I well say,
when thou didst me correct :
For as a guide to learn thy laws
thy rod did me direct.
- 72 So that to me thy word and law
is dearer manifold
Then thousands great of silver and gold,
or ought that can be told.

30 D. The tenth part.

- 73 Seeing thy hands have made me, Lord,
to be thy creature :
Grant knowledge likewise how to learn
to put thy laws in ure.
- 74 So they that fear thee shall rejoyce
when ever they me see :
Because I have learn'd by thy word
to put my trust in thee.
- 75 When with thy rods the world is plagu'd
I know the cause is just :
So when thou dost correct me, Lord,
the cause just needs be must.
- 76 Now of thy goodness I thee pray
some comfort to me send :
As thou to me thy servant hefst,
so from all ill me shend.
- 77 Thy tender mercies pour on me,
and I shall surely live:
For joy and consolation both
thy law to me doth give.
- 78 Confound the proud, whose false pretence
is me for to destroy :
But as for me thy hefts to know
I will my self employ.
- 79 Whoso with reverence do thee fear
to me let them retire :
And such as do thy covenants know,
and them alone desire.
- 80 My heart without all wavering
let on thy laws be bent :
That no confusion come to me
whereby I should be shent.

CAPH. The xi part.

- 81 My soul doth faint, and ceaseth not
thy saving health to crave :
And for thy words sake still I trust
my hearts desire to have.
- 82 Mine eyes do fail with looking for
thy word, and thus I say,
Oh when wilt thou me comfort, Lord ?
why dost thou thus delay ?
- 83 As a skin-bottle in the smoke,
so am I parcht and dri'd :
Yet will I not out of my heart
let thy commandments slide.
- 84 Alas how long shall I yet live
before I see the hour,
That on my foes which me torment,
thy vengeance thou wilt pour ?
- 85 Presumptuous men have digged pits,
thinking to make me sure :
Thus contrary against thy law,
my hurt they do procure.
- 86 But thy commandments are all true,
and causless they me grieve :
To thee therefore I do complain,
that thou mightst me relieve.
- 87 Almost they had me clean destroy'd,
and brought me quite to ground :
Yet by thy statutes I abode,
and therein succour found.
- 88 Restore me, Lord, again to life,
for thy mercies excell :
And so shall I thy covenants keep
till death my life expell.

LAMED. The xii part.

- 89 In heaven, Lord, where thou dost dwell,
thy word is stablish't sure :
And shall for all eternitie
fast graven there endure.
- 90 From age to age thy truth abides,
as doth the earth witness :
Whose ground-work thou hast laid so sure
as no tongue can express.
- 91 Even to this day we may well see
how all things persevere
According to thine ordinance,
for all things thee revere.
- 92 Had it not been that in thy law
my soul had comfort sought,
Long time ere now in my distress
I had been brought to nought.
- 93 Therefore will I thy precepts aye
in memory keep fast :
By them thou hast my life restor'd
when I was at last cast.
- 94 No wight to me can title make,
for I am onely thine :

Save me therefore, for to thy laws
mine ears and heart incline.

95 The wicked men do seek my bane,
and thereto lie in wait:

But I the while considered
thy noble works and great.

96 I see nothing in this wide world
at length which hath not end:

But thy commandments and thy word
beyond all end extend.

MEM. The xiii part.

97 What great desire and fervent love
do I bear to thy law!

All the day long my whole device
is onely on thy law.

98 Thy word hath taught me far to pass
my foes in policie:

For still I hold it as a thing
of most excellencie.

99 My teachers which did me instruct,
in knowledge I excell:

Because I do thy covenants keep,
and them to others tell.

100 In wisdom I do pass also
the ancient men indeed:

And all because to keep thy laws
I held it aye best reed.

101 My feet I have refrained eke
from every evil way,

Because that I continually
thy word might keep, I say,

102 I have not swerv'd from thy judgements,
nor yet shrunk any dell:

For why? thou hast me taught thereby
to live godly and well.

103 O Lord, how sweet unto my taste
finde I thy words alway?

Doubtless no honey in my mouth
feel ought so sweet I may.

104 Thy laws have me such wisdom learn'd
that utterly I hate

All wicked and ungodly ways,
in every kinde or rate.

NUN. The xiiii part.

105 Even as a lantern to my feet,
so doth thy word shine bright:

And to my paths where ever I go
it is a flaming light.

106 I have both sworn and will perform
most certainly doubtless

That I will keep thy judgements just,
and them in life expresse.

107 Affliction hath me sore oppress'd,
and brought me to death's door:

O Lord, as thou hast promised,
so me to life restore.

108 The offerings which with heart and voice
most frankly I thee give

Accept, and teach me how I may
after thy judgements live.

109 My soul is aye so in my hand,
that dangers me assail:

Yet do I not thy law forget,
nor it to keep will fail.

110 Although the wicked laid their nets
to catch me at a bay.

Yet did I not from thy precepts
once swerve or go astray.

111 Thy law I have so claim'd alway
as mine own heritage:

And why? for therein I delight,
and let my whole courage.

112 For evermore I have been bent
thy statutes to fulfill:

Even so likewise unto the end
I will continue still.

SAMECH. The xv part.

113 The crafty thoughts and double hearted
I do always detest:

But as for thy law and precepts,
I love them ever best.

114 Thou art my hid and secret place,
my shield of strong defence:

Therefore have I thy promises
lookt for with patience.

115 Go to therefore ye wicked men,
depart from me anon:

For the commandments will I keep
of God my Lord alone.

116 As thou hast promised so perform,
that death me not assail:

Nor let my hope abuse me so,
that through distrust I quail.

117 Uphold me, and I shall be safe
for ought they do or say:

And in thy statutes pleasure take
will I both night and day.

118 Thou hast trod such under thy feet
as do thy statutes break:

For nought availst their subtiltie,
their counsel is but weak.

119 Like dross thou casts the wicked out
where ere they go or dwell:

Therefore can I as thy statutes
love nothing half so well.

120 My flesh (alas) is taken with fear,
as though it were benumm'd:

For when I see thy judgements, straight
I am as one aston'd,

AIN. The xvi part.

121 I do the thing that lawfull is,
and give to all men sight:

122 ~~me not to them that would~~
~~oppress me with their might.~~
 But for thy servant suretie be
 in that thing that is good:
 That proud men give me not the foil,
 which rage as they were wood.
 123 Mine eyes with waiting are now blinde,
 thy health so much I crave:
 And eke thy righteous promise, Lord,
 whereby thou wilt me save.
 124 Entreat thy servant lovingly,
 and favour to him show:
 Thy statutes of most excellencie
 teach me also to know.
 125 Thy humble servant, Lord, I am,
 grant me to understand
 How by thy statutes I may know
 best what to take in hand.
 126 It is now time, Lord, to begin,
 for truth is quite decay'd:
 Thy law likewise they have transgressed,
 and none against them said.
 127 This is the cause wherefore I love
 thy laws better then gold,
 Or jewels fine which are esteem'd
 most costly to be sold.
 128 I thought thy precepts all most just,
 and so them laid in store:
 All craftie and malicious ways
 I do abhor therefore.

P E. The xvii part.

129 Thy covenants are most wonderfull,
 and full of things profound:
 My soul therefore doth keep them sure,
 when they are tri'd and found.
 130 When men first enter into thy word
 they finde a light most clear:
 And very idiots understand
 when they it read or hear.
 131 For joy I have both gap'd and breath'd
 to know thy commandment:
 That I might guide my self thereby,
 I sought what thing it meant.
 132 With mercy and compassion, Lord,
 behold me from above,
 As thou art wont to behold such
 as thy name fear and love.
 133 Direct my footsteps by thy word,
 that I thy will may know:
 And never let iniquitie
 thy servant overthrow.
 134 From slanderous tongues & deadly harms
 preserve and keep me sure:
 Thy precepts then will I observe,
 and put them eke in ure.

135 Thy countenance which doth surmount
 the sun in his bright hue,
 Let shine on me, and by thy law
 teach me what to eschew.
 136 Out of mine eyes great fouds gush out
 of dreary tears and fell,
 When I behold how wicked men
 thy laws keep never a dell.

Z A D E. The xviii part.

137 In every point, Lord, thou art just,
 the wicked though they grudge:
 And when thou dost sentence pronounce,
 thou art a righteous judge.
 138 To render right, and flee from guile,
 are two chief points most high:
 And such as thou hast in thy law
 commanded us straitly.
 139 With zeal and wrath I am consum'd
 and even pin'd away,
 To see my foes thy word forget,
 for ought that I do may.
 140 So pure and perfect is thy word,
 as any heart can deem:
 And I thy servant nothing more
 do love or yet esteem.
 141 And though I be nothing set by,
 as one of base degree:
 Yet do I not thy laws forget,
 nor shrink away from thee.
 142 Thy righteousness, Lord, is most just,
 for ever to endure:
 Also thy law is truth it self,
 most constant and most pure.
 143 Trouble and grief have seisd on me,
 and brought me wondrous low:
 Yet do I still of thy precepts
 delight to hear and know.
 144 The righteousness of thy judgements
 doth last for evermore:
 Then teach them me, for even in them
 my life lies up in store.

K O P H. The xix part.

145 With fervent heart I call'd and cri'd,
 now answer me, O Lord:
 That thy commandments to observe
 I may fully accord.
 146 To thee, my God, I make my suit
 with most humble request:
 Save me therefore, and I will keep
 thy precepts and thy bests.
 147 To thee I crie even in the morn
 before the day wax light:
 Because that I have in thy word
 my confidence whole plight.
 148 Mine eyes prevent the watch by night,
 and ere they call I wake:

That by devising on thy word
I might some comfort take.

149 Incline thine ears to hear my voice,
and pity on me take :

As thou wast wont, so judge me Lord,
lest life should me forsake.

150 My foes draw near, and do procure
my death maliciously,

Which from thy law are far gone back,
and stray'd from it lewdly.

151 Therefore, O Lord, approach thou near,
for need doth so require :

For all thy precepts true they are,
then help I thee desire.

152 But thy commandments have I learn'd
not now but long ago,

That they remain for evermore,
thou hast them grounded so.

RESH. The xx part.

153 My trouble and affliction
consider and behold :

Deliver me, for of thy law
I ever take fast hold.

154 Defend my good and righteous cause,
with speed some succour send:

From death, as thou hast promised,
Lord keep me and defend.

155 As for the wicked, far they are
from having health and grace :

Whereby they might thy statutes know
they enter not the trace.

156 Great are thy mercies, Lord, I grant,
what tongue can them attain?

And as thou hast me judg'd ere now,
so let me life obtain.

157 Though many men did trouble me,
and persecute me sore :

Yet from thy laws I never shrunk,
nor went awry therefore.

158 And truth it is, for grief I die
when I these traitours see :

Because they keep no whit thy word,
nor yet seek to know thee.

159 Behold, for I do love thy laws
with heart most glad and fain :

As thou art good and gracious, Lord,
restore my life again.

160 What thy word doth decree must be,
and so it hath been ever :

Thy righteous judgements are also
most true and decay never.

SCHIN. The xxi part.

161 Princes have sought by cruelty
causeless to make me crouch :

But all in vain, for of thy word
the fear did my heart touch :

162 And certainly even of thy word

I was more merry and glad,
Then he that of rich spoils and prey
great store and plenty had.

163 As for all lies and falsities,
I hate most and detest :

For why ? thy holy law do I
above all things love best.

164 Seventimes a day I praise the Lord,
singing with heart and voice :

Thy righteous acts and wonderfull
for cause me to rejoyce.

165 Great peace and rest shall all such have
as do thy statutes love :

No danger shall their quiet state
empair or once remove.

166 My onely health and comfort, Lord,
I look for at thy hand :

And therefore have I done those things
which thou didst me command.

167 Thy laws have been mine exercise,
which my soul most desired :

So much to them my love was bent,
that nought else I required.

168 Thy statutes and commandments
I kept (thou know'st) aright :

For all the things that I have done
are present in thy sight.

TAU. The xxii part.

169 O Lord, let my complaint and cry
before thy face appear :

And as thou hast me promise made,
so teach me thee to fear.

170 Mine humble supplication
toward thee let finde access :

And grant me, Lord, deliverance,
for so is thy promise.

171 Then shall my lips thy praises speak
after most ample sort :

When thou thy statutes hast me taught,
wherein stands my comfort.

172 My tongue shall sing & preach thy word
and on this wise say shall,

Gods famous acts and noble laws
are just and perfect all.

173 Stretch out thy hand, I thee beseech,
and speedily me save :

For thy commandments to observe
chosen, O Lord, I have.

174 Of thee alone, Lord, I crave health,
for other I know none :

And in thy law and nothing else
I do delight alone.

175 Grant me therefore long days to live
thy name to magnifie :

And of thy judgements mercifull
let me the favour trie.

176 For I was loſt and went aſtray
much like a wandring ſheep:
Oh ſeek me for I have not fail'd
thy commandments to keep.

Ad Dominum. Pſal. cxx. T. S.

IN trouble and in thrall
Unto the Lord I call,
And he doth me comfort.

2 Deliver me, I ſay,
From liars lips alway,
And tongues of falſe report.

3 What vantage, or what thing
Gett'ſt thou thus for to ſting,
Thou falſe and flattering liar?

4 Thy tongue doth hurt I ween,
No leſs then arrows keen,
Or hot conſuming fire.

5 Alas, too long I ſlack
Within theſe tents ſo black,
Which Kedars are by name,
By whom the flock elect
And all of Iſaacs ſeſt
Are put to open ſhame.

6 With them that peace did hate
I came a peace to make
And ſet a quiet life:
But when my tale was told,
Cauſleſs I was controld
By them that would have ſtrife.

Levavi oculos. Pſal. cxxi. W. W.

ILift mine eyes to Sion hill.
From whence I do attend
That ſuccour God me ſend.

2 The mighty God me ſuccour will,
Which heaven and earth framed,
And all things therein named.

3 Thy foot from ſlip he will preſerve,
And will thee ſafely keep,
For he will never ſleep.

4 Lo he that doth Iſrael conſerve
No ſleep at all can him catch,
But his eyes ſhall ever watch.

5 The Lord is thy warrant alway,
The Lord eke doth thee cover
As at thy right hand ever:

6 The ſun ſhall not thee parch by day,
Nor the moon not half ſo bright
Shall with cold thee hurt by night.

7 The Lord will keep thee from diſtreſs,
And will thy life ſure ſave:

8 And thou ſhalt alſo have
In all thy buſineſs good ſucceſs.
Where ever thou goeſt in or out,
God will thy things bring about.

Letatus ſum. Pſal. cxxii. W. R.

I Did in heart rejoyce
To hear the peoples voice,
In offering ſo willingly:

2 For let us up ſay they,
And in the Lords houſe pray:
Thus ſpake the folk full lovingly.

3 Our feet that wandred wide
Shall in thy gates abide,
O thou Jeruſalem full fair,
Which art ſo ſeemly ſet,
Much like a city near,
The like whereof is not elſewhere.

4 The tribes with one accord,
The tribes of God the Lord
Are thither bent their way to take:
So God before did tell
That there his Iſrael
Their prayers ſhould together make.

5 For there are thrones erect,
And that for this reſpect,
To ſet forth juſtice orderly:
Which thrones right to maintain
To Davids houſe pertain
His folk to judge accordingly.

6 To pray let us not ceaſe
For Jeruſalems peace,
Thy friends God proſper mightily:
7 Peace be thy walls about,
And proſper thee throughout
Thy palaces continually.

8 I wiſh thy proſperous ſtate
For my poor brethrens ſake,
that comfort have by means of thee,
9 Gods houſe doth me allure
Thy wealth for to procure
So much always as lies in me.

Ad te levavi. Pſal. cxxiii. T. S.

O Lord, that heaven doſt poſſeſs,
I liſt mine eyes to thee:
Even as the ſervant liſteth his,
his maſters hands to ſee.

2 As hand-maids watch their miſtreſs hand
ſome grace for to atchieve:
So we behold the Lord our God,
till he do us forgive,

3 Lord grant us thy compaſſion,
and mercy in thy ſight:
For we are fill'd and overcome
with hatred and deſpight.

4 Our minds be ſtuſt with great rebuke,
the rich and worldly wiſe
Do make of us their mocking ſtocks,
the proud do us deſpiſe.

Nisi quia Dom. Psal, cxxiv. W.W.

NOW Israel
may say and that truly,
If that the Lord
had not our cause maintain'd,
If that the Lord
had not our right sustain'd,
When all the world
against us furiously
Made their uproars,
and said we should all die:

3 Now long ago
they had devour'd us all,
And swallow'd quick,
for ought that we could deem:
Such was their rage,
as we might well esteem.
4 And as the flouds
with mighty force do fall:
So had they now
our lives even brought to thrall.

5 The raging streams,
most proud in roaring noise,
Had long ago
ore'whelm'd us in the deep:
6 But lov'd be God
which doth us safely keep
From bloudy teeth,
and their most cruel voice,
Which as a prey
to eat us would rejoyce.

7 Even as a bird
out of the fowlers grin
Escapes away,
right so it fares with us:
Broke are their nets,
and we have scaped thus,
8 God that made heaven
and earth is our help then:
His name hath sav'd
us from these wicked men.

Qui confidunt. Psal. cxxv. W. K.

Such as in God the Lord do trust,
As mount Sion shall firmly stand,
And be removed at no hand.
The Lord will count them right and just:
So that they shall be sure
For ever to endure.

2 As mightie mountains huge and great
Jerusalem about do close:
So will the Lord do unto those
Who on his godly will do wait:
Such are to him so dear,
They never need to fear.

3 For though the righteoustrie doth he
By making wicked men his rod,

Lest they through grief forsake their God,
It shall not as their lot still be.

4 Give Lord to us thy light,
Whose hearts are true and right.

5 But as for such as turn aside
By crooked ways which they out fought,
The Lord will surely bring to nought:
With workers vile they shall abide:
But peace with Israel
For evermore shall dwell.

Another of the same, by R. W.

THose that do put their confidence
Upon the Lord our God onely,
And flee to him for their defence
In all their need and misery:
Their faith is sure still to endure,
Grounded on Christ the corner-stone,
Mov'd with none ill, but standeth still
Stedfast like to the mount Sion.

And as about Jerusalem
The mighty hills do it compass,
So that no enemies come to them
To hurt that town in any case:
So God indeed in every need
His faithfull people doth defend,
Standing them by assuredly
From this time forth world without end.

Right wise and good is our Lord God,
And will not suffer certainly
The sinners and ungodlies rod
To tarry upon his family:
Lest they also from God should go,
Falling to sin and wickedness.
O Lord defend world without end
Thy Christian flock through thy goodness.

O Lord do good to Christians all
That stedfast in thy word abide:
Such as willingly from God fall,
And to false doctrine daily slide,
Such will the Lord scatter abroad
With hypocrites thrown down to hell,
God will them send pains without end:
But Lord grant peace to Israel.

Glory to God the Father of might,
And to the son our Saviour,
And to the holy Ghost, whose light
Shine in our hearts and us succour:
That the right way from day to day
We may walk and him glorifie:
With hearts desire all that are here
Worship the Lord, and say, Amen.

In convertendo. Psal. cxxvi. W.W.

WHEN that the Lord
again his Sion had forth brought:
From bondage great,
and also servitude extream:

His work was such
as did surmount mans heart and thought :
So that we were
much like to them that use to dream.
3 Our mouthes were
with laughter filled then,
And eke our tongues
did shew us joyfull men.

The heathen folk
were forced then thisto confess,
How that the Lord
for them also great things had done.
3 But much more we,
and therefore can confess no less :
Wherefore to joy
we have good cause as we begun.
4 O Lord, go forth,
thou canst our bondage end :
As to deserts
the flowing rivers send.
5 Full true it is
that they which sow in tears indeed,
A time will come
when they shall reap in mirth and joy.
6 They went and wept
in bearing of their precious seed,
For that their foes
full oftentimes did them annoy :
But their return
with joy they shall sure see,
Their sheaves home bring,
and not empared be.

Nisi Dom. Psal. cxxvii. W. W.

EXcept the Lord the house doth make,
And thereunto doth set his hand :
What men do build it cannot stand.

Likewise in vain men undertake
Cities and holds to watch and ward,
Except the Lord be their safeguard.

2 Though ye rise early in the morn,
And so at night go late to bed,
Feeding full hardly with brown bread,
Yet were your labour lost and worn :
But they whom God doth love and keep
Receive all things with quiet sleep.

3 Therefore mark well when-ever ye see
That men have heirs to enjoy their land,
It is the gift of Gods own hand :
For God himself doth multiply
Of his great liberality
The blessing of posterity.

4 And when the children come to age
They grow in strength and activeness,
In person and in comeliness :
So that a shaft shot with courage
Of one that hath a most strong arm,
Lies not so swift, nor doth like harm.

5 O well is he that hath his quiver
Furnisht with such artillerie :
For when in peril he shall be,
Such one shall never shake nor shiver,
When that he pleads before the judge.
Against his foes that bear him grudge.

Beati omnes. Psal. cxxviii. T. S.

Blessed art thou that fearest God
and walkest in his way :
2 For of thy labour thou shalt eat,
happy art thou, I say.
3 Like fruitfull vines on thy house-side
so doth thy wife spring out :
Thy children stand like olive-plants
thy table round about.
4 Thus art thou blest that fearest God,
and he shall let thee see
5 The promised Jerusalem
and her felicitie.
6 Thou shalt thy childrens children see,
to thy great joys increase :
And likewise grace on Israel,
prosperity and peace.

Sape expugnaverunt. Psal. cxxix. N.

Oft they (now Israel may say)
me from my youth assail'd :
2 Oft they assail'd me from my youth,
yet never they prevail'd.
3 Upon my back the plowers plow'd,
and furrows long did cast :
4 The righteous Lord hath cut the cords
of wicked foes at last.
5 They that hate me shall be asham'd,
and turned back also :
6 And made as grass upon the house,
which withereth ere it grow :
7 Whereof the mower cannot finde
enough to fill his hand :
Nor can he fill his lap, that goeth
to glean upon the land.
8 Nor passers by pray God on them
to let his blessing fall :
Nor say, We bless you in the name
of God the Lord at all.

De profundis. Psal. cxxx. W. W.

Lord to thee I make my moan
when dangers me oppresse :
I call, I sigh, plain and groan,
trusting to finde release.
2 Hear now, O Lord, my request,
for it is full due time :
And let thine ears aye be prest
unto this prayer mine.
3 O Lord our God, if thou weigh
our sins and them peruse :

who shall then escape, and say,
I can my self excuse?
But, Lord, thou art mercifull,
and turn'st to us thy grace,
that we with hearts most carefull
should fear before thy face.

In God I put my whole trust,
my soul waits on his will:
for his promise is most just,
and I hope therein still.
My soul to God hath regard,
wishing for him alway
more then they that watch and ward
to see the dawning day.

Let Israel then boldly
In the Lord put his trust:
He is that God of mercy
that his deliver must.
For he it is that must save
Israel from his sin,
And all such as surely have
their confidence in him.

Domine, non est. Psal. cxxxi. *M.*
Lord I am not puffed in minde,
I have no scornfull eye:
I do not exercise my self
in things that be too high.
But as the childe that weaned is
even from his mothers breast:
So have I, Lord, behav'd my self
in silence and in rest.
O Israel, trust in the Lord,
let him be all thy stay
from this time forth for evermore,
from age to age, I say.

Memento, Dom. Psal. cxxxii. *M.*
Remember Davids troubles, Lord,
how to the Lord he swore,
And vow'd a vow to Jacobs God,
to keep for evermore:
I will not come within my house,
nor climb up to my bed:
Nor let my temple take their rest,
nor the eyes in my head,
Till I have found out for the Lord
a place to sit thereon:
An house for Jacobs God to be
an habitation.
We heard of it at Ephrata,
there did we hear this sound:
And in the fields and forrests there
these voices first were found.
We will assay, and go in now
his tabernacle there,
Before his foot-stool to fall down,
and worship him in fear.

8 Arise, O Lord, arise I say,
into thy resting-place:
Both thou and the ark of thy strength,
the presence of thy grace.

9 Let all thy priests be clothed, Lord,
with truth and righteousness:

Let all thy saints and holy men
sing all with joyfulness.

10 And for thy servant Davids sake,
refuse not, Lord, I say,
The face of thine anointed, Lord,
nor turn thy face away.

The second part.

11 The Lord to David swore in truth,
and will not shrink from it,
Saying, the fruit of thy body
upon thy seat shall sit.

12 And if thy sons my covenant keep
that I shall learn each one:
Then shall their sons for ever sit
upon thy princely throne.

13 The Lord himself hath chose Sion,
and loves therein to dwell,

14 Saying, This is my resting-place.
I love and like it well.

15 And I will blest with great increase
her victuals every where:
And I will satisfie with bread
the needy that be there.

16 Yea, I will deck and clothe her priests
with my salvation:
And all her saints shall sing for joy
of my protection.

17 There will I surely make the horn
of David for to bud:
For there I have ordain'd for mine
a lantern bright and good.

18 As for his enemies, I will clothe
with shame for evermore:
But I will cause his crown to shine
more fresh then heretofore.

Ecce quidm. Psal. cxxxiii. *W.W.*

O How happy a thing it is,
and joyfull for to see,
Brethren together fast to hold
the band of amity!

2 It callsto minde that sweet perfume,
and that costly ointment
Which on the sacrificers head
by Gods precept was spent.

It wet not Aarons head alone,
but drencht his beard throughout,
And finally it did run down
his rich attire about.

3 And as the lower ground doth drink
the dew of Hermon hill,

And Sion with his silver drops
the fields with fruit doth fill :

- 4 Even so the Lord doth pour on them
his blessings manifold,
Whose hearts and minds without all guile
this knot do keep and hold.

Ecce nunc. Psal. cxxxiv. W.W.

Behold and have regard,
ye servants of the Lord,
Which in his house by night do watch:
praise him with one accord.

- 2 Lift up your hands on high
unto his holy place,
And give the Lord his praises due,
his benefits embrace.

- 3 For why? the Lord who did
both earth and heaven frame,
Doth Sion bless and will conserve
for evermore the same.

Laudate nomen. Psal. cxxxv. N.

O praise the Lord, praise him, praise him,
praise him with one accord :
O praise him still all ye that be
the servants of the Lord :

- 2 O praise him ye that stand and be
in the house of the Lord :
Ye of his court, and of his house,
praise him with one accord.

- 3 Praise ye the Lord for he is good,
sing praises to his name :
It is a comely and good thing
always to do the same.

- 4 For why? the Lord hath chose Jacob
his very own ye see :
So hath he chosen Israel
his treasure for to be.

- 5 For this I know and am right sure
the Lord is very great :
He is indeed above all gods
most easie to entreat.

- 6 For whatsoever pleased him
all that full well he wrought :
In heaven, in earth, and in the sea,
which he hath made of nought.

- 7 He lifts up clouds even from the earth,
he makes lightnings and rain,
He bringeth forth the winds also,
he made nothing in vain.

- 8 He smote the first-born of each thing
in Egypt that took rest :
He spared there no living thing,
the man nor yet the beast.

- 9 He hath in thee shew'd wonders great,
O Egypt void of vaunts,
On Pharaoh thy cursed king,
and his severe servants.

- 10 He smote then many nations,
and did great acts and things :
He slew the great and mightiest
and chiefest of their kings.

- 11 Schon king of the Amorites,
and Og king of Basan :
He slew also the kingdoms all
that were of Canaan :

- 12 And gave their land to Israel,
an heritage we see,
To Israel his own people,
an heritage to be.

The second part.

- 13 Thy name, O Lord, shall still endure,
and thy memorial
Throughout all generations
that are or ever shall.

- 14 The Lord will surely now avenge
his people all indeed :
And to his servants he will shew
favour in time of need.

- 15 The idols of the heathen are made
in all the coasts and lands ;
Of silver and of gold they be,
the work even of mens hands.

- 16 They have their mouths, & cannot speak
and eyes that have no sight :

- 17 They have eke ears and hear nothing,
their mouths be breathless quite.

- 18 Wherefore all they are like to them,
that so do set them forth :
And likewise those that trust in them,
or think they be ought worth.

- 19 O all ye house of Israel,
see that ye praise the Lord :
And ye that be of Aarons house,
praise him with one accord.

- 20 And ye that be of Levi's house,
praise ye likewise the Lord :
And ye that stand in awe of him,
praise him with one accord.

- 21 And out of Sion sound his praise,
the great praise of the Lord
Which dwelleth in Jerusalem :
praise him with one accord.

Confitemini Dom. Psal. cxxxvi. N.

Praise ye the Lord, for he is good,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

- 2 Give praise unto the God of gods,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

- 3 Give praise unto the Lord of lords,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

- 4 Which onely doth great wondrous works,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

- 5 Which by his wisdom made the heavens,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

6 Which

- 6 Which on the waters stretcht the earth,
for his mercy endureth for ever.
- 7 Which made great lights to shine abroad,
for his mercy, &c.
- 8 As sun to rule the lightsome day,
for his mercy, &c.
- 9 The moon and stars to guide the night,
for his mercy, &c.
- 10 Which smote Egypt with their first-born,
for his mercy, &c.
- 11 And Israel brought out from thence,
for his mercy, &c.
- 12 With mighty hand and stretched arm,
for his mercy, &c.
- 13 Which cut the Red sea in two parts,
for his mercy, &c.
- 14 And Israel made pass there-through,
for his mercie, &c.
- 15 And drowned Pharaoh and his host,
for his mercy, &c.
- 16 Through wilderness his people led,
for his mercy, &c.
- 17 He which did smite great noble kings,
for his mercy, &c.
- 18 And which hath slain the mighty kings,
for his mercy, &c.
- 19 As Schon king of Amorites,
for his mercy, &c.
- 20 And Og the king of Basanland,
for his mercy, &c.
- 21 And gave their land for heritage,
for his mercy, &c.
- 22 Even to his servant Israel,
for his mercy, &c.
- 23 Remembring us in base estate,
for his mercy, &c.
- 24 And from oppressours rescued us,
for his mercy, &c.
- 25 Which giveth food unto all flesh,
for his mercy, &c.
- 26 Praise ye the Lord of heaven above,
for his mercy endureth for ever.
- 27 Give thanks unto the Lord of lords,
for his mercy endureth for ever.

Another of the same, by T. C.

O Laud the Lord benigne,
Whose mercies last for aye :

2 Give thanks and praises sing
To God of gods, I say.

For certainly
His mercies dure
Both firm and sure
Eternally.

3 The Lord of lords praise ye,
Whose mercies aye do dure :

4 Great wonders onely he
Doth work by his great power.
For certainly, &c.

5 Which God omnipotent
By his great wisdom high
The heavenly firmament
Did frame as we may see.
For certainly, &c.

6 Yea, he the heavy charge
Of all the earth did stretch :
And on the waters large
The same he did out-reach.
For certainly, &c.

7 Great lights he made to be ;
For why ? his love is aye :
8 Such as the sun we see.
To rule the lightsome day.
For certainly, &c.

9 And eke the moon so clear
Which shineth in our sight,
And stars that do appear,
To guide the darksome night.
For certainly, &c.

10 With grievous plagues and sore
All Egypt smote he than :
The first-born less and more
He slew of beast and man.
For certainly, &c.

11 And from amidst their land
His Israel forth brought
12 Which he with mighty hand
And stretched arm hath wrought.
For certainly, &c.

13 The sea he cut in two,
Which stood up like a wall :
14 And made through it to go
His chosen children all.
For certainly, &c.

15 But there he whelmed then
The proud king Pharaoh,
With his huge host of men,
And chariots eke also.
For certainly, &c.

16 Who led through wilderness
His people safe and sound :
17 And for his love endless
Great kings he brought to ground.
For certainly, &c.

18 And slew with puissant hand
Kings mighty and of fame :
19 As of Amorites land
Schon the King by name.
For certainly, &c.

20 And Og (the giant large)
Of Basan king also :

21 Whoſe land for heritage
He gave his people cho.
For certainly, &c.

22 Even unto Iſrael
His ſervant dear, I ſay,
He gave the ſame to dwell,
And there abide for aye.
For certainly, &c.

23 To minde he did us call
In our moſt baſe degree :
24 And from oppreſſours all
In ſafety ſet us free.
For certainly, &c.

25 All fleſh in earth abroad
With food he doth fulfill :
26 Wherefore of heaven the God
To laud be it your will.
For certainly, &c.

Super flumina. Pſal. cxxxvii. *W. W.*

When as we ſat in Babylon
the rivers round about,
And in remembrance of Sion
the tears for grief burſt out :
2 We hang'd our harps and instruments
the willow-trees upon :
For in that place men for their uſe
had planted many a one.

3 Then they to whom we priſoners were,
ſaid to us tauntingly,
Now let us hear your Hebrew ſongs,
and pleaſant melodie.

4 Alas ! ſaid we, who can once frame
his ſorrowfull heart to ſing
The praifes of our loving God,
thus under a ſtrange king ?

5 But yet if I Jeruſalem
out of my heart let ſlide :
Then let my fingers quite forget
the warbling harp to guide.

6 And let my tongue within my mouth
be ty'd for ever faſt,
If that I joy before I ſee
thy full deliverance paſt.

7 Therefore, O Lord, remember now,
the curſed noiſe and crie
That Edoms ſons againſt us made,
when they raſ'd our citie.
Remember, Lord, their cruel words,
when as with one accord
They cry'd, On, ſack, and raſe their walls,
in deſpite of their Lord.

8 Even ſo ſhalt thou, O Babylon,
at length to duſt be brought :
And happy ſhall that man be call'd
that our revenge hath wrought.

9 Yea, bleſſed ſhall that man be call'd,
that takes thy children young,
To daſh their bones againſt hard ſtones
that lie the ſtreets among.

Confitebor tibi. Pſal. cxxxviii. *N.*

Thee will I praife with my whole heart,
my Lord, my God, always :
Even in the preſence of the gods
I will advance thy praife.
2 Toward thy holy temple I
will look and worſhip thee :
And praized in my thankfull mouth
thy holy name ſhall be.

Even for thy loving kindneſs ſake,
and for thy truth withall :
For thou thy name haſt by thy word
advanced over all.

3 When I did call thou heardeſt me,
and thou haſt made alſo
The power of increaſed ſtrength
within my ſoul to grow.

4 Yea, all the kings on earth they ſhall
give praife to thee, O Lord :
For they of thy moſt holy mouth
have heard the mighty word.

5 They of the ways of God the Lord
in ſinging ſhall entreat :
Because the glory of the Lord
it is exceeding great.

6 The Lord is high, and yet he doth
behold the lowly ſprite :
But he (contemning) knows aſar
the proud and loſty wight.

7 Although in miſt of trouble I
do walk, yet ſhall I ſtand
Renewed by thee, O my Lord,
thou wilt ſtretch out thy hand

Upon the wrath of all my foes,
and ſaved ſhall I be
By thy right hand : the Lord God will
perform his work to me.

8 Thy mercy, Lord, endures for aye,
Lord, do me not forſake :
Forſake me not that am the work
which thine own hand did make.

Domine, probaſti. Pſal. cxxxix. *N.*

O Lord thou haſt me try'd and known,
my ſitting thou doſt know
2 And riſing eke, my thoughts aſar
thou underſtand'ſt alſo.

3 My paths, yea, and my lying down
thou compaſſeſt always :
And by familiar cuſtome art
acquainted with my ways.

4 No word is in my tongue, O Lord,
but known it is to thee :

5 Thou me behinde hold'st and before,
thou lay'st thine hand on me.
6 Too wonderfull above my reach,
Lord is thy cunning skill:
It is so high, that I the same
cannot attain untill.

7 From sight of thy all-seeing spirit,
Lord, whither shall I go?
Or whither shall I flie away
thy presence to scape fro?
8 To heaven if I mount aloft,
lo thou art present there:
In hell if I lie down below,
even there thou dost appear.

9 Yea, let me take the morning wings,
and let me go and bide
Even there where are the farthest parts,
where flowing sea doth slide:
10 Yea, even thither also shall
thy reaching hand me guide:
And thy right hand shall hold me fast,
and make me to abide.

11 Yea, if I say, The darkness shall
yet shroud me from thy sight:
Lo even also the darkest night
about me shall be light.
12 Yea, darkness hideth not from thee,
but night doth shine as day:
To thee the darkness and the light
are both alike alway.

The second part.

13 For thou possessed hast my reins,
and thou hast covered me,
When I within my mothers womb
enclosed was by thee.
14 Thee will I praise, made fearfully
and wondrously I am:
Thy works are marvellous, right well
my soul doth know the same.

15 My bones they are not hid from thee,
although in secret place,
I have been made, and in the earth
beneath I shaped was.

16 When I was formless, then thine eye
saw me: for in thy book
Were written all, nought was before
that after fashion took.

17 The thoughts therefore of thee, O God,
how dear are they to me!
And of them all how passing great
the endless number be!

18 If I should count them, lo, their sum
more then the sand I see:
And whensoever I awake,
yet am I still with thee.

19 The wicked and the bloudie men
O that thou wouldest slay!
Even those, O God, to whom, Depart,
depart from me, I say.

20 Even those of thee, O Lord my God,
that speak full wickedly:
Those that are lifted up in vain,
being enemies to thee.

21 Hate I not them that hate thee, Lord,
and that in earnest wise?
Contend I not against them all
against thee that arise?

22 I hate them with unfeigned hate,
even as my utter foes,

23 Trie me, O God, and know my heart,
my thoughts prove and disclose.

24 Consider, Lord, if wickedness
in me there any be:
And in thy way, O God my guide,
for ever lead thou me.

Eripe me. Psal. cxl. N.

Lord, save me from the evil man,
and from the cruel wight:

2 And from all those which evil do
imagine in their sprite,

Which make on me continual war,
their tongues lo they have whet

3 Like serpents; underneath their lips
is adders poison set.

4 Keep me, O Lord, from wicked hands,
preserve me to abide

Free from the cruel man, that means
to cause my steps to slide.

5 The proud have laid a snare for me,
and they have spread a net

With cords in my path-way, and grins
for me eke have they set.

6 Therefore I said unto the Lord,
thou art my God alone:

Hear me, O Lord, O hear the voice
wherewith I pray and mone

7 O Lord my God, thou onely art
the strength that saveth me:

My head in day of battel hath
been covered still by thee.

8 Let not, O Lord, the wicked have
the end of his desire:

Perform not his ill thoughts, lest he
with pride be set on fire.

9 Of them that compass me about,
the chiefest of them all,

Lord, let the mischief of their lips
upon themselves befall.

10 Let coals fall on them, let him cast
them in consuming flame,

And in deep pits, so as they may
not rise out of the same.

11 For no backbiter shall on earth
be set in stable plight:

And evil to destruction still
shall hunt the cruel wight.

12 I know the Lord th' afflicted will
revenge, and judge the poor:

13 The just shall praise thy name: just shall
dwell with thee evermore.

Domine, clamavi. Psal. cxli. N.

O Lord, upon thee do I call,
Lord, haste thee unto me:
And hearken, Lord, unto my voice
when I do crie to thee.

2 As incense, let my prayers be
directed in thine eies:
And the up-lifting of my hands
as evening sacrifice.

3 My Lord, for guiding of my mouth
set thou a watch before:
And also of my moving lips,
O Lord, keep thou the door.

4 That I should wicked works commit
incline thou not my heart:
With ill men of their delicates
Lord, let me eat no part

5 But let the righteous smite me, Lord,
for that is good for me:

Let him reprove me, and the same
a precious oyl shall be.

Such smiting shall not break my head,
the time shall shortly fall

When I shall in their miserie
make prayers for them all.

6 Then when in stonie places down
their judges shall be cast:

Then shall they hear my words, for then
they have a pleasant taste,

7 Our bones about the graves mouth
lo scattered are they found:

As he that heweth wood, or he
that diggeth up the ground.

8 But, O my Lord my God, mine eies
do look up unto thee:

In thee is all my trust, let not
my soul forsaken be.

9 Which they have laid to catch me in,
Lord, keep me from the snare,

And from the subtil grins of them
that wicked workers are.

10 The wicked into their own nets
together let them fall:

While I do by thy help escape
the danger of them all.

Voce mea. Psal. cxlii. N.

BEfore the Lord God with my voice
I did send out my crie:
And with my strained voice unto
the Lord God prayed I.

2 My meditation in his sight
to pour I did not spare:
And in the presence of the Lord
my trouble did declare.

3 Although perplexed was my spirit,
my path was known to thee:
In way where I did walk a snare
they slyly laid for me.

4 I look'd and view'd on my right hand,
but none there would me know:
All refuge failed me, and for
my soul none cared tho.

5 Then cry'd I, Lord, to thee, and said,
My hope thou onely art:
Thou in the land of living art
my portion and my part.

6 Heark to my crie, for I am brought
full low, deliver me
From them that do me persecute,
for me too strong they be.

7 That I may praise thy name, my soul
from prison, Lord, bring out:
When thou art good to me, the just
shall preps me round about.

Domine, exaudi. Psal. cxliii. N.

LOrd, hear my prayer, heark the plaint
that I do make to thee:
Lord in thy native truth and in
thy justice answer me.

2 In judgement with thy servant, Lord,
O enter not at all:
For justifi'd be in thy sight
not one that liveth shall.

3 The enemy hath pursu'd my soul,
my life to ground hath thrown:
And laid me in the dark, like them
that dead are long ago.

4 Within me in perplexitie
was mine accumbred sprite:
And in me was my troubled heart
amazed and affright.

5 Yet I record time past, in all
thy works I meditate:
Yea, in thy works I meditate
that thy hands have create.

6 To thee, O Lord my God, lo I
do stretch my craving hands:
My soul desireth after thee,
as do the thirstie lands.

7 Hear me with speed, my spirit doth fail,
hide not thy face me fro:

Else shall I be like them that down
into the pit do go.

8 Let me thy loving kindness in
the morning hear and know :
For in thee is my trust, shew me
the way where I shall go.

9 For I lift up my soul to thee,
O Lord, deliver me

From all mine enemies: for I
have hidden me with thee.

10 Teach me to do thy will, for thou,
thou art my God, I say:

Let thy good Spirit unto the land
of mercy me convey.

11 For thy names sake with quickning grace
alive do thou me make:

And out of trouble bring my soul
even for thy justice sake.

12 And for thy mercy slay my foes,
O Lord, destroy them all

That do oppress my soul, for I
thy servant am and shall.

Benedictus Dom. Psal. cxliv. N.

Blest be the Lord my strength, that doth
instruct my hands to fight :

The Lord that doth my fingers frame
to battel by his might.

2 He is my goodnes, fort, and tower,
deliverer and shield :

In him I trust; my people he
subdueth to me to yeeld.

3 O Lord, what thing is man, that him
thou holdest so in price ?

Or son of man, that upon him
thou thinkest in such wise ?

4 Man is but like to vanitie,
so pass his days to end.

5 As fleeting shade. Bow down, O Lord,
the heavens and descend.

6 The mountains touch, and they shall smoke,
cast forth thy lightning flame

And scatter them : thine arrows shoot,
consume them with the same.

7 Send down thine hand even from above,
O Lord, deliver me :

Take me from waters great, from hand
of strangers make me free.

8 Whose subtil mouth of vanitie
and fondness doth entreat :

And their right hand is a right hand
of falshood and deceit.

9 A new song will I sing, O God,
and singing will I be

On viol and on instrument
ten stringed unto thee.

10 Even he it is that onely gives
deliverance to kings :

Unto his servant David help
from hurtfull sword he brings.

11 From strangers hand me save and shield,
whose mouth talks vanitie :

And their right hand is a right hand
of guile and subtiltie.

12 That our sons may be as the plants
whom growing youth doth rear :

Our daughters as carv'd corner-stones,
like to a palace fair :

13 Our garners full, and plentie may
with sundry sorts be found :

Our sheep bring thousands, in our streets
ten thousands may abound.

14 Our oxen be to labour strong,
that none do us invade :

There be no goings out, nor cries
within our streets be made.

15 The people blessed are that with
such blessings are so stor'd :

Yea, blessed all the people are
whose God is God the Lord.

Exaltabo te. Psal. cxlv. N.

Thee will I laud, my God and king,
and blest thy name for ay :

2 For ever will I praise thy name,
and blest thee day by day.

3 Great is the Lord, most worthy praise,
his greatness none can reach :

4 From race to race they shall thy works
praise, and thy power preach.

5 I of thy glorious majestie
the beauty will record :

And meditate upon thy works
most wonderfull O Lord.

6 And they shall of thy power, and of
thy fearfull acts declare :

And I to publish all abroad
thy greatness will not spare.

7 And they into the mention shall
break of thy goodness great :

And I aloud thy righteousness
in singing shall repeat.

8 The Lord our God is gracious,
and mercifull also :

Of great abounding mercy, and
to anger he is slow.

9 Yea, good to all, and all his works
his mercy doth exceed :

10 Lo, all thy works do praise thee, Lord,
and do thy honour spread.

11 Thy saints do blest thee, and they do
thy kingdoms glory show :

12 And blaze thy power, to cause the sons
of men thy power to know.

The second part.

And of his mightie kingdome eke
to spread the glorious praise :

13 Thy kingdome, Lord, a kingdome is
that doth endure always :

And thy dominion through each age
endures without decay.

14 The Lord upholdeth them that fall,
their sliding he doth stay.

15 The eyes of all do wait on thee :
thou dost them all relieve :

And thou to each sufficing food
in season due dost give.

16 Thou openest thy plenteous hand,
and bounteously dost fill

All things whatsoever do live
with gifts of thy good will.

17 The Lord is just in all his ways,
his works are holy all.

18 Near all he is that call on him,
in truth that on him call.

19 He the desires which they require
that fear him will fulfill :

And he will hear them when they crie,
and save them all he will.

20 The Lord preserves all those, to him
that bear a loving heart :

But he them all that wicked are
will utterly subvert.

21 My thankfull mouth shall gladly speak
the praises of the Lord :

All flesh to praise his holy name
for ever shall accord.

Lauda, anima. Psal. cxlvi. J. H.

MY soul, praise thou the Lord always
my God I will confesse :

2 While breath and life prolong my days,
my tongue no time shall cease.

3 Trust not in worldly princes then,
though they abound in wealth :

Nor in the sons of mortal men,
in whom there is no health.

4 For why? their breath doth soon depart,
to earth anon they fall :

And then the counsels of their heart
decay and perish all.

5 O happie is that man, I say,
whom Jacobs God doth aid,

And he whose hope doth not decay,
but on the Lord is staid.

6 Which made the earth and waters deep,
the heavens high withall :

Which doth his word and promise keep
in truth, and ever shall.

7 With right always doth he proceed
for such as suffer wrong :

The poor and hungry he doth feed,
and loose the fethers strong.

8 The Lord doth send the blinde their sight,
the lame to limbs restore :

The Lord, I say, doth love the right
and just man evermore.

9 He doth defend the fatherless,
and stranger sad in heart,

And quit the widow from distress,
and ill mens ways subvert.

10 Thy Lord and God eternally,
O Sion, still shall reign,

In time of all posterity
for ever to remain.

Laudate Dominum. Psal. cxlvii. N.

PRAISE ye the Lord, for it is good
unto our God to sing :

For it is pleasant, and to praise
it is a comely thing.

2 The Lord his own Jerusalem
he buildeth up alone :

And the disperst of Israel
doth gather into one.

3 He heals the broken in their heart,
their sores up doth he binde :

4 He counts the number of the stars,
and names them in their kinde.

5 Great is the Lord, great is his power,
his wisdom infinite.

6 The Lord relieves the meek, and throws
to ground the wicked wight.

7 Sing unto God the Lord with praise,
unto the Lord rejoyce :

And to our God upon the harp
advance your singing voice.

8 He covers heaven with clouds, and for
the earth prepareth rain :

And on the mountains he doth make
the grassto grow again.

9 He gives to beasts their food, and to
young ravens when they cry.

10 His pleasure not in strength of horse
nor in mans legs doth lie :

11 But in all those that fear the Lord
the Lord hath his delight,

And such as do attend upon
his mercies shining light.

The second part.

12 O praise the Lord, Jerusalem,
thy God, O Sion, praise :

13 For he the bars hath forged strong,
wherewith thy gates he stays.

14 Thy children he hath blest in thee,
and in thy borders he

Doth settle peace, and with the flour
of wheat he filleth thee.

- 15 And his commandement upon
the earth he sendeth out:
And eke his word with speedy course
doth swiftly run about.
- 16 He giveth snow like wool, hoar-frost
like ashes he doth spread:
- 17 Like morsels casts his ice, thereof
the cold who can abide?
- 18 He sendeth forth his mightie word
and melteth them again:
His winde he makes to blow, and then
the waters flow amain.
- 19 The doctrine of his holy word
to Jacob he doth show:
His statutes and his judgements he
gives Israel to know.
- 20 With every nation hath he not
so dealt, nor have they known
His secret judgements, ye therefore
praise ye the Lord alone.

Laudate Dominum. Psal. cxlviii. 7. H.

Give laud unto the Lord,
From heaven that is so high:
Praise him in deed and word,
Above the starrie skie.

2 And also ye,
His angels all,
Armies royal,
Praise him with glee.

3 Praise him both moon and sun,
Which are so clear and bright:
The same of you be done,
Ye glistering stars of light:

4 And eke no less,
Ye heavens fair,
And clouds of th' air,
His laud express.

5 For at his word they were
All formed as we see:
At his voice did appear
All things in their degree,

6 Which he set fast:
To them he made
A law and trade
For aye to last.

7 Extoll and praise Gods name
On earth ye dragons fell:
All deeps do ye the same,
For it becomes ye well

8 Him magnifie,
Fire, hail, ice, snow,
And storms that blow
At his decree.

9 The hills and mountains all,
And trees that fruitfull are,
The cedars great and tall
His worthy praise declare.

10 Beasts and cattel,
Yea birds flying,
And worms creeping,
That on earth dwell.

11 All kings both more and less
With all their pompous train,
Princes and all judges
That in the world remain,
Exalt his name.

12 Young men and maids,
Old men and babes,
Do ye the same.

13 For his name shall we prove
To be most excellent,
Whose praise is far above
The earth and firmament.

14 For sure he shall
Exalt with blifs
The horn of his,
And help them all.

His saints all shall forth tell
His praise and worthiness,
The children of Israel
Eachone both more and less:
And also they
That with good will
His words fulfill,
And him obey.

Cantate Domino. Psal. cxlix. N.

Sing ye unto the Lord our God
a new rejoycing song:
And let the praise of him be heard
his holy saints among.

2 Let Israel rejoyce in him
that made him of nothing:
And let the seed of Sion eke
be joyfull in their King.

3 Let them sound praise with voice of lute
unto his holy name:
And with the timbrel and the harp
sing praises of the same.

4 For why? the Lord his pleasure all
hath in his people set:
And by deliverance he will raise
the meek to glory great.

5 With glory and with honour now
let all his saints rejoyce:
And now aloud upon their beds
advance their singing voice.

6 And in their mouths let be the acts
of God the mightie Lord:
And in their hands eke let them bear
a double-edged sword:

7 To plague the heathen, and correct
the people with their hands:

- 8 To binde their stately kings in chains,
their lords in iron bands :
9 To execute on them the doom
that written is before.
This honour all his saints shall have,
praise ye the Lord therefore.

Laudate Dominum. Psal. cl. N.

Yeld unto God the mightie Lord
praise in his sanctuary :
And praise him in the firmament,
that shews his power on high.
2 Advance his name, and praise him in
his mighty acts always :

According to his excellencie
of greatness give him praise.

- 3 His praises with the princely noise
of sounding trumpets blow :
Praise him upon the viol, and
upon the harp also.
4 Praise him with timbrel and with flute,
organs and virginals :
5 With sounding cymbals praise ye him,
praise him with loud cymbals.
6 What ever hath the benefit
of breathing, praise the Lord.
To praise the name of God the Lord
agree with one accord.

The end of the P S A L M S.



